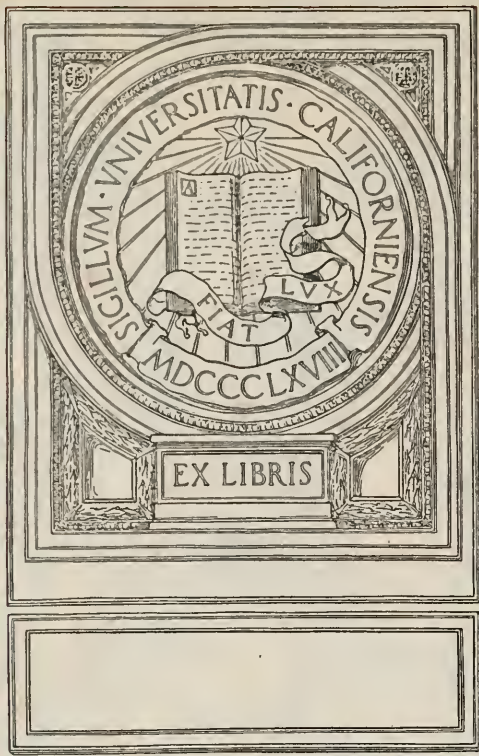


UC-NRLF



B 4 073 246

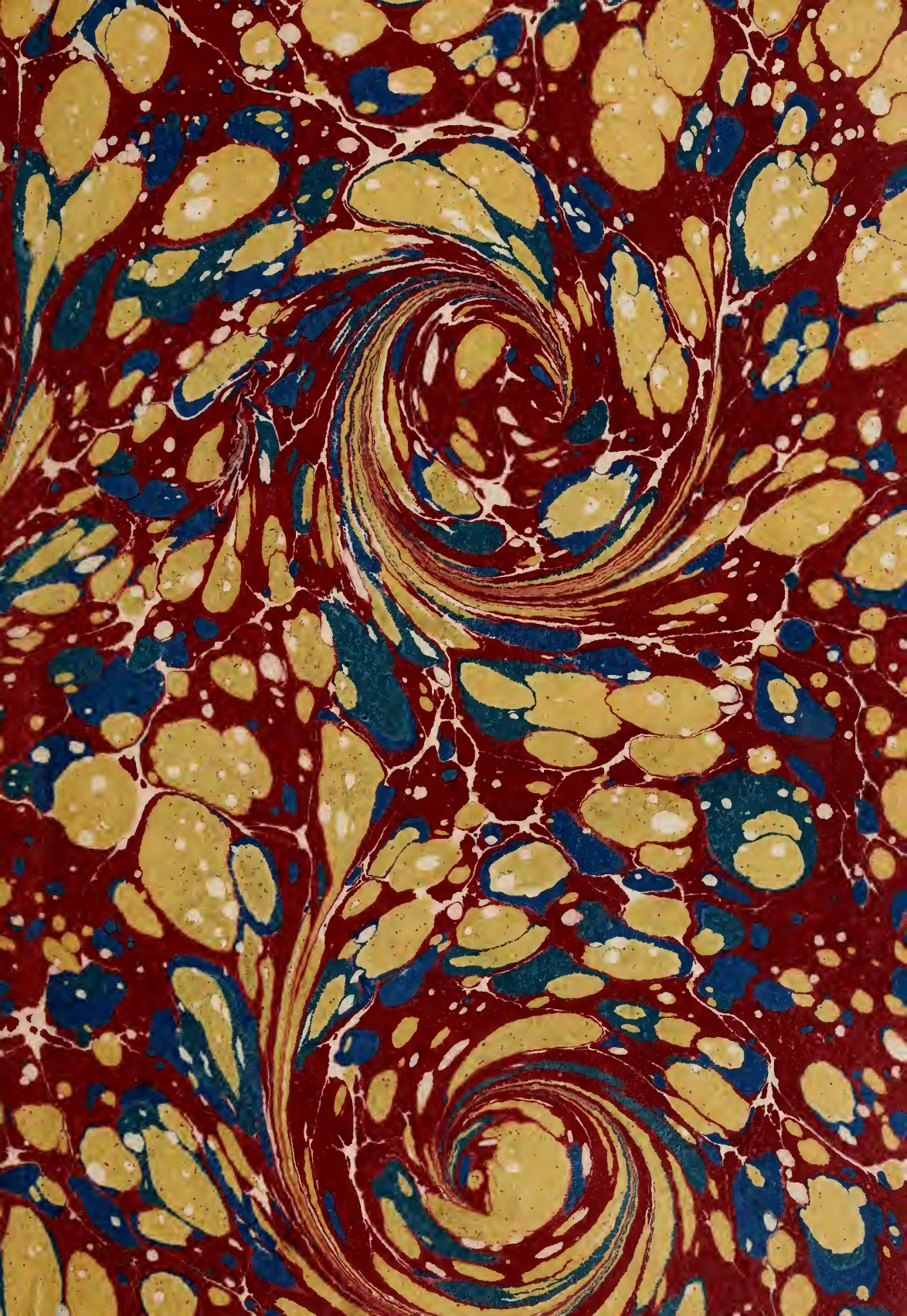


1048.

Walter C. Nicholson.

HL. 289.















LIVERPOOL  
MUNICIPAL RECORDS.









City of Liverpool.

---

SELECTIONS

FROM THE

MUNICIPAL

ARCHIVES AND RECORDS,

FROM THE 13TH TO THE 17TH CENTURY

INCLUSIVE.

EXTRACTED AND ANNOTATED BY

SIR JAMES A. PICTON, F.S.A.,

AUTHOR OF "MEMORIALS OF LIVERPOOL," ETC.

---

*Published with the sanction of the City Council.*

---

LIVERPOOL :

GILBERT G. WALMSLEY, 50, LORD STREET.

1883.

29500  
1875

40. 1911  
1890.11.10



## ADVERTISEMENT.

---

THIS Work being issued by the Editor without any regard to remuneration, it was thought advisable to publish it by subscription, the edition being limited to 500 copies.

A list of the Subscribers will be found at the end of the volume.



883555







## PREFACE.

---

THE history of a nation is not limited to the record of its public transactions, to its wars by sea and land, its battles and sieges, its treaties and alliances, its dynasties and revolutions. Beneath all these outward demonstrations, and to a great extent undisturbed by them except at rare intervals, the private and domestic life of the people pursues its steady course. Manners and customs gradually change. Impulses from the upper strata, and influences from without, are insensibly diffused through the mass of the nation without any record on the pages of history; and it is only by diligent search through sources formerly despised, that a true picture of bygone times can be presented to the inquiring student.

The historical writers of the modern school have become alive to the importance of the vast fund of information, lying previously almost untouched, in the chap books, diaries, autobiographies, correspondence, and domestic

annals, of former days. There is one class of documents, however, still remaining, which has not been drawn upon as it deserves ; that is, the municipal records, a large number of which lie ready to reward the diligent inspector with an insight into the manners, customs, and relations of society in former ages, nowhere else to be found. The cities and boroughs played a very important part in the political life of the middle ages. It was by them that the true principles of self-government were rescued—almost wrenched—from the grinding oppression of the feudal system. It is owing to their influence that the British Constitution was moulded and developed in its present representative form.

The relation of the boroughs to the Crown was principally of a pecuniary nature. The charters of incorporation, with liberty to hold property, to establish guilds and hanses, to frame bye-laws, to hold courts, and generally to regulate their own affairs, had to be paid for. If any flaw could be discovered, it was immediately taken advantage of by a writ of “*Quo warranto*,” and an “*Inspeximus*” Charter had from time to time to be purchased to confirm the jurisdiction already acquired. In nearly all the charters, the dues from the customs, markets, and tolls, were retained by the Crown, which found it convenient to lease them at fee-farm rents, either to private individuals, or to the borough authorities. These leases were usually for short periods, and as often as they fell in, a fresh bargain had to be made.

Subject to these payments, the boroughs were left pretty much to themselves ; and enjoyed an amount of self-government and freedom which has no parallel in modern times. It is true that this liberty sometimes degenerated into license, and a large amount of petty tyranny was occasionally exercised, but this tyranny was the act of the community ; the majority constraining the minority, which evil usually, in the course of time, effected its own cure. The imperfect means of communication isolated the towns to a much greater extent than at present. Down to the middle of the eighteenth century, there was no road into Liverpool for wheel carriages. Travellers had to proceed on horseback, and the merchandise was conveyed either on pack-horses or by barges on the river Mersey to Warrington. This seclusion, and separation from the outside world, naturally imparted a distinctive character to each community, which exhibits itself in the borough records. The hopes and fears, the business transactions, the petty squabbles, the manners and customs, the tone of thought, and the relations of the municipalities to the central government and to the outside world, are vividly reflected from the pages of these records. Not much use has hitherto been made of them in any systematic manner. The *Liber Albus*<sup>1</sup> and the *Memorials of London, from the 13th to the 15th Century*,<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Liber Albus, the White Book of the City of London*, compiled A.D. 1419, trans. by H. T. Riley, 4to, 1861.

<sup>2</sup> *Memorials of London, 13th to 15th Century*, 1868.

partially illustrate the municipal history of the metropolis. More recently an interesting volume has been issued of *Selections from the Records of the City of Oxford*.<sup>1</sup> With these and a few other exceptions the municipal records of England present an untrodden field of inquiry.

A greater amount of attention has been paid in France to this subject. M. Augustin Thierry's *Histoire du Tiers Etat* presents a vivid and charming picture of municipal life in the middle ages;<sup>2</sup> and Monteil, in his *Histoire des Français des divers Etats*,<sup>3</sup> has almost exhausted the subject of private and domestic life during the same period.

The municipal records of Liverpool will be found to possess considerable interest. The origin of the town is somewhat singular, and has nothing in it at all anticipatory of the enormous development of its commerce in recent times.

The city of Chester, so advantageously situated on the embouchure of the river Dee into its wide estuary, had been, from the time of the Romans, the great port of the north-west of England. After the partial conquest of Ireland by Earl Strongbowe, in the reign of Henry II., increased facilities for communication with England became requisite, and the attention of King John, then Earl of

<sup>1</sup> *Selections from the Records of the City of Oxford*, illustrating the Municipal History, Henry VIII. to Elizabeth, by W. H. Turner, of the Bodleian Library, 1880.

<sup>2</sup> *Essai sur l'Histoire du Tiers Etat*, 2me edit, Paris, 2 vols., 1853.

<sup>3</sup> *Histoire des Français des divers Etats, ou Histoire de France aux cinq derniers Siecles*, 4me edit, Paris, 1853.



Mortain, when acting as regent during his brother's absence in the Holy Land, was drawn to the subject. The estuary of the Dee had become silted up to such an extent, as to prevent heavily laden ships reaching Chester. A new quay was constructed at Shotwick, about eight miles down the river, and a castle built for its protection; but greater facilities were still required, and a small inlet in the estuary of the Mersey called Liver-pool—Cymric, Llyfr-pwll—seemed to offer an advantageous position. Here, on a rocky promontory, a castle was built, and a small town laid out in the form of a cross, with burgage tenements erected to the number of 168; and, in 1207, King John issued Letters Patent, inviting his liege subjects to settle there, promising them protection and encouragement. To a certain extent this purpose was answered. The port was found convenient for the passage to and fro of troops and stores, but trade did not attain anything like prosperity. The manufacturing capabilities of Lancashire and the West Riding were not yet developed, the country being sparsely peopled, rude and poor. A limited amount of trade was carried on with Ireland, and Spain and Portugal were supplied with fish, but for more than four centuries after its foundation, the trade of Liverpool remained in a comparative state of stagnation. Within its narrow limits, however, the little town displayed considerable life and vigour, with an amount of pugnacity always ready to defend itself from attack, and a degree of public spirit occasionally shown in a very creditable manner.

The first symptoms of revival were manifested soon after the Restoration, and the town then entered upon a career of almost unexampled progress and extension, belonging rather to national than municipal history.

The following pages will exhibit, in the selections from the records and other documents, the social condition of the community and the general aspect of the town's affairs, as shown by the people themselves.

J. A. P.

SANDYKNOWE,

WAVERTREE, *March*, 1883.



# CONTENTS.

---

|                                             |        |      |
|---------------------------------------------|--------|------|
| CHAPTER I.—From 1207 to 1556.               |        | Page |
| Historical Notices                          | ... .. | I    |
|                                             |        |      |
| CHAPTER II.—From 1556 to 1603.              |        |      |
| Municipal Government                        | ... .. | 30   |
| Municipal Officers                          | ... .. | 59   |
| Corporate Estate and Revenues               | ... .. | 65   |
| Burgesses and Freemen                       | ... .. | 72   |
| Trade and Commerce                          | ... .. | 79   |
| Streets and Buildings                       | ... .. | 91   |
| Ecclesiastical Notices                      | ... .. | 95   |
| National and Political Affairs              | ... .. | 107  |
| Manners and Customs                         | ... .. | 113  |
|                                             |        |      |
| CHAPTER III.—From 1603 to 1660.             |        |      |
| Municipal Affairs                           | ... .. | 120  |
| Municipal Officers                          | .. ..  | 160  |
| Corporate Estate and Revenues               | ... .. | 169  |
| Commerce and Commercial Restrictions        | ... .. | 178  |
| Streets, Buildings, and Sanitary Provisions | ... .. | 187  |
| Ecclesiastical Notices                      | ... .. | 196  |
| National and Political Affairs              | ... .. | 217  |
| Manners and Customs                         | ... .. | 228  |
|                                             |        |      |
| CHAPTER IV.—From 1660 to 1699.              |        |      |
| Municipal Affairs                           | ... .. | 236  |
| Corporate Estate and Revenues               | ... .. | 273  |
| Trading Restrictions                        | ... .. | 295  |
| Trade and Commerce                          | ... .. | 306  |
| Streets and Buildings                       | ... .. | 314  |
| Ecclesiastical Notices                      | ... .. | 322  |
| National and Political                      | ... .. | 332  |
| Manners and Customs                         | ... .. | 335  |



## CHAPTER FIRST.

FROM THE 9TH OF JOHN, A.D. 1207, TO THE 2ND PHILIP  
AND MARY, 1556.

THE Annals recorded in the books of the Corporation commence in 1551 (4th Edward VI.); but there are a considerable number of documents in existence of previous dates relating to the history of the town, which are necessary to complete the series. The Corporation possesses the originals of the charters and of some of the other documents. Of the remainder there are authentic copies extant.

The first mention of Liverpool by name, occurs in a First mention. grant from King John when Earl of Mortain. In the year 1166, by the decease of William de Blois, brother of King Stephen, the Earldom of Mortain and the Honour of Lancaster, which included the site of Liverpool, had fallen to the Crown. Whilst in the possession of the Crown, a grant had been made, as appears from the reference, by King Henry II. to Warine, the Constable of Lancaster Castle (*inter alia*), of the site of Liverpool. On the accession of Richard I., in 1189, the Earldom of Mortain and the Honour of Lancaster were conferred upon his brother John, who confirmed the grant above mentioned, in favour of Henry Fitzwarine, the son of the original grantee, in the following terms :—

“Know ye that we have granted, and by this our deed confirmed, to Henry the son of Warine de Lancaster, the lands which King Henry our father gave to Warine, his father, that is Ravenmeols, Ammolesdale, Up Litherland, *Liverpool*, and French Lea.”

The deed is not dated, but from other sources the date may be fixed at about A.D. 1190.

In 1206, King John visited Lancashire, when it is probable that the foundation of the new Port and Borough was determined on, and an exchange made with Warine for the site. This was embodied in the following deed, dated at Winchester, August 28th, 1207:—

1207.  
Exchange of  
site.

“John, by the grace of God, &c. Know ye that we have granted, and by out present deed have confirmed, to Henry Fitzwarine of Lancaster, the lands which King Henry my father gave to Warine his father for his services, to wit, Ravenmeols, Ammolesdale, and the French Lea, and the English Lea, which we have given him in exchange for *Liverpool*. . . . to be holden,” &c.

At the same time and place was executed the first charter, constituting the Borough, which is preserved amongst the muniments of the city. It is written in a clear neat hand, on a small piece of parchment, 7 inches by 2½ inches, the seal gone. It reads as follows:—

1207.  
King John's  
Charter.

#### CARTA REGIS JOHANNIS.

“Johanes Dei gratia Rex Angliæ, Dominus Hiberniæ, Dux Normanniæ, Aquitaniæ Comes Andegaviæ, omnibus fidelibus suis qui Burgagia apud villam de Liverpool habere voluerint salutem. Sciatis quod concessimus omnibus fidelibus nostris qui Burgagia apud Liverpool cep'int quod habeant omnes libertates et liberas consuetudines in villa de Liverpool quas aliquis liber Burgus super mare habet in terra nostra. Et ides vobis mandamus quod secure et in pace nostra illuc veniatis ad Burgagia nostra recipienda et hospitanda. Et in hujus rei testimonium has literas nostras patentes vobis transmittimus. Teste Simon de Pateshill apud Winton xxviii die Aug. anno regni nostri ix.”

#### CHARTER OF KING JOHN.

“John by the grace of God King of England, Lord of Ireland, Duke of Normandy and Aquitaine, and Count of Anjou, to all his liegemen who would desire to have Burgages at the town of Liverpool greeting. Know ye that we have granted to all our liegemen who may take Burgages at Liverpool that they may have all the liberties and free customs in the town of Liverpool which any free Borough on the sea has in our land. And therefore we command that securely and in our peace you may come to receive and occupy our Burgages. And in testimony hereof we transmit to you these our letters patent. Witness Simon de Pateshill at Winchester the 28th day of August in the 9th year of our reign.”

This is naturally considered as the first charter of the



borough. Technically speaking, it is not a charter, but as the document styles itself, "letters patent," conferring certain privileges of protection to the settlers. Charters of incorporation, enabling property to be held by the burgesses and *their successors*, only date from the 14th century.

In the great Roll of the Pipe, under date 1226, William <sup>1226.</sup> Earl Ferrers renders account to the Crown of rents received <sup>Crown Rents.</sup> in the Wapentake of West Derby. Amongst the entries are £9 for the rent of Assize in Liverpool, and 20s. from Wavertree.

In the 13th Henry III. (1229), a new charter was <sup>1229.</sup> granted to the borough. The document is amongst the <sup>Henry III.</sup> city records. It is on a single sheet of parchment, 12 inches by 9, written in a clear hand, with ink of good colour. There is no illumination or ornament. The seal is gone, but the strings remain. The original is in Latin.

#### CHARTER OF KING HENRY THE THIRD.

"Henry by the grace of God, King of England, Lord of Ireland, &c. Know ye that we have granted and by this our charter have confirmed, that our town of Leverepul shall for ever be a free borough, and that the burgesses of the same borough shall have a mercatorial gild, with a hanse and other liberties, and free customs to the same gild pertaining; and that no one who is not of the same gild shall transact any merchandize in the aforesaid borough, unless by consent of the same burgesses. We have also granted to the same burgesses and their heirs that they shall have soc and sac, and tol and theam and infangenethef, and that they be quit throughout our whole land and through all seaports, of toll, lastage, passage, pontage and stallage; and that they shall do no suit of counties and wapentakes for their tenures which they hold within the borough aforesaid. We have granted also to the same burgesses and their heirs that whatsoever merchants shall seek the borough aforesaid with their merchandizes, of whatsoever place they may be, whether strangers or others, who shall be of our peace, or with our licence shall have come into our land, may safely and securely come to the aforesaid borough with their merchandizes and safely remain there and safely thence depart, doing therefor the right and due customs. We prohibit also that no one shall injure, damage or molest the aforesaid burgesses upon forfeiture to us of ten pounds. Wherefore we will and firmly command, that the aforesaid town of Leverepul shall be a free borough, and that the aforesaid burgesses shall have the aforesaid mercatorial gild, with

a hanse and other liberties and free customs to that gild pertaining, and that they shall have all other liberties and free customs and acquittances as is aforesaid. These being witnesses Hubert de Burgh Earl of Kent, Justice of England (five other names) and others.

"Given at Marlborough the 24th day of March in the 13th year of our reign."

Cost of  
Charter.

Amongst the records of the Court of Chancery there is an entry under this date, that—

"The Burgesses of Leverepul gave ten marks\* to have a charter of the Lord the King."

Restrictive  
Clauses.

The original letters patent of King John secured perfect freedom of trade to all settlers who might take burgages. This seems to have been interpreted that such freedom should be theirs alone, since the charter of Henry, granted only twenty-two years after that of John, is of the narrowest and most exclusive character.

To this period, no doubt, the original seal must be referred. This was lost or destroyed at the time of the siege in 1644, but impressions of it remain.

Seal.



**SIGILLUM COMMUNE BORGENSEM DE LEVERPOL\***

Supplying the contractions, the inscription reads—"Sigillum commune Borgensium de Leverpol." It has been

\* £6 13s. 4d., equal in modern money to £100.

sufficiently proved that the so-called “Liver” was intended to represent the eagle of St. John the Evangelist, to whom the legend **IOPIS**—a contraction for “Johannis”—refers. The crescent and star were adopted by Richard Cœur de Lion, and are found on his great seal. The sprig is probably intended for the *fleur-de-lys*.

The modern seal is a rude copy of the original, and the enigmatical letters are simply blunders.

Concurrently with the grant of the charter by Henry III., a lease of the fee-farm of the tolls, customs, and burgage rents was granted to the burgesses. The document is as follows:—

“Henry by the grace of God, King of England, &c. To the Sheriffs and all our Bailiffs of the County of Lancaster. Know ye that we have granted to our honest men of Leverepul our Town of Leverepul to be held at farm from the feast of St. Michael in the third year of our reign unto the end of four complete years; rendering therefor unto us in each of the aforesaid years at our Exchequer by the hand of the Sheriff of Lancaster at two terms, ten pounds, namely at Easter in the thirteenth year of our reign five pounds, and at the feast of St. Michael in the same year five pounds, and this from year to year at the same terms, ten pounds as is aforesaid. In witness whereof we have caused these letters to be made patent.

“Witness myself at Marlborough 25th day of March in the same year of our reign.”

The £10 rent is equal to £150 in modern currency.

Immediately after these transactions, the King made a grant to Ranulf Earl of Chester, of the whole lands between the Ribble and the Mersey, including the town of Liverpool, which is mentioned by name. At his death, in 1232, his estates were divided, and Liverpool fell to the share of his sister Agnes, who was married to William de Ferrers, Earl of Derby. The estates being held “in capite” direct from the Crown, carried with them plenary jurisdiction. Hence we find that Earl Robert de Ferrers, in 1266, granted an “Inspeximus” charter to the burgesses of Liverpool, of which the following quotation contains the essence:—

1229.  
Fee-farm  
Lease.

Grant to Earl  
Ranulf.

William de  
Ferrers.

1266.  
Inspeximus  
Charter.

“Know ye that we have inspected the charter of the burgesses of Liverpool [*here follows King John's charter*]. We have also inspected the confirmation of our Lord Henry the King of England [*here follows King Henry's charter*] which having inspected and fully understood we grant and confirm for ever all the liberties and free customs in the preceding charters,” &c. Given at Liverpool by the hands of Master Hy. Lovel our Chancellor on the 5th day of February in the 50th year of the reign of King Henry (1266).

1266.  
Confiscation.

Within six months after the exercise of these quasi-regal powers, the estates of Earl Robert de Ferrers were confiscated, and the king took possession of Liverpool by the following order:—

Maria de  
Ferrers.

“The King to his beloved niece Maria de Ferrers greeting. As we have committed to our beloved and faithful Adam de Gosmuth, the lands and all the tenements of Robert de Ferrers Earl of Derby to be held as long as it may please us, we command you that you deliver to the said Adam de Gosmuth or to William de Syleby, the Castle of Liverpool with its appurtenances, on their presenting these letters with the lands and tenements aforesaid. Witness the King at Westminster the 11th day of July” (1266).

Grant to  
Crouchback.

On the 5th August following, the forfeited estates of Robert de Ferrers, including Liverpool, were granted to Edmund Plantagenet, surnamed Crouchback, the second son of the king, who was created Earl of Lancaster.

1292.  
Commission  
of Inquiry.

In the year 1292, King Edward I., being in sore want of means to prosecute his war with Scotland, endeavoured to raise money by writs of Quo Warranto, and sent down a Commission, under Hugh de Cressingham, into Lancashire, to inquire into the titles of the corporate bodies and other owners of property. The following is a copy of their report, so far as relates to Liverpool:—

Quo  
Warranto.

“Proceedings de Quo Warranto before Hugh de Cressingham and his fellows, Justices Itinerant at Lancaster, in the Octaves of the Holy Trinity in the 20th year of King Edward, son of Henry.

“The Bailiffs and Commonalty of the Borough of Liverpool were summoned that they be here at this day to shew by what warrant they claim to be quit of Common Pleas and amercements of the county, and suits of counties and wapentakes, and of toll, stallage, thorough-toll, passage, pontage and lastage throughout the whole kingdom of England, and to have a Market, Fair, Pillory, Tumbrel, Infangethef,



Gallows, and the amendation of the assize of bread and ale broken in the town aforesaid, which belong to the Crown and dignity of our Lord the King, without the license and will of the Lord the King, or of his progenitors kings of England, &c.

“And certain men of the Borough of Liverpool came for the Commonalty and say—that they have not at present a Bailiff of themselves, but have been accustomed to have until Edmund the King’s brother impeded them, and permits them not to have a free borough; where-upon at present they do not claim the aforesaid liberties except they may be quit of common fines and amercements of the county, and suits of counties and wapentakes, and of toll, stallage, thorough-toll, passage, pontage and lastage through the whole kingdom of England. Report.

“And as to the other Liberties, they say that they have been accustomed to have them, but the aforesaid Edmund now has them, and they say that the Lord John, late King of England, grandfather of the Lord the now King, in whose time the aforesaid Borough first began to be, by his charter—which they shewed—granted to all his faithful people who should take burgages there.” *[Here follow recitals blending together the two charters of John and Henry III.]*

“And whereas it appears by their evidence that the aforesaid Edmund hath usurped and occupied the aforesaid liberties, the Sheriff is commanded that he cause him to come here on Monday next after the feast of St. James the apostle, to answer, &c. And it is directed to the Commonalty that they be here to prosecute for our Lord the King, together with William Inge, &c. And the Commonalty put in their place John de la More, Adam son of Alan Walseman, and Richard de Lyverpol. Afterwards, the aforesaid Edmund came by his attorney, and a day is given at Appleby in the county of Westmorland in the Octaves of St. Michael.” Quo  
Warranto  
Report.

Of the result of this inquiry we have no record.

There is evidence from the Pipe Rolls of the Exchequer that, after the expiration of the fee-farm lease from Henry III., down to 1348, no leases were granted, the burgage rents, tolls, and customs dues being collected by the bailiffs, and accounted for to the Earl. Burgage  
Rents and  
Tolls.

Edmund, Earl of Lancaster, died in 1296. After his decease, the usual “inquisitio post mortem” was held, of which the record is to be found in the rolls of Chancery, as follows:—

“An Inquisition taken at West Derby on Wednesday in the week of Pentecost in the 26th year of the reign of King Edward, of the extent of the lands and tenements, Fees and Rents, which were of Lord Edmund, brother of the Lord the now King in the Wapen- Inquisitio  
post mortem.

take of West Derby by Alan le Norreys of Sefton, Richard de Molyneux of Crosseby," and others. The portion relating to Liverpool reads thus:—"And they say that the rents of assize of Lyverpole are worth by the year, £8 7<sup>s</sup>. 6<sup>d</sup>.; also the herbage of the garden with the dove-houses 10<sup>s</sup>.; and the passage over the Mersey, 26<sup>s</sup>. 8<sup>d</sup>. And there are two mills, one water and the other wind, and they are worth by the year five marks. The tolls of the market and fair, with foreign tolls are worth about Ten Pounds. The perquisites of court of the same town are worth about 40<sup>s</sup> by the year. Sum £25 10<sup>s</sup>. 10<sup>d</sup>." This, in present money, is about £383 2s. 6d., not at all an inconsiderable sum.

1296.  
Members  
elected.

In 1296, the first Parliament called by writs of the Crown, was held at Westminster. To this Liverpool sent two members—Adam Fitzrichard and Robert Pinklowe—who were paid their travelling expenses and wages for their services.

1309.  
Grant of  
Turbary.

In the year 1309 (3rd Edward II.), a very important grant was made to the burgesses by Thomas, the second Earl of Lancaster. It runs as follows:—

"Know all men that we Thomas Earl of Lancaster have given and granted, and by these presents confirm to our Burgesses of our town of Lyverpole six acres of mosses,<sup>1</sup> lying between the Pikecroft lands and the Lambthorn, adjoining the goit of the said town of Lyverpole, to hold and to have from us and our heirs freely for ever, paying yearly to us and our heirs a silver penny at the feast of St. John the Baptist for all service. And we, the aforesaid Thomas and our heirs, the aforesaid six acres of mosses, and the appurtenances guarantee and defend to our burgesses of Lyverpolle and their heirs for ever. In witness of this we have affixed our seal in the presence of the following witnesses. Robert de Latham, Adam de Ireland, and others. Given at Lyverpole the Thursday next after the feast of St. Mark, in the 3rd year of the reign of King Edward the son of King Edward."

This moss-land, so granted, was doubtless intended as a turbary to supply the good people of Liverpool with fuel. It now forms a very valuable portion of the corporate estate, comprising the district formerly called Mosslake Fields, and including the site of Abercromby and Falkner Squares, Bedford Street, Grove Street, &c.

<sup>1</sup> Large measure, equal to nearly 13 acres statute.



From an Inquisition held at Wigan, 12th March, 1327 <sup>1327.</sup>  
(1st Edward III.), it appears that the revenue from the <sup>Revenue.</sup>  
town amounted at that time to £30 10s. od., equal to  
£457 10s. od. in present money.

In 1322, after the battle of Boroughbridge, Earl Thomas <sup>1322.</sup>  
was beheaded, and his brother Henry succeeded to the  
Earldom of Lancaster. The borough of Liverpool passing  
therewith, a jury was summoned to inquire into its value. <sup>Inquiry as to</sup>  
Their report is as follows:— <sup>Value.</sup>

“The jurors say that there is at Lyverpoll a certain Castle, whose  
trench and herbage are of the value of 2<sup>s</sup>. per year; and that there  
is a certain dove-cote under the Castle of the value of 6<sup>s</sup>. 8<sup>d</sup>., and  
that there is a certain Borough in which are divers free tenants holding  
in burgage and paying yearly £8 8<sup>s</sup>.; and that there is there a <sup>Market.</sup>  
certain market held on Saturday, whose tolls are worth £10, and that <sup>Ferry.</sup>  
there is a certain ferry beyond the Mersey which is worth 40<sup>s</sup>.; and  
there is a wind-mill of the value of 26<sup>s</sup>. and a water-mill of the value  
of 24<sup>s</sup>.; and that there is a certain Fair held on the day of St. Martin, <sup>Fair.</sup>  
whose toll is of the value of 13<sup>s</sup>. 9<sup>d</sup>.; and that there is there a cer-  
tain Park which is called Toxteth, whose herbage in summer is of  
the value of £11. Sum total £35 0<sup>s</sup>. 5<sup>d</sup>.” (Equal to £525 6s. 3d.)

It may be remarked that in this estimate, which seems  
very complete, there is no mention of customs or town  
dues. It is probable that the customs dues, at least,  
were reserved by the Crown.

During Earl Thomas's rule, he had a faithful follower  
and secretary, Robert de Holland, to whom he made <sup>Sir Robert de</sup>  
numerous grants of manors, amongst others the Castle <sup>Holland.</sup>  
and Borough of Liverpool. When Earl Henry entered  
into possession, after the death of his brother, Holland put  
in his claims. To decide this question, a jury of Lanca-  
shire gentlemen was summoned, who met at Wigan, and  
after inquiry drew up the following verdict:—

“An Inquisition taken before Simon de Grimsby escheator of the lord <sup>1327.</sup>  
the King, at Wigan on Tuesday next after the feast of St. Gregory the <sup>Inquiry.</sup>  
Pope in the first year of the reign of King Edward 3rd (1327), by Gilbert  
de Haydock, Rich<sup>d</sup>. de Bold, Robert le Norreys, John de la More, and

Inquiry.

Adam Clerk of Lyverpoll, and others; who say upon their oath, that Robert de Holland about the time of seven years before the death of Thomas Earl of Lancaster entered into the Castle and Borough of Lyverpoll, which are worth by the year in all issues £30 10. (with many other manors named); But they say that the aforesaid Robert shewed no charter nor any other special deed under the name of the said Thomas the earl, of the aforesaid castle, borough, &c., neither had the said Thomas ever delivered any seizin to the aforesaid Robert of the aforesaid Castle, Borough, &c.; and upon these being required of, whether the aforesaid Thomas died seized of the aforesaid Castle, Borough, &c., they say that they know not, and hereupon to speak precisely, they wholly refuse. And they say that the aforesaid Thomas held all the premises aforesaid with their appurtenances of the Lord Edward, late King of England, father of the now King, in capite, by the service of one Gosshawk, and they say that Lord Henry Earl of Lancaster is the brother of the aforesaid Thomas, and is next heir, and of the age of forty years and upwards."

This verdict decided nothing. Robert de Holland petitioned Parliament for the restoration of the estates which he claimed, but there is no evidence that he ever entered into possession; but as he died a few years afterwards without heirs male, the castle and borough reverted to Henry, Earl of Lancaster.

1329.  
Grant for  
Paving.

In 1329, the first local improvement took place in the town. The streets had hitherto not been paved. In order to raise funds for this purpose, it was proposed to levy certain specific tolls on articles sold, which could not be done without the authority of the Crown. This document reads as follows:—

"Paveage conceded to the town of Liverpool. The King to his beloved Bailiffs and to the honest men of the town of Liverpool, greeting. Know that we have granted in aid of the paving of the said town of Liverpool that from the date of the grant of this deed to the end of the three years next following you may take the underwritten tolls, that is to say, on every horse load of grain  $\frac{1}{4}$ <sup>d</sup>.; on every horse, mare, ox and cow  $\frac{1}{2}$ <sup>d</sup>."

Merchandize.

And so on, with a long list of articles. This list is interesting as indicating the nature of the traffic carried on at that date. Of course cattle, sheep, and pigs, hides and skins, are enumerated. Cloth of various descriptions is mentioned, cloth of

worthsted, linen cloth, linen cloth of Aylsham, Cendallo<sup>1</sup> of two kinds. Some of the cloth must have been of home manufacture, as it is alluded to as being brought in carts. Iron, lead, tallow, Cordovan leather, wine, wood, honey, wool, are mentioned. Coals appear to have been brought by sea, as sea coals are charged with a duty of  $\frac{1}{2}$ d. per chaldron. Fish formed an important item—sea fish, salmon, herrings, lam-  
Tolls on  
Merchandize.
preys, mullet, &c.

This authority for tolls was only granted for three years, but similar grants became frequent, five having been issued during the reign of Edward III.

In 1333, the third charter was granted to the town by Edward III. The immediate occasion for its issue does  
1333.  
Ed. III.  
Charter.
not appear, as it gave no new privileges, and the sum paid—40 shillings (equal to £30)—was too trifling to be of any importance. It is a simple “inspeximus,” merely reciting the two previous charters, with a clause at the end of grant and confirmation. In the wording of this confirmation, however, we may find the reason for the application for a new charter. In the charter of Henry III. (1229) the privileges were granted to the burgesses and their *heirs*. So long as no landed property was possessed by the town, this was not of much consequence, the burgages being held under the Crown by the individual grantees or their heirs; but since a valuable tract of land had been given to the town by Earl Thomas, the want of a Corporation, with perpetual succession, would have led to complications and difficulties. Hence it is probable that the new charter was applied for, which added the confirmation of the grant “to the aforesaid burgesses, their heirs and *successors*,” thereby laying the foundation

<sup>1</sup> *Cendallo*, in Spanish, signifies a thin cloth of silk or thread. It indicates imports from Spain in exchange for exports of fish.

Incorporation. for the corporate estate, which could not otherwise have come into existence.

The document.

The document consists of a single skin of parchment, 16 inches by 11 inches. The penmanship is good, but the ink is pale and somewhat faded. There is a wide margin, with lines ruled round the border. The top line is ornamented with curious elongated flourishes to the capitals. The seal remains attached. The charter is dated from York, and witnessed by the Archbishop of York, the Bishop of Winchester, and five others.

1336.

In the year 1336, when the King was preparing to prosecute the war with Scotland by sea as well as land, he issued the following order, which indicates that the Port of Liverpool was at that time considered a post of importance :—

Levy of ships. “The King to all whom, &c., Greeting: Know ye that we, fully confiding in the approved fidelity and provident circumspection of our beloved and faithful Simon de Beltoft, have constituted the said Simon Captain and Commander of the six ships of war which for certain reasons we have ordered to be got ready and equipped by him and our beloved Clerk Henry de Kendale along the sea coast towards the western parts in the Port of Liverpool, and in every the ports between Liverpool and Skymburnesse, in order to put to sea towards those ports in our service. Witness the King at York the 15th day of May” (1336).

1346.  
Inquisitio post mortem.

On the death of Henry the third Earl of Lancaster, in 1346, an “inquisitio post mortem” was held, the report on which contains valuable information as to the state of Liverpool at that time. It runs as follows:—

Return of Revenues.

“Lyverpull.—The Bailiffs there answer of one penny from the Burgesses of the town of Lyverpull for 12 acres of Turbary in the Moss in exchange for one place enclosed within the park by the charter of Thomas the late earl at the term of Michaelmas, and of 6s 8d for the rent of John de Wamberg and the heirs of the body of the same John by the charter of Earl Henry the father of the Lord for three parts of one Burgage and of five sellions of land which fell into the hands of the Lord by the death of John Botiller a bastard—and of 4s for the rent of the third part of half a Burgage called Long Stable, before the gate of the Castle beyond. One Burgage being in the hands of Denis Kelinge by the service of finding a



stable for 12 horses at each arrival of the Lord within the said borough; and of £8 4 10<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub> for the rent of 164 Burgages, three parts, an eighth part, and a 48<sup>th</sup> part of a Burgage in the town of Lyverpull, and of 14<sup>1</sup>/<sub>4</sub><sup>d</sup> charged for the rent of one Burgage, the 8<sup>th</sup> part and 16<sup>th</sup> part of one Burgage as in the rent of the number of Burgages as above at the term of St Michael, and of 3<sup>d</sup> for the increased rent of Wm de Lyverpull, Clerk for half a Burgage formerly of Henry son of John de Walker at equal terms, and of 18<sup>d</sup> for the rent of John Bacon for one cottage upon the ditch of the castle at will, all which appears by the new Rental, and of 67<sup>s</sup> 6<sup>d</sup> for the rent of 40<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> acres of land in Saltenentmor, and of 7<sup>s</sup> 3<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub><sup>d</sup> for the rent of 14<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> acres and half a rood of turbary in the Moss. Sum £12 13 4<sup>3</sup>/<sub>4</sub>.

Return of  
Revenues.

"For the farm of the Tolls, stallage of the markets, Fairs of the town of Lyverpull, passage boat, one horse mill and two watermills as demised to John, son of Wm del Mor £26.

"For the farm of Rd de Walton, for the herbage and fruit of the garden, with the issues of the dovecote demised for a term of eight years 15<sup>s</sup> at the terms of Easter and St Michael.

"For the herbage of the ditch of the Castle 16<sup>d</sup>

"For Fines for entry, for perquisites of Courts, for perquisites of Port Motes, for Customs of Anchorage, for wreck of the sea, waifs, strays, Escheats, for fishery of the Mersee [*blank in original.*] Of which 4<sup>s</sup> is allowed to Benedict le Stedman for the yearly rent of a certain tenement which the Lord Earl Henry, the father of the now Lord remitted for the term of his life in consideration of his services."

We find from this record, comparing it with others, that the original number of burgage tenements was 168, which continued the same down to the sale of the Lordship by Charles I., in 1628. The quit rent was 1s. per annum each. These burgages were heritable property, and became in consequence sub-divided, such small portions as  $\frac{1}{48}$ <sup>th</sup> part being noticed above. These burgage rents, with the proceeds of the other landed property, the perquisites of the courts, anchorage, &c., were retained by the lord and collected by the bailiffs. The tolls of markets and fairs, ferry and mills, were leased to John de la Mor, most probably on behalf of the burgesses, though not specifically stated. No customs or towns dues are mentioned.

In 1357, a fee-farm lease for ten years was granted by Henry the first Duke of Lancaster to the before-men-

Fee-farm  
Lease.

1346.

1346.

Burgages.



tioned John de la More, Richard de Aynsargh, William Fitzadam, and others, on behalf of the burgesses. This included the entire revenues of the over-lord from every source. The deed sets forth:—

“Our town of Liverpull with the appurtenances together with our two mills of the same town, with the rents and farms whatsoever in the same town of Liverpull; also the passage of the water of Mersey, taking therefor as hath anciently been accustomed to be taken, and the perquisites of our Courts, together with the parcels of Turbary under our park of Toxteth; also the correction of the Assize of Bread and ale; of foreoccupiers, forestallers, butchers, tanners and of peace broken, and the whole toll of the town aforesaid to be taken as anciently it hath been accustomed to be taken, together with all other profits to us pertaining in the same town;—saving the orchard, and the herbage of the fosse of the Castle, and wreck of the Sea, Waifs and Estrays, and the forfeiture of the lands, and chattels of felons and fugitives.”

Rent.

The rent was £33 6s. 8d., equal to £500 modern.

Fee-farm  
Leases.

I may here dispose, once for all, of the fee-farm leases, which from this time forward became very numerous, not less than thirty having been granted between this date and 1628, when the Lordship was sold by Charles I. The highest amount of fee-farm rent realised was under a lease from John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, granted in 1394, amounting to 57 marks, equal to £570 modern. After this date the revenues gradually declined, and during the troublous times of the Wars of the Roses, the rent sunk to £14. This probably indicates a decline in the trade of the port, as in a petition in the reign of Elizabeth the town is described as “Your Majesty’s poor decayed town of Liverpoole.” Since, however, after the reign of Henry VII., the fee-farm rent appears a fixed sum of £14, and after the reign of Henry VIII., £14 6s. 8d., it would seem that some compromise had taken place, settling the returns to the Crown on a definite basis. From the year 1545, the fee-farm was in the hands of the Molyneux family by a succession of grants. In 1672, Caryl Molyneux, Lord

Maryborough, granted a lease of 1,000 years to the Corporation, at the rent of £30, and in 1777 the reversion was bought by them.

The question of the right to the tolls of markets and fairs was a constant source of litigation, as will hereafter appear.

In the year 1356, the office of Mayor is first mentioned. <sup>1356.</sup>  
The notice occurs in a letter patent from the King, bearing <sup>Mayor first mentioned.</sup>  
date the 19th May, authorising Richard de Aynsargh, Mayor of Liverpool, to acquire £10 of land from the Duke of Lancaster, and—

“To give and assign the said land, notwithstanding the statute of Mortmain, to perform divine service every day for the souls of the faithful deceased, in the Chapel of the Blessed Virgin and St Nicholas in Liverpool.” <sup>Grant to Chapel.</sup>

The office of Bailiff had doubtless existed from the foundation of the borough. The bailiffs were originally officers appointed by the Crown to collect and account for the dues and rents. They were usually two in number, one of whom took precedence, and was hence called *Major*, *Majeur*, corrupted into *Maire* or *Mayor*. <sup>Bailiffs.</sup> <sup>Mayor.</sup>

In 1361, King Edward III. sent over his son, Lionel, Duke of Clarence and Earl of Ulster, to act as Viceroy and Commander-in-Chief in Ireland. <sup>1361.</sup>  
He set sail from <sup>Duke of Clarence.</sup>  
Liverpool. The following is the Royal mandate, extracted from the Patent Rolls:—

“The King to the Justices, Chancellor, and others of our Council in Ireland greeting:—Recalling to memory how our Irish enemies and rebels and others, have in great manner destroyed our faithful subjects of the land aforesaid, and cease not daily to commit such wicked and evil acts, and in process of time much greater are dreaded to be done unless their wickedness be soon restrained; We for the cause aforesaid have determined to send our most dear son Lionel Earl of Ulster, with a competent armed force to the land aforesaid: And for the comfort and solace of our adherents and faithful supporters in the said land, we have resolved to send beforehand our beloved clerk, Thomas de Baddeley, to announce to you and them the

Despatch of  
Navy.

news of the coming of our dear son, and to lay the charge on you that the whole navy of the land aforesaid completely armed, shall be sent with all speed to the ports of Lytherpool and Chester, for the passage of our said son to those parts, &c. Witness the King at Westminster the 10th May" (1361).

1372.  
Grant to  
Rankyn  
d'Ypres.

It was not an uncommon practice at this period to grant rent charges upon local revenues in favour of particular individuals. A curious incident occurs in the records of the Duchy, in the Register of John of Gaunt, A.D. 1372. It is an agreement in Norman-French, made between the Duke and Rankyn d'Ypres, Esq., whereby

"The said Rankyn is retained and dwelling with our said Lord for peace and for war, for the term of his life, in manner following; that is to say, in time of peace the said Rankyn shall be at board at Court, in the manner as other esquires of the household of our said Lord; and for his fees in time of peace our said Lord has given and granted to the said Rankyn seventeen marks six shillings and eightpence besides 100 shillings which he hath lately granted him from the manor of Skerton; so that our said Lord will that the said Rankyn should have and take in time of peace for the term of his life in the whole twenty and five marks sterling from the farm of the town of *Liverpol* by the hands of the Receiver of our said Lord in those parts, &c. Done at the Savoy the 16th July the year of England the 46th" (1372).

1380.  
Wm.  
Fitzadam.

A few of the extant documents throw light on the condition and private life of the burgesses in these early times. William Fitz-Adam, or, as we should now call him, Adamson, was Mayor of Liverpool in 1378, and was one of the grantees named in the fee-farm lease to the burgesses in 1357. He must therefore have been a person of some distinction in the town. He died in 1380. The following is a copy of his will, with the inventory of his goods attached:—

His will.

"Last will and testament of William the son of Adam of Lyverpull.— In the name of God Amen. I William being of sound mind, though weak in body, make my last will in this manner. Imprimis I bequeath my soul to God, and to the blessed Virgin Mary and all the saints; and my body to be buried in the Chapel of Lyverpull before the face of the white image of the Virgin, which is my perpetual place of burial. I leave to be distributed in bread on the day of my burial three quarters of wheat. I leave six pounds of wax to be used about my body. I leave to

every priest in the Chapel of Lyverpull 4<sup>d</sup>. I leave the rest of all my goods to Katherine my wife and our children. To perform my will, I appoint as my executors, John le Fuller, and Wm. Parker, chaplain. Given at Lyverpull, on the Tuesday next after the feast of Luke the Evangelist, in the presence of Thomas de la More, the Mayor, and John de Eccleston, and others of my neighbours, in the year 1380."

"Inventory of the goods of William the son of Adam of Lyverpull. Goods. Imprimis in grain 10 marks.

"In seven oxen and cows each 10<sup>s</sup>.

"In two cows, two horses and a mare each half a mark.

"In three horses one mark.

"In 18 pigs, 30<sup>s</sup>.

"In 24 sellions of wheat sown in the ground, £7.<sup>s</sup>

"In domestic utensils 11 marks."

Total £28 6s. 4d., equal to £424 in modern currency. It will be observed that there is no mention of any merchandise.

In the year 1382 the fourth charter was granted by Richard II. The circumstances connected with it are peculiar and suggestive.

1382.  
4th Charter.  
Richard II.

The original charter, or letter patent, of John was of the freest description, giving a general invitation to settle in the new borough, with equal privileges to all who should take burgage tenements. We may suppose that the first burgesses wished to keep these privileges to themselves, for in the second charter, only twenty-two years afterwards, we find a clause inserted, constituting the burgesses a mercatorial gild, and enacting "that no one that is not of the same gild shall transact any merchandise in the borough unless by consent of the same burgesses and their heirs." This clause enabled the burgesses to make their own conditions with any new settlers. It is not clear whether they had the power to levy any tolls or dues other than those appertaining to the Lordship, but they could compel the payment of a fine by a non-burgess for admission to the privileges.

Burgesses and  
Freemen.

\* A *sellion* was a ridge or butt of arable land, between two furrows or drains.



When so admitted, the party became "a freeman," although not a burgess by tenure, and was entitled to take part in all the town's proceedings. The sons of freemen were equally admissible, and the privilege was afterwards extended to apprentices. Whilst the number of freemen was thus increasing, the burgesses were diminishing by the sale and subdivision of the burgage tenements, which led to their ultimate extinction as a separate body. During the transition period it is evident from the documents that a fierce contest was carried on

Freemen.

"We also, the grants and confirmations aforesaid holding firm and valid—the clause above expressed that no one who is not of the same gild shall transact any merchandize unless by consent of the same burgesses, being entirely excepted (*illa clausula penitus excepta*) do for us and our heirs accept and ratify," &c.

Privileges.

The document is on a single skin, 19 inches by 14 inches. The initial letter and three smaller capitals are left blank for illumination. The seal is perfect.

1400.  
5th Charter.  
Henry IV.

Eighteen years afterwards (1400) another charter was obtained from Henry IV. virtually repealing the enactment throwing open the trade. This was not done in express terms, but by entirely ignoring the charter of Richard II. The three first charters are recited, including the restrictive clause of Henry III., and confirmation granted without any reference to the regulations of the subsequent charter. It is clear that there had been a controversy, in which the burgesses and freemen came



off victorious, but no record exists as to the circumstances or the motives of those concerned.

This document is on a single skin, the seal attached, but broken. The large initial letter is ornamented. The initials in the first line are decorated with peculiar elongated flourishes.

The originals of the charters, and most of the other documents hitherto quoted, are in Latin, but from the time of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, to the reign of Henry V. many of the records are couched in an antiquated form of Norman-French. It appears at first sight singular that for many years after Chaucer had written his poems, and Wickliffe had translated the Bible into English, the documents of a remote provincial town in England should be written in a foreign tongue. It may be accounted for by the connection of John of Gaunt with Flanders, which introduced foreigners into his service, such as Rankyn d'Ypres, mentioned above, and also by the close connection with France, arising out of the wars and conquests there.

Records in  
French.

The following specimen is a grant by Henry IV., in the second year of his reign, to Nicol de Atherton:—

1401.  
Grant to Nicol  
de Atherton.

"Henry &c a toutz ceux &c saluz. Sachés q̄ nous de nre gce especiale et pr le bon et greable svice q̄ nr ch et foial chivaler Nicol de Atherton nous ad fait et ferra en temps avenir et pr tant q'il ad restorez div'ses nos l'res patentes p̄ les queux nous eussions g'antez au dit Nicol div'ses annuitées à prendre pr terme de sa vie, cestassavoir dys liv<sup>s</sup> des issues de nre manoir de Derby el countée de Lancastre pr les mains de nre receiv<sup>r</sup> illocqs pr le temps estant; dys livres pr an à prendre des issues pfitz et comoditées de la baillie de Westderbyshire . . . et dys livres p̄ an de la ferme quelle les Mair, Baillifs et homes de nre ville de Lyverpule rendent a nous pr an pr les mains des ditz Mair, Baillifs, homes ou auts receivours ou occupios de mesme la ferme pr le temps estant as termes de Saint Michell et Pasques p̄ onelles porcions. . . En temoign &c. Don &c. la xxj j'or D'avrill.

"Pr ipm Rege & Consiliū."

"Henry &c to all those &c greeting: Know ye that of our special grace and for the good and agreable service which our dear and faithful knight Nicol de Atherton has done for us and will do in time to come, and for his surrender of divers letters patent, we have granted to the said Nicol certain annuities to take for the term of his life to wit ten pounds from the issues of our manor of Derby in the county of Lancaster by the hands of our receiver there for the time being; ten pounds to be taken from the issues, profits and commodities of the Bailey of Westderbyshire . . . and ten pounds a year from the farm which the Mayor Bailiffs and men of our town of Lyverpule render to us yearly by the hands of the said Mayor, Bailiffs and men, receivers or occupiers of the same farm for the time being, at the terms of St. Michael and Easter in equal portions. In witness &c. Given &c. the xxi day of April.

"By the said King and his Council."

1414.  
Henry V.  
Petition in  
French.

In the 2nd Henry V. (1414) a petition, in French, was presented to the king by the burgesses of Liverpool, styling themselves his "poor tenants," complaining that

"Whereas, by Royal Charter, the burgesses have at all times had and continued a court in the same borough, and the perquisites of the said court with all manner of profits to the said court appertaining have taken and received, nevertheless the officers of the County have come, usurped and held certain courts in the same borough with force, and thus the said burgesses are grievously molested, vexed and disturbed of their said liberties and franchises,"

and praying for redress.

This petition is endorsed—

"Responsio—Soit la matière deing escript comys a Conseil le Roi, et q̄ mesme le Conseil p̄ auctorité du Parlement eit plein pouvoir de faire droit as suppliantz deing escriptz, sur la contenue especifé en queste Peticion."

1419.  
County  
Courts.

The county authorities had their reprisals. Five years afterwards there is a precept in French, issued by the Crown, addressed to the steward of Salford and West Derby, commanding him

"To distrain all those who have been Mayors and Bailiffs of Lyverpull from the time of our Coronation until now, that they be before the Barons of our Exchequer at Lancaster at the next Session there to be holden, to render us account from the time that they have holden our Courts at Lyverpull, and to answer to us for the issues both of our said Courts and for the toll and other profits by them levied in the meantime as reason demands."

The last document, in French, is an extension to the burgesses for one year of the fee-farm lease, dated in 1442 (9th Henry V.) The subsequent deeds, down to the reign of Elizabeth, are almost all in Latin.

1422.  
Fee-farm  
Lease.

In the 7th year of his reign, King Henry IV. issued a grant permitting Sir John de Stanley, who had married the heiress of the Lathoms of Lathom to embattle and fortify a mansion he had recently built on the margin of the river, at the foot of Water Street. In the first year of his reign, the King had appointed Sir John Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, and on the ruin of the Percy family, who possessed the Isle of Man, the Lordship was added to his possessions. The mansion was called "The Tower," and remained standing until 1819, when it was removed in carrying out public improvements. The following is a copy of the grant, copied from the Patent Rolls, 7th Henry IV. (1406):—

1406.  
Sir John  
Stanley.

"John de Stanley Knt. The King to all whom the present letters shall come greeting: Know ye that of our special grace, we have granted and given license, for us and our heirs, as much as in us lies, to our dear and faithful knight John de Stanley, steward of our household, that he may embattle and fortify a certain house which he has lately constructed of stone and lime, in the town of Liverpool, and hold the same so embattled and fortified to him and to his heirs for ever, without impeachment or disturbance of us, or of our heirs, or of our officers and ministers whomsoever. In testimony whereof &c. Witness the King at Westminster the 15th day of January" (1406).

License to  
fortify.

The documents relating to Liverpool in the 15th century are not numerous, which may be accounted for by the disturbed state of the kingdom.

The constablenesship of the castle was an office in the gift of the Crown. In the 19th year of Henry VI. it was bestowed on Sir Richard Molyneux, of Sefton, ancestor of the Earls of Sefton, and five years afterwards the office was made hereditary in the family, who continued

Constable of  
Castle.

to hold it until the destruction of the castle in 1725. The following is a copy of the grant:—

Sir Richard  
Molyneux.

“Whereas on the 10<sup>th</sup> February in the 19<sup>th</sup> year of our reign, we did of our special grace constitute and ordain our trusty and well beloved Sir Rd Molyneux, Knight, and Richard his eldest son to be as well the master forester of our forests and parks within our Wapentake of West Derby . . . and on the 10<sup>th</sup> day of February in the year aforesaid by other letters patent, the Constabship of Liverpool Castle &c. ; and they being willing to restore to us their estate in the said offices, to the intent that we would graciously grant the same to the heirs male of the aforesaid Richard the father, we, taking the same into our gracious consideration, have ordained them the said offices to hold as aforesaid, with the fees, wages, profits and commodities to the said offices pertaining.”

Sir Thomas  
Molyneux.

A re-grant was made by Richard III., in 1483, to Thomas Molyneux, descendant of the above.

The fact of the two leading families in the neighbourhood being in possession of the two strongholds of the town, naturally led, in the unsettled period of the 15<sup>th</sup> century, to differences and reprisals, sometimes accompanied with violence. In 1424 (3rd Henry VI.) a fracas of this kind occurred, which is described in a report from Ralph de Ratcliffe and James of the Holts, Justices of the Peace to the Chancellor of the Duchy. The document sets forth that—

1424.

Molyneux and  
Stanley  
Controversy.

“Sir Richard Ratcliffe, Sheriff of the County of Lancaster showed us a writ directed to him from our lord the King, making mention there was great rumour and congregation of routs between Sir Rd Molyneux, sometimes dwelling at Sefton Knt on the one part, and Thomas Stanley the younger of Liverpool Esquire on the other part. Wherefore the said Sheriff charged us and many other gentry of the Kings behalfe that we should go with him to Liverpool, then as the said congregation and riots were ordained to be ; and the said Sheriff and we gede to Liverpool on Wednesday next after ; and there we found the said Thomas de Stanley in his father's house and with a multitude of people in the town to the number of two thousand men or more, he alleging that the said Sir Richard will come hither with great congregations, riots and great multitude of people, to slea and beat the said Thomas, his men and his servants, the which he would withstand if he might. Thereupon the Sheriffs arrested the said Thomas, and committed him to ward.”

Having secured one combatant, the document proceeds that—



"The Sheriffs and their men that there was, yadden up to the West Derby fen, and there on a mow within the said town we saw the said Sir Richard with great congregations rout and multitude to the number of a thousand men and more, arrayed in manner as to go to battle, and coming in fast towards Liverpull town; and the said sheriff arrested the said Sir Richard and committed him to ward."

By order of the King the two champions were compelled to withdraw, one to Windsor, the other to Kenilworth Castle.

I have above quoted a royal letter patent of 1356, authorising the Mayor to acquire lands towards the endowment of the "Chapel of the Blessed Virgin and St. Nicholas," then in all probability recently erected. This is generally considered to be the only ecclesiastical building in Liverpool, down to the beginning of the 18th century. It would appear, however, from the following grant of the 5th Edward IV. (1464) that another and distinct building existed at that time, called the Chapel of St. Mary of the Quay. The document is in Latin, and runs as follows:—

1464.  
St. Mary's  
Chapel.

"Be it known to all present and to come, that we Charles Gelybrand and Ellen my wife have given and granted, and by this our present deed have confirmed, to James Harebron, Maior of the Town of Liverpoole, and the commonalty of the same town and their successors, all those lands and tenements with all their appurtenances which we lately held by the gift and feoffment of John Gerstan, lying in the town and fields of Gerstan in the county of Lancaster; To have and to hold all the said land and tenements with all their appurtenances to the aforesaid James, and the commonalty and their successors for ever of the chief Lord of that fee, by the service thence due and accustomed—for the maintenance of a proper chaplain in the Chapel of St. Mary, commonly called St. Mary of the Quay to celebrate divine offices therein. And in default of a proper chaplain there, we will and grant that all the aforesaid lands and tenements with all their appurtenances shall entirely remain with the aforesaid James and the community and their successors, for the support of a proper chaplain to the altar of St Katherine in the Chapel of St. Nicholas in Liverpool for ever, under the chief Lord of that fee by the service due and of right accustomed. And in default of a proper chaplain there we will and grant that all the aforesaid Lands and tenements with all their appurtenances, shall entirely remain with the aforesaid James and the community and their successors for ever for the support of a suitable

Grant to  
Chapel.

Chapel of St.  
Nicholas.



chaplain for the altar of St. Mary in the Chapel of St. Nicholas aforesaid by the holding from the chief Lord of that fee by the service due and accustomed.

“And moreover we the aforesaid Charles and Ellen and our heirs all the aforesaid Lands and tenements &c will warrant and in the form aforesaid will for ever defend. In testimony whereof to this our present deed, we have affixed our seal before these witnesses.

WM NORRIS  
THOS NORRIS  
ROBT LATHAM  
and others

Dated at Gerstan (Garston) the 10<sup>th</sup> day of October in the 5<sup>th</sup> year of the reign of Edward 4<sup>th</sup>” (1464).

1487.  
Henry VII.

David ap  
Griffith.

When Henry VII. ascended the throne, in 1485, he brought with him many of the retainers of the Tudor family. Amongst these, one David ap Griffith received, in 1487, a grant of the

“Town and Lordship of Litherpoole, and also one windmill called Akers Myll, and another windmill called Wartre (Wavertree) Myll<sup>1</sup> at the rent of £14 and 20<sup>s</sup> each for the two mills.”

This was renewed in 1502.

1528.  
Alice Griffith.

In 1528, David ap Griffith being dead, another lease was granted to his widow, Alice Griffith, and Henry Ackers, including the tolls and fairs, the ferry and other appurtenances, at the rent of £14 6s. 8d. per annum, and 20s. each for the two mills.

Various other leases were subsequently granted, as noticed above.

1529.

In the year 1529 the following order was sent down by the Crown. It is endorsed “To enquire for Wrekks in the streme of Merce, Lanc.”:—

Inquisition.

“Henry &c. To all and singular our Justices, Stewards Maiers Bailiffs and other our Ministers in our County Palantyne of Lancaster &c greeting: Knowe ye that for the faithful trust and confidence that we have in our trusty and wellbeloved Wm More, Squier, we have deputed him to inquire from time to time by all ways and means by which the truth may be known of all manner of fishes royal, wrecks, flotsomes,

<sup>1</sup> This mill is still standing and in regular use, in its original wooden construction, which of course has been renewed from time to time.

jetsomes and other casualties happening in the stream and water called Marcea or in any creeks, havens, streams of waters of the same, and to survey search and examine the concealment and subtraction of all such tolls customs and forfeitures as to us should rightfully appertain, of any goods chattels or merchandises brought to or from our port of Liverpole, or in any other ports, creeks or havens in our said county. And also to inquire and survey of all destructions of fry of fishes, weirs and kedells Fisheries. erect made or inhaunced within any of the said streams &c to the annoyance thereof or contrary to the form of any Acts or Statutes provided in that behalf,—(with further powers to obtain information and report to the Chancellor and Council), under the Seal of the Duchy."

In the year 1533-4, on the eve of the Reformation, a 1533.  
Commission was issued for a strict inquiry into the royal Commission  
on Revenues.  
revenues in Liverpool, and the mode in which they were collected. It runs as follows:—

"Henry &c. To our trusty and wellbeloved Sir Wm. Molyneux Knt, steward of our town of Lirpoole, Rd. Hesketh (and others) Greeting: Whereas information is made unto us on the behalf of our fermour of our toll within our said town of Litherpole that whereas we and our progenitors time out of mind have had and used to have the toll and customs of all merchandises there bought or sold or thither brought to be uttered and sold, except only of the Maire and Burgeses abiding and dwelling in the said town, so it is now that the said Maire and Burgeses of our said town, contrary to their ancient liberties there for their own singular lucre and advantage now of late have made divers and many foreign men not resident ne Making  
Free.men. abiding in the said town to be Burgeses of the same town to the intent to defraud us and our right of our toll there, as in the said information thereof made, herein enclosed, appeareth more at large, whereby the ferme of our said toll there is greatly decayed and diminished. We not willing in no wise to be thus prejudiced and hurted of our said toll, trusting in your wisdoms and indifferencies, will and desire you, and natheless charge you that ye, iiii, iii, or ii of you at least, at time convenient by you to be limited, you do re-paire yourselves to the said town, and that ye then and there do inquire of the demeanour of the said Maire and burgeses concerning our said toll and other the premises, by all ways convenient, as well 1533.  
Inquiries. by the examination as otherwise, so that we may come to the true truth therein: and hereupon by your discretions to set such order herein so that our said ferme and duty be not diminished by this means in time to come; And what ye shall do, perceive, and understand, we will that ye by your writing under your seals do certify us, our Chancellor and Council of the said Duchy, at our Paloyes of Westminster thereof in the xv of Saint Mighell the Archangel next coming, to the intent that we may further proceed therein, as thereunto shall appertain. Yeven at our said Paloyes the xxviii<sup>th</sup> day of June the twenty sixth year of our reign.

"By the King."

1533.  
King's  
Rentally.

In the same year a return was made of the King's Rentally in Liverpool. This consisted partly of lands and partly of the burgage tenements, such as had not been alienated and appropriated to the Church. Houses are mentioned in Castle Street, Castle Hey, Moor Street, Chapel Street, &c. Lord Derby and the families of Stanley, Molyneux, Crosse, Moore, Norris, Fazakerly, Halsall, and Blundell are amongst the tenants. The sum total only amounts to £10 1s. 4d., equal to £151 modern.

1534.  
Church  
Revenues.

In 1534-5 (26th Henry VIII.) came the dissolution of the monasteries, and the confiscation of a large portion of the Church revenues. Liverpool was not at that time a parish. The Chapel of Our Lady and St. Nicholas was poor in endowment; but the piety of previous generations had founded four chantries therein, the proceeds of which were now taken possession of by the Crown. Sir Thomas Hesketh and Mr. Ashurst were the commissioners appointed to deal with the property. The following is the substance of the return:—

1534.  
Chantries.  
High altar.

#### THE CHANTRY OF THE HIGH ALTAR.

"The Chantry of the High Alter within the Chappell of Leverpoole of the foundation of Henry, Duke of Lancaster, to celebrate there for the soules of him and his ancestors, which is observed accordingly, and the graunt is for ever.

"Ralph Haward incumbent, is of the age of 50 yeares; hath the yearly revenue of £5 19 10 for his salary, besides his living is £10.

"The lands and tenements belonging to the same, valent p<sup>er</sup> ann' £6 2 1; in reprises 2<sup>s</sup>. 4<sup>d</sup>. and so remains there yearly value £5 19 10.

"The ornaments belonging to the Chantry are valued at 2<sup>s</sup>. and the number of ounces of plate are eight by estimation."

St. Nicholas.

#### CHANTRY OF ST. NICHOLAS.

"Of the foundation of John Duke of Lancaster, to celebrate there for the soules of him and his ancestors, and to make one yearly obiit for his soule, which is observed accordingly, and the grant is for ever.

"Richard Frodesham is the incumbent of 80 yeares of age, and hath for his salary £5 14 7; besides his living is 40<sup>s</sup>. The ornaments and plate belonging to this Chantry are none."

## CHANTRY OF ST. JOHN.

St. John.

"The rentally belonging to the Chantry att the Altar of St. John, was of the foundation of John de Leverpoole there for the soules of his ancestors for ever, which is done accordingly.

"John Hurd is the present incumbent of the age of 50 yeares, and hath the cleere yearly revenue of the same for his salary, and his living besydes is £2.

"The ornaments belonging to this Chantry are valued at 40<sup>s</sup> besides eight ounces of plate for chalice."

## CHANTRY OF ST. KATHARINE.

St. Katharine.

"Of the foundation of John Crosse to celebrate there for his soule, and to doe one yearly obiit, and to distribute att the same 3<sup>s</sup>. 4<sup>d</sup> to poore people, and alsoe to keepe a school of grammer free for all childrean bearing the name of Crosse, and poore children, which is not observed accordingly; and the grant is for ever.

"Hurfrey Crosse is the incumbent, and hath for his salary the profitts thereof, bein £6 2 10, being 50 yeares of age; and his living besides is £2.

"The ornaments belonging to it valent 3<sup>s</sup> besides twelve ounces of plate.

"And these fower Chantries were all that did belong to the Chappel of Leverpoole."

The revenues of these chantries were derived partly from agricultural land, partly from house property, and to a considerable extent from burgage rents, which had been granted by the Crown or the Dukes of Lancaster.

A list of the purchasers is given in the records, verified by Thomas Hokenhall, Mayor. Many of the names are those of families continuing in the town long after this period.

In an Act of Parliament passed in 1544, a list of towns is set forth which had fallen into decay, and in which it is declared "that there hath been in times past many beautiful houses which are now falling into ruin." Amongst these decayed towns Liverpool is included.

On the other hand, in 1547, the borough resumed its privilege of sending representatives to Parliament, which had been suspended from 1306.

In 1556, a new charter was granted by Philip and Mary.

1556.

6th Charter.



Mary, the terms of which are very significant. I have already referred above to the exclusive privileges conferred on the burgesses by the charter of Henry III.; the repeal of the clause by the charter of Richard II., and its re-enactment by Henry IV. in 1400. In this charter, after enacting "that no one who is not of the same gild shall transact any merchandize in the borough unless by consent of the same burgesses," it proceeds:—

"We have granted also to the same burgesses and their heirs that whatsoever merchants shall seek the borough with their merchandize, whether strangers or others may safely and securely come with their merchandize, and safely remain and thence depart doing therefor the right and due customs."

These "right and due customs" were the perquisites of the Crown.

According to the instructions to the Commissioners in 1533, it was alleged that the Mayor and Burgesses, "for their own singular lucre and advantage, had admitted many foreign men to be Burgesses to the intent to defraud us and our right of our toll there." The meaning of that is, that the tolls and customs which should have gone to the Crown were diverted into the exchequer of the borough. The burgesses, on admitting strangers to the freedom, could make their own bargain, the burgesses, under the charter of John, being free from tolls and customs. The repeal of the exclusive clause in the charter would secure the tolls and customs of the non-freemen to the Crown.

Provisions of  
Charter.

The charter of Philip and Mary is an "inspeximus" charter, and must have been the result of a writ of "Quo Warranto," since there could be no motive for an application from the burgesses, as it repeals their most cherished privilege. Be this as it may, the exclusive clause was never re-enacted; but it was acted upon, nevertheless, and



continued to be a source of strife and contention for two hundred years.

The charter is a fine specimen of caligraphy. The great seal is nearly perfect. The upper margin is highly ornamented. The initial "P" encloses portraits of Philip and Mary, seated side by side—the King holding a sword and orb, the Queen a sceptre and orb.

This terminates the documents preceding the journals and minute-book of the Corporation.



## CHAPTER SECOND.

FROM THE REIGN OF EDWARD VI. (1547) TO THE END  
OF THE REIGN OF ELIZABETH (1603).

1547.  
Members.

IN the year 1547, the borough resumed its privilege of sending representatives to Parliament, which had been in abeyance from 1306. The members so sent were Thomas Stanley, a cadet of the Knowsley family, and Francis Cave, brother of Sir Ambrose Cave, subsequently Chancellor of the Duchy.

1541.  
Records.

The Corporation records begin in the year 1541. The minutes then taken, are referred to in an account of an assembly of the burgesses in 1558, in the following terms:—

“Whereas at this Assembly Mr. Mayor presented an old book of Precedences which was escribed, extracted out of the elder Precedences of the town by Alex. Rughleye then Recorder here, as appeareth by the same, and these be the very words of preface of the same:—

“Liv’p<sup>l</sup>.”

Precedences.

“These p’sidence was corrected and drawn out of div’s old p’sidence in the xxxij<sup>th</sup> yeare of the raigne of Kynge Henry th’ eyght, Thos. Houghton then Mayor, Rauff Baylyff and Rauff Sekerston Balyffs.

“*In p̄mis.* It is ordered and decreed by the great Inquest of the said Town, that Mr. Mayor for the time being shall prosecute all things hereafter presented, to the best of his power and according to his oath.”

Then follow a number of regulations, of which a few may be noticed.

Mayor’s  
duties.

The Mayor was yearly to associate with himself twelve of the most honest men of the town, who shall view the Church lands and tenements, to see that there be no waste nor decay.

Mr. Mayor shall take his brethren and all the burgesses with him every seven years, or oftener if need require, to walk and make perambulation about the franchises of the town, to the intent every burgess may well know the circuit thereof.

The Priest of the Altar of St. John shall daily say mass between the hours of 5 and 6 in the morning, to the intent that all labourers and well-disposed people may come to hear mass at the said hour.

In bringing under review this long series of Municipal Records. records, it will probably be the most convenient course to group together the documents relating to kindred subjects within the periods successively referred to. In this way the tone of thought, and the mode of dealing with the various interests of the borough, will be best illustrated. We will commence with matters relating to the

## MUNICIPAL GOVERNMENT.

In 1551, the following document appears:—

1551.

“ Thomas More Mayor

“ Assembly day observed Friday in Whitsun week.”

“ *Item* ;— and for so much, as all earthly things have their natural mutations, alterations and changes; It is now this present Assembly day, by and with the consent of the whole assembly agreed, ordered, and decreed, that for this present year until the next election, there shall be 16 persons whose names be hereafter expressed, to take them a day to sit upon, hear, and understand all things to them presented, and for want of present (*sic*) to be by them inquired of, all accompts, payments, and all other thing and things whatsoever, it or they be in any wise alleged for the common weal of this town, and after all the premisses heard and understood to determine and decree such order and orders as they shall think upon their wisdoms and discretions most convenient and necessary, for the common weal of this town, and all that and those decrees and orders, to be effectual and of full strength and virtue, without any contradiction or denial and delay in

Appointment  
of Council.

any wise, &c. And these be the names of the aforesaid 16 persons, that is to say for every street four.

|          |              |                     |                  |
|----------|--------------|---------------------|------------------|
| Streets. | " Water St.  | { Alexander Garnett | Wm. Roose        |
|          |              | { Thomas Bostwell   | Peter Gregory    |
|          | " Dale St.   | { Thos. Secom       | Rd. Marser       |
|          |              | { Thos. Mylnes      | Jno. Maynwaring  |
|          | " Jugler St. | { Rauf Barlowe      | Robt. Mosse      |
|          |              | { Jno. Wynstanley   | Robt. Blackburne |
|          | " Castle St. | { William Secom     | Thos. Inglefeld  |
|          |              | { Thos. Roose       | Reynald Mellyng" |

In reading this document, it might be inferred that only four streets existed in the town at this date; but this was not the case, as Tithebarn Street (then called More Street) is mentioned in deeds of 1304, and Chapel Street in 1370. Why these are omitted here does not appear. It is further shown by this minute that no permanent Council as yet existed. The "Assembly" consisted of the whole body of the burgesses under the charter, and of the freemen, who appointed a temporary committee on any emergency.

1553. "Item—the 15<sup>th</sup> day of December the fyrst yere of the Raigne of our Souvraigne ladie, Marie, by the grace of God Queene of England, France and Ireland; Robert Blundell of Ince Blundell, gentylman, came afore Roger Walker, then being Mayor, Rich<sup>d</sup>. Molyneux, Kn<sup>t</sup>, John More, Esquier, Thos. More Gentylman and other brethren on the benche, with the holle Commons assembled in the Comyn Hall the daye and yere above written, and tooke the oathe of a Burgesse to doe all thynges according to the vertue of the burgesses oathe in this booke registered, and also the laudable uses and customs of the sayd towne and not juratory."

1555. Aug. 12th, 1555. At an Assembly, Sir Wm. Norris, Mayor:—

"It is adjudged by this said whole assembly that all the rest of the free burgesses absent this day, whose names be estreated and given to the Bailiffs in charge, shall pay 12<sup>d</sup>. a piece, and further it is by this said assembly adjudged and established that ever hereafter whosoever he or they be that maketh default and giveth not their due attendance upon Master Mayor and keepeth not their Assembly days being lawfully summoned and warned thereof, shall lose and forfeit the whole fine, which is of old custom, and now new established 6<sup>s</sup>. 8<sup>d</sup>. which shall be levied without delay or mercy."

This resolution was re-enacted in 1558.

In 1558, we find the following:—

1558.

“It is ordered and fully agreed by the Mayor and his brethren with a full consent of the whole Assembly of the town, there shall be no Mayor, bailiff nor any other officer, elected, named or chosen, but only such as be resident inhabitants, and dwelling within the town and franchises thereof.”

It would appear at first sight that this order was not strictly acted upon, as we find in the list of mayors before and after this date the names of the neighbouring gentry, such as the Stanleys of Knowsley, the Molyneuxs of Sefton, the Norrises of Speke, the Fazakerlys of Fazakerly; but it was a custom, continued long after this period, for the county families to have residences in the town, to which they resorted in the winter season. Officers.  
Gentry.

In 1558, it was agreed by the Mayor and his brethren, with the full consent of the whole Assembly, that the selection of twelve members to act as a Committee or Council, then enacted as a temporary measure, should become a permanent institution, the members to be elected every year. This was the inception of the Council, which, in some form or other, has continued ever since. 1558.  
Council.

The same year there is an order—

“That all Burgesses and inhabitants of the town and their servants, shall be ready and wait upon the Mayor at all fairs, and at the feast of St. John Baptist and St. Peter the Apostle in their best array, and best weapons, and the Mayor's Peers in their gowns on pain of 2<sup>s</sup>. N B These and other enactments are all made by the Mayor and his brethren with a full consent of the whole assembly of the town, called the great inquest.” Attendance in  
arms.

1560. At an Assembly held on January 13th, the number of the Committee or Council was extended to twenty-four.

“—item It is found and agreed that every Mayor and Mayors peer shall have and keep four honest and seemly, bills, poll-axes or like weapons, and every bailiff or bailiffs peer two bills, honest and able, and every burgess within the town one sufficient able bill, poll-axe or other like weapon; the same to be provided and had ready before the fair day next on pain of 3<sup>s</sup>. 4<sup>d</sup>.” Weapons.



Fracas.

1560. A fracas took place at this time between two civic dignitaries. During the mayoralty of Alexander Garnett, 1559-60, a man named Henry Clarke was charged with felony, and committed to Lancaster for trial; but the Mayor refused to sign the warrant. When Ralph Sekerston, his successor, took the chair in October, 1560, he took immediate action, and obtained a warrant against his predecessor for neglect of duty, he being, in the words of the record—

“bound by obligation to follow the suit, and in the mean time the said felon stole away; and Mr Mayor and the Bailiffs distrained on Mr Garnett, and took forth of his shop a piece of kersey.”

1560.

From 1560, to nearly the end of the reign of Elizabeth, the records are very copious. The scribe appears to have been of a literary turn, and amplifies and extends his narrative in a very magniloquent style:—

Naval prize.

1562. “This year war was proclaimed in France and nowhere else, and Sir Thos Stanley, Knt, Lieutenant in the Isle of Man and certain men of Chester that were victuallers, set forth a ship of war, Hugh Mersey, Captain, who at this time coming into Liverpool haven, brought in a prize about the 21st day of September. The Earl, my old Lord of Derby, father to the said Sir Thomas, being at their game and pleasure hunting, the ship shot off a noble peal of guns thick one upon another, the like never heard in these parts of England and Wales.”

Bucks  
presented.

1562. “This year my Lord (Derby) gave the town a buck, a pure good one, and merrily disposed of, and eaten in the Common Hall; many of the town absent, the others had more plenty. Also Sir Rd Molyneux gave the town a buck, which proved but mean, and that was divided betwixt the Mayor, the Aldermen, his brethren and the Bailiffs, whereat many of the commoners loued and something murmured.”

### 1563. Robert Corbett, Mayor.

Customer's  
default.

“In the beginning of this Mr Mayors time, accompt was called for of Robt Mosse, being Customer,<sup>1</sup> in which accompt he was found behind, and due to the town almost xxx lb and he vexed and troubled himself with such lamentations, that the town did ease and bear with him much, and would have done better with him but that he would never confess or acknowledge him in default, which was too much against his honesty; and because it seemed to all men he was not able to discharge all things, the town pardoned him of all but xx

<sup>1</sup> Collector of the town's dues or customs.

nobles, for which he had days of payment, and his son-in-law, Rd Compromise. Harrison the tanner, lent him certain hides and calve skins barked, to make the payment withal, and this done, the said Robert being sick but viii days, died."

1565. "It is agreed by the whole and full consent of the Assembly, Merry that Mr Mayor, his brethren and commonalty of co-burgesses shall keep Monday. their day Monday next before Fasten's eve or Shrovetide called Merry Monday, to walk round about the liberties of the town."

"This year upon Merry Monday it was such unreasonable weather, frost and snow, that no walk or perambulation was at all, neither of all this year, but clean forgotten."

1565. Jan. 28th. The marriage of the daughter of the Mayor, Alexander Garnett, is recorded. Immediately afterwards—

"This year Sunday after the twelfth day, the said Mayor impri- Younkers soned 20 younkers, whereof Mr Mayor called James Atherby then imprisoned. being Waite Captain, and discharged him from his office; and then he imprisoned George Ashton for reasoning and speaking for the releasing of the said Wait, and the younkers; and Master Mayor would not suffer George Ashton to be bailed or mainprised . . . . Then Mr John Crosse moved Mr Mayor to take bail for the said George, but it could not be; whereat Mr. Crosse chafed and fumed inwardly; so the younkers were kept all night, and Mr Mayor railed still and said he would have them before the Queen's Council, but he was afterwards pacified other ways."

1565. Octr. 22nd, was apprehended one Thomas John- Punishment son, for picking of purses. He does not appear to have for purse-picking. had any regular trial, but was summarily dealt with as follows:—He was imprisoned several days and nights; then nailed by the ear to a post at the flesh shambles; then turned out naked from the middle upwards, when many boys of the town, with withy rods, whipped him out of the town. He was also locked to a clog, with an iron chain and horse-block, till Friday morning next after; and then, before the Mayor and bailiffs, abjured the town, and made restitution of 6s. 8d. to Henry Myln's wife.

1566. Jany. 24th. Jno. Crosse, Mayor. Peter Gregory Ferry boats. and Ralph Oliver covenant to have a sufficient ferry-boat to serve the passage of the river, and to give sureties therefor.

The ferry across the river, from Liverpool to Cheshire, was in the control of the Corporation; the passage from Cheshire to Liverpool was in the hands of the Lord of the Manor of Birkenhead.

A subsequent entry runs as follows:—

“Peter Gregory and Ralph Oliver were required to provide sureties for the good governing and reparation of the ferry boat, as it had been neglected.”

The matter was referred to arbitration.

Free school.

1566. The Queen having made a grant towards the endowment of the Free School, the assembly of the burgesses resolved to supplement it by a voluntary assessment on the inhabitants.

Assessments.

A list of the assessments is given, which is curious as presenting a list of all the householders then resident. These were:—

|                     |       |
|---------------------|-------|
| In Dale Street..... | 72    |
| Water Street .....  | 13    |
| Castle Street.....  | 23    |
| Jugler Street.....  | 15    |
| Chapel Street.....  | 7     |
| Mylne Street.....   | 8     |
| More Street.....    | 13    |
|                     | <hr/> |
|                     | 151   |

The total assessment was £5 13s. 4d., equivalent to the Queen's grant. Thereupon, in February, 1566, John Ore, Bachelor of Arts, was hired at London by Mr. Ralph Sekerston, and others, to be schoolmaster. He appeared before the Assembly on February 20th, and—

“was admitted to enter and teach upon the proof and good liking, and to have for the year, sick and whole ten pounds to be paid quarterly.”

Litigation  
with Chester.

1565. This year was the commencement of a long course of litigation with the City of Chester, which had always been jealous of the Port of Liverpool, claiming it as

a mere creek within its ancient jurisdiction. At Easter, 1565, an attempt was made to enforce this supremacy. Owing doubtless to influence at head-quarters, a communication was made from the Lord High Treasurer to the Customs authorities in Liverpool, of which the following notice appears in the Corporation records:—

THE PORT OF CHESTER.

“A blank book containing ten leaves for the customers, comptrollers, and searchers, within the town of Liverpoole, a creek of this port, for all goods coming or going out of the same by way of merchandizes, from Easter 1565 until the feast of St. Michael then following, so ending without any more words, sentences or addition.”

The whole “Comburgesses and Commonalty” took the alarm. The Mayor, Robert Corbett, went up to London, and was assisted in his representations by Sekerston, then member for the borough. They showed—

Disputes with  
Chester.

“That if it should come to pass to call Liverpoole the creek to Chester, it were not only a punishing of Liverpoole and its inhabitants, but also the matter against the jurisdiction and regal authority of the County Palatine of the Duchy of Lancaster; further declaring and shewing that Liverpoole hath ever heretofore been reputed and taken for the best port and harbour from Mylforthe to Scotland, and so hath always been proved, with all manner of ships and barks, owners, masters and mariners.”

The matter was argued before the Chancellor of the Duchy, and by him referred to the Court of Exchequer. A commission of inquiry was sent down, consisting of the Earl of Derby, Sir Richard Molyneux, Sir William Norris, and others. They required a return of—

Reference.

“all ships and owners of any ships, vessels, or boats, as well in this the Queen’s Majesty’s Borough corporate and Port town of Liverpoole as also in any town, haven, creek, or landing place between Warrington and the water next Preston called Ribble,” with other information.

This return is inserted, and states the number of householders and cottagers in Liverpool on the 12th November, 1565, to be 138. The number of vessels belonging to the

Returns.



port was 12—the largest 40 tons, with twelve men; the smallest a boat of 6 tons, with three men. Three craft hailed from Wallasey, of 24, 14, and 8 tons respectively.

Disputes with  
Chester.

In 1578, the Chester authorities again claimed jurisdiction over the river and port, whereon, at a full assembly, 3rd November, Ralph Burscough, deputy for Sir Thomas Hesketh, Mayor, the following entry occurs:—

Action.

“In which convocation it was inquired by Mr<sup>r</sup> Deputie aforesaid, what was best to be done to prevent the evil pretence made by Wm Glasgow Esq. and the citizens of Chester, who go about to infringe our liberties, and wolde have from the towne the halfe of our ryver, contrarie to all right and equitie, whereunto Maister Thomas More, having good experience, made answer, that so farre as the ryver of Mersye extended, Chester men had nothing to deale concerning anie title of freedom or libertie. And so upon further intelligence of their proceedinge in the premisses, it was thought by the whole assent aforesaid, that the matter shall rest 'till the advice, pleasure and good counsell of the Right honourable Earl of Derby, Mr Maior and the right worshipfull recorder, Edw<sup>d</sup> Halsall Esq were had and known; and in the mean tyme it was then concluded . . . That the water bailiffs do goe unto all owners and masters of barks, boats and other vessells then being in the ryver . . . to give open monition and warninge, that they should acknowledge and doe their duties as appointed, or else cause them to come before Mr Maior,—or else to take said vessells and make prize of the said vessell and goods without anie further delaye.”

1578.  
Merchant  
Fellowship.

The circumstances which led to this inquiry were the following. On the 8th of June, 1578, the Queen, by letters patent, had incorporated a trading company, styling themselves “The President, Assistants, and Fellowship of Merchants of Spain and Portugal.” These were the days of monopolies, which afterwards grew to such an intolerable height as to force Queen Elizabeth to apologise and to withdraw them.

Chester.

The Company thus established entered into arrangements with the City of Chester to join with them in their undertaking. It must be remembered that in population and wealth, Chester at this time was far superior



to Liverpool. This arrangement was communicated to Liverpool in the following letter from the President:—

“To oure Lovinge friends Mr Rob<sup>t</sup> Corbett, Ralph Burscoughe and <sup>Letter.</sup> the rest of the merchants of Lyverpoole tradying to Spain and Portingale before the first of Januarie 1580.

“After our hartie comendacons &c. Whereas it hathe pleased the quene's ma<sup>tie</sup> with the advice of her honourable privie counsell . . . to incorporate us &c to the intente wee myghte thereby uniformlie and politiquelie take suche good order amonge ourselves as well for the mainteyning of traffique and traide, whereby the navigacon may be the better mainteyned, the comodity of our countrie kept in estimation and the forren comodities solde here at reasonable prices, as also for the better savetie of her people, whoe in their p'sones and goods have receyved greate wrongs and injuries as well by exactions and newe ymposicons offered and ymposed upon us there by violent takynge from manie of her subjects money and jewells upon surmises knowinge that the p'ties injured cannot neglect their business to followe the Lawe for their recoverie, . . . even soe it is verie expedient, and oure bounden dutie that wee shoulde endevo<sup>r</sup> ourselves to the performance of that which is looked for. And to that end we addressed o<sup>r</sup> letters to the Citie of West Chester, requiringe theym not onlie to take notice of hir Ma<sup>ties</sup> good pleasure, but also to appointe certen of their citie to confer with us, in reformacon of things needfull, whoe satisfied oure requeste and had noe les care for you then of theymselves; and for your ease and better direction wee have thoughte good for better governmente to joyne yo<sup>rs</sup> with Chester as a member thereof. And by these presents doe require you to make yo<sup>r</sup> speedie repaire thither and confer w<sup>th</sup> the deputie and assistaunt there in observinge suche acts and ordinances as may tend to yo<sup>r</sup> best savetie and moste comoditie, as also to take knowledge of the contents of hir Ma<sup>ties</sup> l<sup>r</sup>es pattent and of o<sup>r</sup> proceedings here, w<sup>ch</sup> if you mistake or refuse, then wee shall be forced to call you uppe hither. Your lykinge or dislykinge wee require to be satisfied of, that wee may orderlie p'cede with consent. And thus trustinge to finde suche conformitie in you as is expected, we rest and soe committe you to God.

“London the xxv<sup>th</sup> Aug<sup>t</sup> 1578

“Your Lovinge ffriende the President  
and Assistants of the Companie of  
Merchants of Spayne and Portingale

“JOHN MERSHE President.”

A respite was given up to the 1st January, 1580. 1580.  
That time having expired, and no notice being taken by

the Liverpool Corporation, on the 13th April the following communication was sent by the Chester authorities:—

Letter from  
Chester.

“To oure Lovinge friends Mr Anthony More, Mr Jas Chambers and Mr John Byrde merchants or to any one of theym in Lyverpoole.

“After o<sup>r</sup> hartie comendacons these are to adv'tise you that of late wee have receaved l'tres from the p'sident of the companie and society of m'chants tradinge Spaine and Portingall whereby wee are appointed to demande of you and others occupyng to the said p'ties and not admitted into the said ffellowshipp, suche penalties as are set down for suche offenders and intruders occupyng thither since the xxix<sup>th</sup> of Januarie 1577, which is 25 <sup>℥</sup> cent upon the returne of ev're shippe or barque, warranted by hir Mas<sup>rs</sup> l'res patent. Wherefore wee have thought good at this p'nte to addresse these our l'res unto you by this bearer, Will<sup>m</sup>. Helen, the clerke of our societie here in Chester, to demande and receive the same of you, or els that you will repaire hither upon Mondaye next beinge the xxviii<sup>th</sup> of this p'nte Aprill, to shewe cause then at our courte here holden, or any sufficient warrante from the said p'sident to the contrarie, and it shall be allowed. Otherwise wee must certifie youre denyal, the w<sup>ch</sup> will turne to yo<sup>r</sup> further troubles and chardge, for wee have bene alwaies most willinge to have you to conforme yo'selves to hir Ma<sup>ties</sup> graunte and joyned yo'selves w<sup>th</sup> us at the beginninge, whereby you myght have avoided the daunger and greate chardge that is lyke thereupon to growe. Willing you also to publishe these our l'res to the rest of such of yo<sup>r</sup> towne, as trade into those p'tes, and to send yo<sup>r</sup> answer by letter w<sup>th</sup> this bearer what you mynde to doe in the p'misses. Fare you hartelie well. Chester this xiiij<sup>th</sup> of Aprill, anno 1580.

“Yo<sup>r</sup> lovinge frends

“WM MASSYE Deputie.

“EDW<sup>d</sup> HAMER

“RANDELL LECHE

“THO<sup>s</sup> TETLOWE

“WM ALDERSEY

“WM BROWNE

} Assistants.”

A reply was sent, stating that the Mayor was absent, and the subject must stand over until his return.

1580. Chester was not willing to wait, and on the 2nd May, 1580, the following despatch was forwarded to Liverpool:—

Further letter  
from Chester.

“To our Lovinge ffrendes Mr Anthony More (and others).

“Commendacons p'mised. Whereas wee hoped upon our last l're that you wolde either have repaired hither or answered the penalties

demanded by us accordinge to the direction of our p'sident, and conformed yo'selves to her Ma<sup>ties</sup> graunt, whereunto you have bene oftentimes gentlie moved, ffirst by the late p'sident Mr Marshe his letter, and lately by oure letter, whereunto it seemed you had small regard p'tendinge excuse by your maior his absence, to whome these causes nothinge app'teyne, beinge not anie m'chaunte tradinge Spayne and Portingale, whoe only are touched in this behalf; since which oure said letters sente, wee have receaved other letters from the p'sident touching you, and others of our Citie that are intruders, w<sup>ch</sup> l're from hym to youe hereinclosed wee have sent, whoe wissheth you should eftesoones be curteouslie admonished by us to desist from violatinge her Ma<sup>ties</sup> graunte and aunswer the penalties thereupon due, otherwise a pursuevaunte will be sente to yo' greater chardge. For our p'tes if youe be of that mynde (as our clerke enformed us you are) to be a companie of yo'selves wee shall most gladlie yelde thereunto, as also wryte our l'res with yo<sup>s</sup> in that behalf, if they may pleasure you in anie waye. In the meane tyme wee are to demaunde of you the penalties sett downe by acte beinge 25  $\text{p}$  cent of all suche goods as youe have shipped out of Spayne and Portingale since the 29<sup>th</sup> of Januarie 1577, to whiche ende wee have sente this bearer, willinge you eyther to paye it or a directe answer by l're what you mynde to doe touchinge the p'misses, that we may rectifie theym otherwise wee must adv'tize of yo' contemptuouse dealinge. Soe fare ye well.

"Chester the seconde of Maye A<sup>o</sup> 1580.

"WILLM MASSYE, Deput "  
(and 4 others).

It was time now for the Liverpool Corporation to move. The odds were greatly against them. Chester was an ancient, comparatively populous and wealthy city, backed by the powerful association of merchant adventurers, to whom the Queen had recently granted letters patent, creating virtually a monopoly. The population of Liverpool could not at this time have amounted to a thousand souls, carrying on a very limited trade. What is to be admired in the history of Liverpool, is the indomitable courage and pluck with which its Corporation have always been ready to defend and maintain their rights and privileges, and occasionally even to go beyond mere defence.

Action of  
Liverpool.

1580.

In the present instance they were quite equal to the occasion. An Assembly of the burgesses was held in the Common Hall, of the proceedings at which the following is a summary:—

Reply.

“Concerning the Queen’s Majesty’s Letters patent touching the Society of Merchants, that is to say, Whereas one William Massye of Chester Merchant, and others his associates there alledging her Majesty’s grant of Charter incorporating them and others by the title of President and Fellowship of Merchants, trading Hispanie and Portingale, by virtue whereof they have—as they alledge—not only authority to assess such penalties as they shall think good upon all those who attempt any traffic unto the said parts of Hispanie and Portingale, but also to prohibit their further trade thither, which if it should take place, were sure to be the utter subversion of this poor town; have lately summoned by their letters the inhabitants of this town, wherein is craved a direct answer with expedition; whereof Mr Robt More at the request of Mr Mayor and his brethren, together with the consent of the Common Council there in the Common Hall assembled is willing to bestow his travail to Chester to answer the same in person.

“And in consideration that it is a matter that toucheth the whole town, wherein if they should prevail against, the same would be an utter overthrow of the traffic of merchandize whereupon the state and commodity of the whole town dependeth. It is therefore thought good by the said Mayor Aldermen and Common Council that one or more which shall be thought most fit shall be selected to solicit the cause in the town’s behalf for redress, to be obtained in the premisses, either by way of petition unto her Majesty or otherwise as hereafter shall be better considered of, at the common cost and expense of this said town, and for the better supportation and furthering thereof, that a ley or taxation shall be forthwith laid and collected throughout the town for that purpose to the sum of £10.”

The threat of hostile proceedings held out in the last communication from Chester was acted upon, as appears from a record of August 20th, 1581:—

1581.

Opposition of  
Liverpool.

“In this assembly it was spoken of the former attempt given by those of London and Chester terming themselves President and Fellowship of Merchants trading Spayne and Portingale, and now lately revived in the apprehension of Mr Anthony More, John Byrde and Peter Starkey, taken by pursevant, and thereupon entered in bonds for their appearance at Chester and to London to answer such matters as touching the premises shall be objected against them. Whereupon it is considered by the whole consent that a sum of money to the value of xx<sup>ii</sup> shall be taxed and levied toward the supportation of such costs and expense as shall happen to grow or arise in and



about the travail of the foresaid persons apprehended in defence of our liberties. And also that upon their return from London, the inhabitants will be further contributors as just occasion shall serve. . . . Provided always that the said persons apprehended shall not in anywise condescend nor agree to anything concerning the premises which shall be prejudicial to the town or liberties thereof, and to yield their account thereof as they shall be thereunto reasonably required." 1581.

Their first move was to secure the powerful aid of the Lord of Knowsley, whose family for ages took a warm interest in Liverpool affairs.

It was agreed—

Deputation to  
Knowsley.

"For better proceeding in the premises that Mr Mayor accompanied by Messrs Halsall, More and Crosse, and others of the Aldermen should repair to Knowsley, to have an interview with the Earl of Derby, and afterwards to Astley to interview the Master of the Rolls."

An entry follows, that on the 21st August an assess- Assessment  
ment for the expenses was made on the inhabitants, in which appears—

"Mr Rob<sup>t</sup> More Mayor xiii<sup>s</sup> iv<sup>d</sup>

"John Byrde Merchant x<sup>s</sup> and 206 more names."

On the 18th October, 1581, there was a convocation in the Common Hall on the subject.

"After evening prayer before the Mayor, Common Council and the Commons, touching the nomination of such persons as should be thought most fit for the prosecuting of the business touching Spayne and Portingale, whereunto Mr Rob<sup>t</sup> More late Mayor was elected along with Henry Dam to go to London upon the common costs and charges of the town. The officers for the year by past were ordered to have their accounts ready to the intent that if money could by that means be found, to furnish them without charging the Commons with any further taxation towards the same."

"On the 23<sup>d</sup> Octr 1581, Mr. Anthony More made his account concerning the xx<sup>li</sup> formerly voted, whereof it appeared there was no more by him received but xv<sup>li</sup> xii<sup>s</sup> iv<sup>d</sup>, the residue not being collected, and ten pounds thereof being to him and Jo. Byrde allowed in consideration of their charges to London upon the affair aforesaid. The said Anthony More made present payment of the sum of v<sup>li</sup> xii<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> *et sic dat ind<sup>e</sup> quietem.*" Account of Expenses.

On the 18th December, 1581, at an Assembly in the



1581. Common Hall, letters were read from Mr. Alderman More in London.

Action of  
Privy Council.

It appeared that, through the intercession of Lord Derby, the dispute with Chester had been taken up by the Privy Council, and by them referred to the Lord Chief Justice and the Master of the Rolls. The result will be seen in the following letters.

Secretary  
Walsingham.

The first is from Secretary Walsingham to the Earl of Derby:—

“My very good Lord

“Whereas the cause of the town of Liverpoole against the New Corporation of the Spanish and Portingall merchants long since recommended by your Lordship hither hath been by my Lord referred to the consideration of the Lord Chief Justice of England and the Master of the Rolls, whose resolution in the same your Lordship may see by the copy of their letter enclosed. I have myself since the writing of the enclosed, dealt between the President of the Spanish Company and this bearer Robert More who is for Liverpoole: and the said President in hope to induce his Company to like thereof hath assented to this, that in respect of the great number of retailers in that town, and the smallest number or none at all that are mere merchants, the said retailers be suffered to continue their trade of shipping and adventuring to foreign parts, until the wealth of that town may grow to be such as may yield a sufficient number of adventurers to occupy navigation as mere merchants only; or that my Lords shall please to take other order. And where it is doubted by the Spanish merchants that Lyverpoole men under this toleration will collect the retailers goods of Chester and other places; to remove this scruple this bearer hath condescended that if any of Liverpoole so do, such person upon due proof of the fault shall ever afterwards be debarred of the benefits of this toleration. Thus much I thought meet to be signified to your Lordship as the chief person in those parts, and patron of that poor town, to the end that by your assistance if need be thereof, this agreement may take better effect.

“And so I humbly commend your Lordship to God From the Court the 4th December 1581.”

The joint letter from the Lord Chief Justice and the Master of the Rolls runs as follows, addressed to the Lord President of the Council:—

Lord Chief  
Justice and  
Master of the  
Rolls.

“May it please your good Lordship to be advertised that we, according to your Lordship's letters to us directed, have called before us as well Mr Wilford, President of the Company of Merchants trading Spain and Portingall, and some other of that Company, as also

some of the merchants of Chester and Liverpoole, and have seen their charters, and heard their allegations upon either side, and thereupon it doth appear unto us, that in the time of Queen Mary, there was a Company of Merchants Venturers of the said City of Chester made and incorporated by the said late Queen, whereby they are authorized to use their trade of merchandizes into the parts beyond the seas, as Merchant Venturers, and to make laws and ordinances for the better government of their Company; And sithence that time the Queens Majesty that now is, hath by her Highness's letters patent made another Corporation of the Company of Merchant Venturers trading Spaine and Portingall whereby they be also incorporated, and have authority to make certain laws, ordinances and rules for the better government of that Company, and by colour thereof those merchants do now challenge to make orders and rules to bind the said Company of Merchant Venturers of the said City of Chester, and amongst other things have ordained that no retailer should be suffered to be of their Company, or use that trade of Merchant Venturers, and hereby would put all that use retailing of wares in Chester and other places from their traffic as Merchant Venturers, which in our opinion is more than they may do by virtue of their said charter. And it seemeth unto us that if retailers of such poor cities and towns where small trade of merchandizes is used, should be put from their trade of shipping, it would be a great decay to the same poor cities and towns; all which we refer to your Honor's better considerations, and so humbly take our leave.

"The first of December 1581.

"Yo<sup>r</sup>. Lordships to consider

"CHRISTOPHER WRAYE

"G. GERARDE."

By this decision, the traders of Liverpool were emancipated from the control of the Spanish Company, acting through the Chester authorities, but not in a very dignified way. The pretext alleged by the Judges was, that retailers did not come within the purview of the charter; and as the traders in Liverpool were retailers, and not merchants, and as the town was very poor, they were exempt. One cannot help surmising that the influence of Lord Derby had something to do with the decision.

Be this as it may, the honest burgesses of Liverpool were very proud of their triumph, and manifested it in a way which would now be considered a sad breach of judicial etiquette.

1582.  
Present to  
Master of the  
Rolls.

"On the 27th April 1582 at an Assembly in the Common Hall, a motion was made by Mr. Mayor to his said brethren and burgesses concerning a Hogshead of wine to be bestowed and presented at their cost, upon the right worshipful the Master of the Rolls, as a simple token of the towns good will towards his worship, at whose hands the town hath received much goodness and great courtesy in matters touching the affairs and commodity thereof, which hogshead of wine it was agreed should be with all convenient expedition provided and sent to his Worship's house, towards which Mr Mayor proffered x<sup>s</sup> Mr William More x<sup>s</sup> Mr Wm Secum 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup>" &c., &c.

And thus ends a very interesting episode in the annals of the port.

Decay.

Probably at the time of the commencement of these disputes the town had sunk to its lowest point of depression. The burgages were originally 168 in number. It may be supposed that other houses had been erected from time to time, but from the return to an assessment made in 1566, the number of householders had fallen to 151.

Revenues.

The Queen's Customs, and other revenues from the town, were farmed by the Molyneux family, who no doubt exacted all they could. There were new duties of tonnage and poundage granted by Parliament, and levied in addition to the ancient dues, and the claims of Chester to supremacy still further added to their difficulties. Under these circumstances, besides their application to Lord Derby for his intercession, the burgesses, through their member, Ralph Sekerston, presented a petition to the Queen, setting forth in doleful phrase the miserable state of their affairs, and praying for aid. The document runs as follows:—

1566.  
Petition.

Anno 1566, 31st March. "To the Queens most excellent majesty. Your poor subject Ralph Sekerston of your grace's decayed town of Liverpool, in the county of Lancaster, most humbly desireth your highness to have respect in what estate your said town is in, for all liberties and franchises given to us by any of your majesty's progenitors, is from us your poor tenants clearly taken away. My petition is to your grace, that you may have the governance still

over us, and your grace shall have our charter under the broad seal given to your majesty, and then of your merciful goodness to grant us what shall please your grace; and also that we may from henceforth continue under your grace's said governance, and we will obey and truly serve your majesty under God; for to us there is no other help but by your majesty; only your highness hath as full power to help us, your said subjects, in these days, as any others your grace's progenitors have had in times past, and as our bounden duty is, we shall pray for your majesty long to reign over us. 1566.

"Liverpool is your own town. Your majesty hath a castle and two chauntries clear, the fee farms of the town, the ferry boat, two windmills, the custom of the duchy, the new custom of the tonnage and poundage, which was never paid in Liverpool before your time, and the commodity thereof is your majesty's. For your own sake suffer us not utterly to be cast away in your grace's time, but relieve us like a mother."

### A rider is added—

"This supplication was devised by Master Ralph Sekerston, of Note. his own politic wit and wisdom, and fair written by a notary or clerk of the court, that cost him 8<sup>s</sup> the writing, as Master Sekerston declared and saith openly this 31st day of March this present year 1566, which supplication, verbatim agreeing therewith, he put into the queen's majesty's hand at the parliament this same year, he one of the burgesses of this town at and in the same parliament and in the parliament house."

What influence this petition had in gaining the favour of the Court does not appear, but the result was satisfactory to the town.

Poor as they were, the Corporation were able to exercise suitable hospitality when visited by persons of distinction.

The same year (1566) a visit was paid to the town by the Earl of Derby, accompanied by his two sons, Lord Strange and Sir Edward Stanley, Sir John Savage, Sir Piers Legh of Lyme, William Molyneux of Sefton, Grosvenor of Eaton, and other esquires and gentlemen. The Mayor, Master John Crosse, with the bailiffs and burgesses, met them at the Towns-end (now the end of Dale Street) and attended them to the Tower of Liverpool, where it is recorded— 1566. Visit of Lord Derby.



Banquet. "The said earl and his train rested, and had a couple of partridges, and to drink with of his lordships cost, and other things at his lordships; and there Mr. Mayor, his brethren with the bailiffs and common burgesses, did present him with a banquet of delicious delicates of two courses of service," &c.

1575. In 1575, the outgoing Mayor, Mr. John Mainwaring, was fined "for not perambulating the metes, bounds and liberties of the town," and for not carrying out the presentments of the Grand Jury.

1575. At this time, and long after, both herring and salmon were freely caught in the Mersey. Under this date there is entered a long string of fishing regulations as to stake nets, close days, &c.

1576. The town seems now to have recovered its cheerfulness. The loyalty of Liverpool has always been demonstrative, and we have under this date a record of a celebration of the anniversary of the accession of good Queen Bess, which illustrates her popularity:—

Bonfire. "This year, the 17th day of November 1576, and entering upon the 18th year of the reign of our most gracious sovereign lady Elizabeth, Mr Thos Bavand being mayor of this her Majesty's corporation and port town of Lirpole in the county of Lancaster, caused the same day in the evening a great bonfire to be made in the market place, near to the high cross of the same town, and another anenst his own door, giving warning that every householder should do the like throughout the town, which was done accordingly. And immediately after caused to call together his brethren the aldermen, and divers others of the burgesses of the same town, and so went altogether to the house of Mr Ralph Burscough (Mayor in 1583) alderman where they banqueted a certain time, which done, Mr Mayor departed to his own house accompanied of the said aldermen and others, a great number, upon whom he did bestow sack and other white wine and sugar liberally, standing all without the door, lauding and praising God for the most prosperous reign of our said most gracious sovereign lady the queen's most excellent majesty, whom God grant long over us to reign, with great tranquillity and victorious success over all her grace's enemies. And so, appointing his bailiff and other officers to see the fires quenched, he departed."

1577.  
Visit of Henry  
4th Earl of  
Derby.

1577. In the following year, during the mayoralty of the same Mr. Thos. Bavand, Henry, the fourth Earl of



Derby, came to Liverpool *en route* for the Isle of Man, 1577. and waited for a fair wind. The Corporation seem to have excelled themselves in their efforts to do him honour, and the scribe records the event with due magniloquence. The extract has been published before, but it is too good a *morçeau* to be omitted in a *resumé* like this. The earl arrived on the 15th April, and remained until the 28th, residing at his fortified mansion in Water Street. The record proceeds—

“On Monday the 22nd his honour came to the church or chapel to view and appoint out a fit place for the cloth of state, which was on the south side of the same church or chapel, richly hanged with costly ornament and cloth of gold. And Mr Thos Bavand being then Mayor of Lyrpole aforesaid, caused preparation to be made for a great triumph, to honour the said noble earl at the said most honourable feast, appointing Thos Englefield to be captain and leader of a great number of townsmen, burgesses of Lyrpole and others, whom he caused his bailiffs Roger Roose and Robert Ball to see furnished and trimly set forth as soldiers in warlike manner, to march and skirmish before the said right honourable earl, who did the same very orderly and right well at divers and sundry convenient times during the said most honourable feast. Review.

“The same said 22nd day of April aforesaid the said right honourable earl came to evening prayer at five of the clock in the afternoon, accompanied with Mr Mayor the aldermen, bailiffs and others aforesaid, going in due order, that is to say the said two bailiffs foremost, and then the bailiffs peers, then after them the aldermen, then certain of my lords gentlemen, then the serjeant bearing the mace before Mr Mayor, and then next after Mr Mayor, my lord's honour's usher, and then the said right honourable Earl in his robes of red purple, his train being borne up by Mr Leigh of Bagguley, and then came after a great number as well of his honour's gentlemen as yeomen, and so his honour coming to the church at that time, first of all he did mark himself unto God, and then turning himself did his duty in making obeisance to the place of estate, and before his honour did take his own place obeisance again to the said place of estate, and so sat down. And afterwards service being done, at his honour's going from church, there was the said Capt. Thos Englefield with his soldiers ready, and there skirmished very bravely and orderly; shooting of great store, not only of culliver shot, but also of great cast ordinance and chambers, being placed in the church yard according to Mr Mayor's appointment, besides shooting off from the ships riding in the river.” Prayers.  
Procession.

The next morning, Tuesday, St. George's day, the Second day. festivities were resumed, when—

Sermon. "His honour came to the church very gorgeously, and after went in solemn procession about the church yard, and so entered again into the church, and there offered a piece of gold, which was given to Sir James Seddon, Clerk, minister there. That being done, Mr Cadwell his honour's chaplain, made a godly and learned sermon upon the Psalm 50 v 7, '*Audi populus meus, et contestabor te Israel,*' &c. And at every time of my lord's departure from church there was great triumph as aforesaid; so that there was shot at the least 1200 culliver shot during the said most honourable feast. And the same evening at after supper, one Ralph Powell, gunner, being ready with squibs to make pastime, cast the said squibs abroad very trimly, whereat his honour took great pleasure."

Salutes.

### The record continues—

Pastimes. "There were many things done and pastimes made, over and beside the premises; which were all so orderly and trimly handled as was to the liking and great pleasure of the said right honourable earl, the like whereof was never seen or known to be done in the said town of Lirpole, for the which his honour did not only give unto Mr Mayor manifold thanks, but also constrained him to take his honour's liberality, sore against Mr Mayor's mind, to bestow upon the said company. All these things being finished in decent order, then on the Sunday next following, God sending his honour a prosperous wind and fair weather, his honour took shipping in the Edward, Mr Tarbock's ship, about four of the clock in the afternoon, being accompanied with the Michael of Lirpole, the Bee of the same, the Elizabeth of Alt, and the Good Luck of Douglas."

Departure.

It is not easy to reconcile this grandiose account with the pitiable condition of poverty and decay described in Sekerston's petition eleven years before; no doubt the worst was brought forward in the one case and the best in the other.

Ferry rights. 1579. The burgesses this year asserted a right to be carried across the Mersey gratis. It is entered on the records as—

"Agreed that not any freeman nor his family pay any ferry, but upon good will; and that the ferryman shall carry, or cause to be carried into the boat and out again all freemen and their families without contradiction."

This order is repeated at various dates subsequently.

1580.

1580. In this year a measure was adopted which had

an important influence on the municipality down to the period of the Municipal Reform Act. 1580.

The original charter of King John conferred certain privileges on those who should take burgage tenements under the Crown, but it made no provision for municipal government. The charter of Henry III. supplemented this by creating a Corporation (*gildam mercatoriam*) with an implied, though not expressed, power to elect corporate officers. The first officers were called *Bailiffs*, of whom the earliest notice occurs in the year 1309; the Mayor first appearing in 1356. The privileges in this charter were granted to the *burgesses* in common, who, as has been seen above, gradually merged into the *freemen*. The earlier portion of the records refer to the enactments and orders as made by the general assembly of the *burgesses*, and fines are repeatedly inflicted on those who did not attend.

In 1558, a resolution was passed, as noted above, that a Committee or Council of twelve members should be elected every year, but the assemblies continued to be held, at which the attendance of the *burgesses* was enforced. 1558. Common Council.

In 1559, the Committee or Council was increased to twenty-four members. The Common Halls, however, continued to be held. All the important business connected with the Chester litigation was determined by assemblies of the whole body of *burgesses*.

What particular circumstances led to the decisive step now taken we are not informed, but on January 13th, 1580— 1580.

"In an assembly holden in the Common Hall, it was upon good consideration and for the reformation of divers disorders agreed as follows,

"Forasmuch as upon due consideration of the ancient customs of this borough, it seems there are to be (amongst other things) a of Council. Appointment of Council.

Common Council within the same, of the Maior, Aldermen, and 24 others of the most discreet and substantial free burgesses inhabitants thereof, by whose decision or the greater number of them in their common assemblies, without the rest of the Commonaltie (like as in other Corp<sup>ns</sup> is most commonly used) all causes touching the Common Healthe and good government of this towne are from tyme to tyme to be ordered and disposed. Whereas this good usage, by usurpation of late disordered assemblies of the whole Commons (wherein through the varietie of opinions of the multitude seldom any good success hath ensued) is now so defaced, that in effect there remaineth not memory thereof at all, saving that 24 burgesses every yeare being empanelled and present at the next Portmote to be holden after the election of Maior to enquire of offences past, have further for some remembrance of the said former custome, taken upon them to prescribe rules and orders for the government of the said towne, which by reason that the Maior and Aldermen have not been parties thereunto, have been seldom kept and observed, wherefore the Maior for this present much misliking, hath desired a reformation. It is now therefore at the request of the said Mayor, and in hope of the advancement of the said towne, concluded, and further agreed by the whole assembly, and consent, as well of the Maior and Aldermen and of all the Commons at this present assembled;

Mixed  
Assemblies  
abolished.

“ That the said late mixed assemblies of the Commons shall be abolished, and that from henceforth the said ancient custome of Common Council shall be restored and inviolable kept and observed. And for that purpose the persons under named are now by the same appointed, chosen, and known from henceforth in lieu and place of the said Commons to joyne in the said office of Common Council touching the affairs of the said towne, with the Maior and aldermen of the same, who for that two of them were wanting are now reduced to their just number (which they are to be at the laste) by those in this assemblie of John Crosse Esquire and Rob<sup>t</sup> More gent. The names of all which said aldermen be likewise after written, and to the intent that this order may have continuance, it is further concluded and agreed by the consent aforesaid, that if any of the said Counsell shall happen to avoyde by death or otherwise, that then the rest of the said Counsell which shall remain or the greater number of them shall in the next Common Assemblie after such avoidance had, elect and chuse another to supply that default. And so often as anie further want shall happen to be other from tyme to tyme, to be chosen then in place, so that the Common Counsell be not decayed in number in anie wyse. All and everie such person so to be chosen, to be sworne upon the oath hereafter following, and now administered to everie of the said Common Counsell.”

Council  
elected.

The Council so elected were as follows:—

*Aldermen.*

Edward Halsall Mayor  
The Right Hon. Henry }  
Earl of Derby }

*Councillors.*

Thos Bastwell  
Antony More  
Jas Chambers



*Aldermen.*

Sir Thos Hesketh Knt  
 Wm More Esq  
 John Crosse Esq  
 Thos More  
 Thos Secum  
 Wm Secum  
 Rauffe Burscough  
 Thos Bavand  
 John Mainwaringe  
 Robt More

*Councillors.*

Robt Mytton  
 Wm. Colbrand  
 Peter Starkye  
 Jno Bryddon  
 Thos Wm Martindale  
 Thos Maynall  
 Robt Baule  
 Edward Nicholson  
 Jno Wilkinson  
 Thos Mason  
 Roger Moss  
 Jno Sparke  
 Thos Postlethwaite  
 Thos Banaster  
 Alan Soyner  
 Humphrey Colquitt  
 Jno Lyrtinge  
 Rd Gildart  
 Jno Wright  
 Jno Stanley  
 Thos Bolton

1580. The difficulty of dealing with the vagrants and destitute poor was severely felt prior to the introduction of the Poor Law (43rd Elizabeth). An Act "for setting of the poor on work" had recently been passed, under which money had been raised and expended under the superintendence of the aldermen for that purpose. It was found, however, that a grievance existed at that time, which has in every age been a fruitful cause of misery. It is recorded that—

"The exceeding number of ale houses and tippling houses within this towne is thought to be not only a great nourishment of idleness, but also a great occasion of many other disorders and inconveniences. It is therefore ordered by the said Mayor with the whole consent of the Common Council that no person or persons whatsoever other than such as be after named, after the feast of the Annunciation of the blessed Virgin Mary next ensuinge (Mar. 25th) shall be admitted or suffered to keep anie common ale house and tippling house unless he or they shall be admitted and allowed by the said Mayor of this towne or his deputie for the time being; and that all persons so admitted shall be bound in recognizances with sufficient sureties against the playing of unlawful games and for the keeping of good order."

1580.  
 Vagrants.

Ale houses.



Port Moot  
Presentments.

1580. Some of the presentments at the Port Moot of this date are rather curious.

Mr. Edward Halsall, late Mayor, is presented for not perambulating the liberties the last year of his mayoralty.

The Ferryman, for taking ferry from divers freemen contrary to the order set down in that behalf.

William Pemberton, for keeping evil disposed persons in his house, both men and women, namely the daughter of blind John, and John Chapman, with others not sufferable.

John Chapman, for a *loyterer*, and keeping a woman known not to be his wife.

John Wakefelde, his daughter, who allured two children to spend 3<sup>d</sup> at one shotte either of them in her house.

William Secum, for removing the "*dowe*"<sup>1</sup> stone or meire stone, which was placed and set by the Jury.

1583.  
Election of  
Members.

Arthur Atye.

1583. Ralph Sekerston, who had represented the borough from 1563, died in 1580, and was succeeded by Thomas Greenacre, who also died in 1583. There is a record of the election of his successor, Arthur Atye, which took place at an Assembly in the Common Hall, on the 15th April. Mr. Atye was Secretary to the great Earl of Leicester, and agent for the States-General of Holland. He did not appear on the hustings, but it is evident that influence had been exercised by the Earl of Derby and other high personages, from the somewhat fulsome letter of thanks written to the new member as follows:—

"Will. Secum gen. Mayor

Letter to Atye.

"Right worshipfull

Yo<sup>r</sup> most curteouse L<sup>r</sup>e of the third of m<sup>c</sup>he last past (thoughe by the defalt of the bearer verie longe) yet at last

<sup>1</sup> "Dowe" stone set to mark the boundary of a property, from an old word signifying property, value, compare *en-dow*, *dow-er*, *dow-ry*.

came to my hands, viz the vij<sup>th</sup> of this instant Aprill. Wherin, as youe shewe yo<sup>r</sup> self verie thankfull for o<sup>r</sup> choice, soe I in the behalf of myself my bretheren, and others co-burgesses of this Town of Lyverpoole, must not onelie thinke oure selves fortunate in the election of such a one as both by the report of the right honorable and o<sup>r</sup> verie good Lord th' erle of Derby and others our frends of greate credit hath bene highlie comended, but also yelde thanks to the Almighty for yo<sup>r</sup> soe thankfull acceptance, whereby as we doe assure o<sup>r</sup> selves of yo<sup>r</sup> ready good will in the supply of the place whereunto the choice is made. Soe doe wee hope the acceptance of o<sup>r</sup> good will to stand in lewe of suche reward as the lawes of this realme doe allowe in such cases. And as wee are poore to p<sup>r</sup>forme anie reward, soe I trust youe shall not fynde us importunate to incrouch upon yo<sup>r</sup> travaile, though o<sup>r</sup> necessitie be greate, and o<sup>r</sup> relieff in manie causes in respecte of our service to her ma<sup>tie</sup> for the realme of Ireland, and other places verie requisite to be releved, yet o<sup>r</sup> povertie enforceth us to seke noe further as yet. Touching the accomplishm<sup>t</sup> of our election, wee have sent unto yo<sup>r</sup> Worshipp the Indenture betweene the Sheriffe of the shyre and us, of the certificate of o<sup>r</sup> said choise sealed not onlie w<sup>th</sup> o<sup>r</sup> usuall seale, but also w<sup>th</sup> the seale of the office of the Shirevaltie, whereby noe question may growe but that onelie youe are the burgesse no<sup>t</sup>ated in the place of Mr Thos Greenacres decessed, though many others have sought for it. And thus with o<sup>r</sup> harty thanks for yo<sup>r</sup> curteouse acceptance in great hast I comitt youe to the tuicon of the Almighty . . Liv'poole this of Ap<sup>r</sup> the xvij<sup>th</sup> day 1583

“Yo<sup>r</sup> verie loving frend

“WILL<sup>m</sup> SECUM Maior

“To the right worshipfull Arthur Atye, Secretary to the right Honorable th' erle of Lecestr geve these.”

1588. The Corporation was always very jealous of any interference with the jurisdiction of its local courts. There is an entry, dated November 14th, 1588—

“Rich<sup>d</sup> Mather the elder, fined for taking suit against Thos Whicksted and Rich<sup>d</sup> Hodgeson late Bailiff of this town in the Court of West Darbie, being a forrain court without this jurisdiction.”

1589. At a Port Moot Inquisition, 27th October.

“Item. The said Jurors do order and agree that there shall be noe banquette made upon the two Faire dayes in the Common haull.

“Item, they agree that all free burgesses beinge within this town shall geve theire attendance and waite upon Mr Maior with a hal-berde or bill or other convenient weapon to be carried by him or his servante upon the two faire dayes in his perambulation &c upon paine of xij<sup>d</sup> for ev'y defalte.”

Return of  
Bacon.

The same year Liverpool had the honour of returning to Parliament the most illustrious of her representatives, Francis Bacon, but no notice whatever appears on the records.

Prescot.

1589. The inhabitants of Prescot had a claim to the freedom of Liverpool. An entry occurs this year—

“Item, they agree that Mr Maior do call the men of Prescott together to see how many of them ought to be free.”

Common  
Hall.

1589. Notwithstanding the appointment of a Common Council in 1580, to be in future self-elected, we find meetings of the Burgesses in Common Hall were still held. One such is recorded on the 19th November, 1589, when a register was prepared of the names of all the burgesses and freemen then existing. The number was 190. Amongst them we find enrolled many aristocratic names, *e.g.*, the Earl of Derby, his son Lord Strange, Sir Edward Stanley, Sir Richard Sherborne, Sir Richard Molyneux, Sir Edward Halsall; and of the landed gentry, Crosse of Crosse Hall, Bold of Bold, Norris of Speke, Blundell of Ince Blundell, Ireland of Hale, More of Bank Hall, &c.

Gowns to be  
worn.

1590. “It is agreed that all those inhabitants within this said Towne which have gownes shall weare the same at all assemblies from tyme to tyme appointed or be appointed by Mr Maior of this Towne or his Deputie for the time being.”

1591.  
Town's  
Customer's  
allowance.

1591. March 23rd. “There was a motion made at this assemblie touchinge what allowance shall be yelded or allowed upon the towne's cost and charges unto the Towne's customer in respecte and towards the fyndynge and kepinge of a horse or sufficient nagg in readines for the use of the Towne for the said customer or some other fitt man to ryde upon to attend upon Mr Maio<sup>r</sup> or otherwise about the Towne's affaires and busines as nede shall require. Soe yt was concluded and agreed by the wholl assemblie, that the said customer shall have in allowance therefor ov<sup>r</sup> and besyde his ordinarie stipend or wage for his said office, the sume of tenne shillinges currante money of England.”

1593. The officials of the Corporation were rather sharply looked after and kept to their duty. This year we read—

“The Jurors present Gyles Brooke Alderman (Mayor the previous year) for not callinge together the Jury that was appointed to see for good orders in the Town felde in his maioraltie the last yeare and for not takinge their verdicts.” 1593. presented.

“Item—They present the said Mr Brooke finable and lykewise his late Bailiff finable for not causinge the Butts at the Castell to be made upp.”

“Item—Richard Mather the elder for keepinge a bowlinge Alley and mens sonnes and s'vants to bowle therein.” Richard Mather.

The right of the sons of freemen to be admitted to the franchise was now acknowledged.

“At the same assemblie John Page alias Seddon labourer, and William Newell, the same William being a freemans sonne came before Mr Maior's Deputie and the assemblie and desyred by humble peticon to be admitted free burgesses of this Corporation, w<sup>ch</sup> in ende was to them graunted upon condicon they and either of them should p'forme the auncient orders p'scribed and set downe in that behalf, and so the said John Page al<sup>s</sup> Seddon paid for his fine or ingress the sum of Twentie Shillings, and the said Willm Newall the sum of iii<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> paid to the hands of Thomas Rose deputie to Richard Birde, then Bailiff of this said Towne for the towne's use and thereupon received the burgesses othe.” Free Burgesses admitted.

1594. A very salutary order was passed by the Grand Jury at the Port Moot, October 24th. Penalties on Freemen.

Item—“That if there shall be anie p'son or p'sons free within this towne that shall from henceforthe absente him or themselves upon anie recov'ie of debte against him or them, in this courte had or recovered, so as the Bailiffs cannot come by to make due execucon or levye upon the p'son or p'sons or his or their goods so convicted as aforesaid due in their office. That then and from thenceforth ev'ry suche p'sone soe absenting himself shall lose the benefite and p'vilege of a free burgess and soe to be disfranchised and shall afterwards be arrested upon any accon and thereupon put in baile as a forrainer.”

“Item—That the Bailiffs and Bailiff's peares shall attend Mr Maior of this towne for the tyme being in their gownes of black at ev'y assemblie, at ev'y faire tyme and whensoever the Maior shall have occasion to call for them.” Gowns for Baliffs and Aldermen.

1596. This enactment was renewed and applied to the Aldermen and Bailiffs when attending the Mayor to church and market.

Penalty for refusing office. "Item—Wee doe agree that whosoever shall be elected or chosen by election to be Maior of this towne and doth refuse the same shall paie unto him that shall take the place and office of the Maior afforesaid upon him, the sune of xi<sup>li</sup> xiiij<sup>s</sup>, iij<sup>d</sup>, and the bailiffs in like manner iij<sup>li</sup> vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>."





## MUNICIPAL OFFICERS.

---

The earliest record of the officials of the Corporation is dated 1552. The minutes are in Latin, and headed thus :— 1552.  
Earliest  
Record.

“Officiar’ Elect’ Secundu’ Antic’ usu et laudabilem consuet’ in festo Sti Luce Evangelisti Anno Regni Edwardi Sexti dei grā Anglie ffranc’ et hib’n’ Reg’ fidei defensor’ et in Terr’ Ecc’lie Anglicane et hib’n’ Sup’ius Capit’ q’u’nto

“Mayor Thomas More—generosus

“Bailiffs Robt Corbett for the town

“Alex’ Garnett for the Mayor.”

The Churchwardens were at this time, and for long after, considered as corporate officers, and appointed by the Common Hall or Assembly. The officers now elected were—

|                                 |                                                                                    |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| “Churchwardens                  | { Henry Balye<br>Wm Rigbye                                                         |
| “Seneschals of the Gild Court   | { Thos Milnes<br>Jacob Melling                                                     |
| “Water Bailiff                  | { Richard Warmyshire                                                               |
| “Leavelookers                   | { John Walker<br>Robt Mercer                                                       |
| “Keeper of the Common Warehouse | { Gilbert Gardener                                                                 |
| “Serjeant at Mace               | { Robt Wyndille                                                                    |
| “Assessors and Prysors          | { R <sup>d</sup> Ley<br>R <sup>d</sup> Reynforth<br>Ralph Barlow<br>Thos Rawlinson |
| “Customers or                   | { Gilbert Merton                                                                   |
| “Collectors of the dues }       | { Roger Marsh                                                                      |
| “Hayward                        | { John Baxter                                                                      |
| “Moss Reeves                    | { Thos Eyre<br>Jno Sudley                                                          |
| “Setters of the Flesh Boards    | { John Tarleton<br>Robt Thompson.”                                                 |

1552. A few of these terms require explanation.

*Prysors.* “Prisage” was an ancient privilege of the

1552.

Crown and great lords, of pre-emption of wines and edibles at a valuation. This privilege was sometimes granted to corporate bodies, and was in a few instances claimed by the Mayor of Liverpool. The Prysors here mentioned are rather the "appraisers," who valued any of the merchandise which paid duties *ad valorem*. They are called in other portions of the records, "the four marchantes Praysors," and had very important duties to perform in reference to the "Town's Bargains," or the business carried on by the borough in its corporate capacity.

*Hayward.* A large portion of the land round Liverpool being occupied in common field, it was necessary to regulate the times for getting in the hay crops and turning in the cattle.

*Moss Reeves.* Much of the fuel used in the town was obtained from the Moss (afterwards Mosslake Fields) given to the Corporation by Thomas Earl of Lancaster. This officer was appointed to ensure proper care and to secure the fair use of the privilege.

It will be observed that in this the earliest authenticated list, no mention is made of Aldermen, Recorder, or Town Clerk.

Aldermen.

The office of Alderman is not mentioned in any of the charters down to that of Charles I. (1626). In the earliest notice existing, dating from 1525, the town was at that time governed by the Mayor, Bailiffs, and by "twelve burgesses of the commonalty appointed to order for the public weal." Whether these were incipient Aldermen does not appear. In the charter of Charles I. the office of Alderman is recognised, and the Mayor and senior Alderman are to be the Justices of the Peace for the Borough, but as to what constituted an Alderman, or how he was to be appointed, the charter is silent. By custom, sanctioned by the charter of William III.,

every member of the Council who had passed the chair became *ipso facto* Alderman.

The office of Recorder existed from the time of the earliest documents extant. Alexander Rugeley is mentioned as entering the proceedings in 1525, but of the mode of election we have no record. Recorder.

The Town Clerk, or Common Clerk, is found in many of the ancient documents, and is recognised in the Charter of Charles I. Town Clerk.

In subsequent lists we find additional officers.

*Burleymen.* The *Burleymen* had charge of the town lands, which were a relic of the folc-land of the ancient Anglo-Saxon communities. They apportioned the share to be occupied by each burgess. Their title explains itself—Burgh or Borough Ley, the town or borough meadow or pasture. Burleymen.

*Ale-Founders.* These officers had to look after the quality, measure, and price of the liquor sold, about which there are many, entries, *e.g.*:— Ale Founders.

1584. "We find it convenient that every one that hath ale to sell, shall sell a quart for a penny if it be called for, and that they shall bring a full quart open, to the intent they shall use no deceit." 1584.

The minister or incumbent of the chapel, and the schoolmaster, were, in the 16th and 17th centuries, considered as corporate officers, and were appointed by the Burgesses in Common Hall. Minister and Schoolmaster.

None of the officials were more popular than the *Waits*, or town's musicians, who existed in the earliest period of the records, and are repeatedly alluded to subsequently. They had to attend upon the Mayor on all festivities. They had also to play publicly every day except Sunday. Waits.

The Wait had to keep in his possession a silver badge, called the "Towne's Scutcheon," and deliver it up when Badge.

called for. The following entry, which is not the only one, refers to this :—

Scutcheon. 1594. November 2nd, John Byrde, Mayor. "Memorand, that this day Mr Maior by and w<sup>th</sup> the comon assente and consente of the co-burgesses of this saide towne, deliv'ed the townes scutchion of silver containge in weighte fyve ounces of haverdepoise to one Thomas Brookfelde, a pyper being admitted wayte of this towne upon his good demeano<sup>r</sup>. And for the safe kepinge and redeliv'age of w<sup>ch</sup> said scutchion in suche plite and mann<sup>r</sup> as the same nowe is, upon reasonable demande as occasion shall require," &c., he has to give two sureties.

The "pype" here referred to is doubtless the old English bagpipe, as described in Chaucer's *Canterbury Pilgrimage*.

Canvassing prohibited. 1580. "Item. It is also agreed by common consent, that if any manner of person or persons whatsoever within this town being, pretending to supply any manner of office belonging to this town under Mr Mayor, do at any time from henceforth make suit or means, either to townsman, or especially to any forrain gentleman or other dwelling out of the town to be a mediator or spokesman to obtain or get any office; the same being proved, shall not only lose the same office, but shall also be disfranchised, and this order to have continuance for ever."

1580. In 1580, with the consent of the burgesses, it was "agreed that William Golbrand shall pay unto George Rainforthe in consideration that he doth enjoy the office of hall-keeper the sum of 40s., to be paid at the feast of St. Andrew the apostle and Shrovetide next coming by equal portions."

Hall-keeper.

The office of Hall-keeper was one of considerable profit. He had the warehousing and forwarding of all goods and merchandise.

John Byrde appointed.

1588, November 18th, the office being vacant, an entry occurs that an offer having been made by John Byrde, merchant, to farm the same at a rent, the following agreement should be entered into :—

"That the daye and yeare above written yt is accorded concluded and agreed by and betweene the right worshipfull Sir Rich<sup>d</sup> Molineux knight nowe Maior of this towne of Lyverpoole in the countie of Lancaster w<sup>th</sup> the full assente and consente of all the aldermen, his brethren, burgesses and comonaltie of the same towne . . . that the said John Byrde

and his assignes, for and in consideration of the sum of twentie pounds of lawfull money of England . . . paid to the use of the said towne, shall have use and enjoye the office of the hall keeper of this said towne, and portage of all suche goods and merchandizes as shall come to this saide towne or from hence transported and here discharged or loaden, w<sup>th</sup> all mann' of p'fitts and comodities thereunto incidente or belonging, in as ample a manner as Will<sup>m</sup> Golbrand late officer in that behalf had," &c.

Mr. Byrde only held the office for one year. He was elected Mayor in 1590, and again in 1594.

1590. The office was again put up to competition, but the result is not recorded.

1587. On St. Luke's day, at the election of officers, the Mayor made choice of Mr. Thomas Bolton—

"To have been his Bailiff and officer for this year, whereunto the said Thos Bolton would not consent, yet notwithstanding Mr Mayor being very desirous and earnest to have the said Bolton, and therein used many desires and persuasions, beside the like done by divers his brethren, Aldermen and others to have the said Thomas Bolton to receive his oath of Bailiff and not to deny the same, sithence Mr Mayor was so desirous of him, yet did the said Bolton most uncourteously and obstinately refuse the same and would not receive the said oath, whereupon it was then and there concluded by a general consent of the House and Assembly that a fine to the sum of five marks usual money of England shall be levied of the goods and chattels of the said Thos Bolton for the towns use," &c.

Refusal of Bolton.

The Town Customer, or receiver of the dues, was a very important officer.

Town Customer.

1580, November 16th. "Item we are agreed and find it requisite and necessary that there shall be a blank book delivered to the town customer of Liverpoole by the appointment of Mr Mayor which book to containe 20 leaves or more and Mr Mayor his hand to be subscribed at every leaf so that no entry be made neither of ship nor barque nor merchants goods in papers and scrolls, but in that book only.

1580.

"Item, we are agreed that the same customer and sub-customer shall yield and give their several accompts to Mr Mayor or to whom his worship and the Aldermen his brethren and Common Council shall think fit for that purpose at the end of every six or at the furthest eight weeks."

1588, December 4th. Sir Richard Molyneux, Mayor. At a Convocation presided over by Mr. Robert More, Deputy Mayor, a letter was read from the Mayor, asking—

"For a conveniente and fitt man to be retained in the towne's behalf

Stipendiary servant.



as the stipendiarie s'vant to s've in and for all mann' of busines and affaires of the towne as by the tenure of the copie of the said letter hereaf written may appeare.

William  
Golbrand.

"Whereupon after manie speeches the election (conc'ninge whoe was thought to be the most fitt man for that purpose, and beinge demanded whether Will<sup>m</sup> Golbrand was a man fitt to attend Mr. Maior and for the towne's s'vice accordinge to Mr Maiors letter, or if ther was anie thought to be more fitt than hee) was taken by poles and ev'ry man to yelde his free voice and election sev'allie and p'ticularly, soe as to the nominacon of the said Will<sup>m</sup> Golbrand—were voices in that behalf fourscore and twoe and on the contrarie parte but fortie and foure. And then this done it was demanded what stipend or wages he ought to have in lewe and consideracon of his s'vice for that yeare to come, whereof ther were sundre sumes named, some of viij<sup>li</sup>, some of vi<sup>li</sup> xij<sup>s</sup> iij<sup>d</sup>, and others of v<sup>li</sup> but the ende the most voice<sup>s</sup> were that he should have for this yeare accordinge to Mr Maiors letter the sume of viij<sup>li</sup>."



## THE CORPORATE ESTATE AND REVENUES.

---

It has already been seen that the site of Liverpool was obtained by King John in 1207 from Henry Fitzwarine in exchange for other lands. On this site the Castle was built, and the burgage tenements erected under grants from the Crown. The lands in the borough became an appanage of the Duchy of Lancaster, and on the merging of the Duchy in the Crown under Henry IV., they again reverted. No doubt many grants in fee were made both by the Duchy and the Crown of which no record remains. The turbary, containing thirteen acres statute, given to the town by Earl Thomas in 1309, comprised all the land lying between Brownlow Hill on the north and Parliament Street on the south, and from east to west between Crown Street and Hope Street. The fee-farm leases from the Crown, of which there was such a succession, doubtless included the burgage rents and the rental of the other Crown lands.

Grant of  
Turbary.

The first glimpse we obtain of the landed property of the Corporation is in a copy of the Rental, under the hand of William More (Mayor in 1523), which is as follows :—

1523.  
Rental.

|                                                                                                   |                                 |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| " Sir Wm Molyneux knt for the new Tythebarn ... ..                                                | 6 <sup>d</sup>                  |
| Rd Barker for certain common ground lying betwixt }<br>St. Catherine's Hey and his croft ... .. } | 20 <sup>d</sup>                 |
| John Smyth Mariner for common ground ... ..                                                       | 8 <sup>d</sup>                  |
| Gilbert Cooke for common ... ..                                                                   | 10 <sup>d</sup>                 |
| Robt Dobb for common ... ..                                                                       | 20 <sup>d</sup>                 |
| Adam Dandye for Mill dam ... ..                                                                   | 10 <sup>d</sup>                 |
| Jenkey Baxter for common ... ..                                                                   | 4 <sup>d</sup>                  |
| Thos Wynstanley for common ... ..                                                                 | 12 <sup>d</sup>                 |
| <hr/>                                                                                             |                                 |
| Sum total... ..                                                                                   | 7 <sup>s</sup> 6 <sup>d</sup> " |

In the lease from Henry IV., immediately after his accession, the hereditaments of Liverpool are described as—

1400. “Villam nostram de Leverpull cum comun’ pastur’ jacent’ inter dictam villam et parcum nostrum de Toxtath, cum omnibus molendinis,” &c.

1533.  
King’s  
Rentally.

In 1533 a complete return was made of the King’s Rentally in Liverpool. The document is no doubt very complete, but is too long to be quoted entire. The number of tenants is 86; the total amount of quit rents, £10 1s. 4d. The names include the Earl of Derby, Sir John Stanley, Sir Wm. Molyneux, the Mores, Crosses, Fazakerleys, Blundells, Halsalls, Seacombs, Tatlocks, Bolds, Houghtons, Johnsons, &c.

1551. In 1551, the return of the town’s rental is entered as follows :

“The rental belongyng to the towne of Lev’pull and to the Mayr w<sup>th</sup> the burgesses of the same

|                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                                    |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Imprimis a burgage in the Wat’ Strete now in the holdyng of Alex’ Garnet ... ..                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 | xij <sup>s</sup> iiii <sup>d</sup> |
| Half a burgage in the Dale Strete, now in the holdyng of Rychard Warmyncham ... ..                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              | vj <sup>s</sup> vijj <sup>d</sup>  |
| A Burgage in the holdyng of Thos Alerton in the Dale Strete ... ..                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                              | xij <sup>s</sup> vj <sup>d</sup>   |
| A tenement in Garston, now in the holdyng of Perys Challin ... ..                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               | xijj <sup>s</sup>                  |
| Item vj <sup>d</sup> goyng owte of Barbon’s lands, gyven by the ladye Mercer ... ..                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             | vj <sup>d</sup>                    |
| Item that is brought in by the great inquest Robt Corbett Mayor, a yerely rent goyng owt of one Gill’s lands of Edge Lane in Darbye late in the holdyng of Wm Smyth of Liv’pole deceased ... ..                                                                                                                                                                                                 | vj <sup>s</sup> viij <sup>d</sup>  |
| Item by the same inquest halffe burgage of land or meas’ge and buyldyng in le Dale Strete late in the occupacon of Robt Nicholossby, marin’ and his wyffe decess <sup>d</sup> , and now admitted in to the same by the sayd great inquest, Homfray Olgreve aft’ the decess’ of the sayd Wm Smyth, paying therefor by yere iij <sup>s</sup> ii <sup>d</sup> on and his fine for the same. ... .. | ijj <sup>s</sup> ii <sup>d</sup>   |

1562.  
Rental.

In 1562 another rental is recorded, from which, compared

with the other lists, we gather that the Corporate landed property consisted of four portions.

1st. A portion of the lands in the original borough, lying north-west of the pool stream. These comprised the original burgage tenements, various properties held by private persons in fee simple, and a large tract of agricultural land extending northward. Of these the Corporation held a considerable part; the town field, frequently referred to, which extended northward from the end of Oldhall Street; other lands connected therewith, Hoggs' Heys, the Crooked Lands; the Higher Heavylands, one Hey-land and a half lying in the Higher Shoot on the Sea Bank; the Sea Bank itself; a field along the road to Bank Hall; also various tenements in the town.

2nd. On the south-east side of the Pool Stream, that is east of Byrom Street, the Corporation held the Gallows Field, which extended along Byrom Street from William Brown Street to Richmond Row. Beyond this there was the Middle Mill Dale and the Mill Dam, occupying the hollow, now Thurlow Street. Above the Gallows Field, northwards from the Great Heath, now London Road, they held the Rough Heys.

3rd. The Great Heath and the open lands from White-chapel eastward. These were principally unenclosed.

4th. The turbary already described.

The two last portions form the bulk of the Corporate estate as now in existence. Of the two first portions it is now impossible to trace the history with any certainty, but a large part was in possession of the Corporation early in the 17th century.

Besides the landed estate, the revenues of the Corporation were derived from tolls and dues, which have from time immemorial been the subject of litigation.

The Corporation of Liverpool were never backward in the assertion of their rights in levying these tolls and dues, which sometimes got them into trouble.

1545.  
Lease to  
Molyneux.

In 1545 Sir Richard Molyneux obtained from the Crown a fee-farm lease of

“the town and Lordship of Lytherpole including the Stallage and Tollage of the Fairs and Market . . . and also the Customs and anchorage and key toll of the Water of Mersey within the Lordship.”

1555.  
Disputes.

Some of these customs dues and exemptions were claimed by the burgesses, which led to serious disputes. In 1555 a rupture occurred arising out of the contested right to the tolls of the markets and fairs. At a Common Hall, or Assembly, on the 20th April, an order was made for the expenses of a deputation to London to meet Sir Richard Molyneux.

At a subsequent meeting, on August 12th,

“it was examined how the money had been bestowed, when Master Mayor (Sir Wm Norris) declared to the whole assembly, how it were not convenient to declare there of all things which was done in the town’s suit at London, forasmuch as he well perceived all in the whole house were not to be credited and trusted—wherewith the whole assembly for the more part, and in manner all together held themselves therewith well contented.”

1555. At the same Assembly the Mayor declared

Bailiffs  
censured.

“the disobedience of the Bailiffs and especially the Bailiff Corbett, who had neglected their duty in allowing Master Molyneux to gather the tolls of the cattle fair. The Mayor further declared, that he might have sealed up the Bailiff Corbett’s doors, and taken his goods into custody and the town’s, besides other punishment.”

1556. The litigation still continuing, in January, 1556, Sir Richard Molyneux sent an agent, William Rigby, to publish a proclamation at the High Cross, claiming the payment of the tolls and dues. The circumstances are thus detailed in the records:—

Fracas with  
Molyneux.

“The above named with many others came to the High Cross in Liverpoole and there made a noise as ready to have given summons and



warning for a court to be holden ; at which noise hearing, Mast<sup>r</sup> Walker in absence of Mast<sup>r</sup> Mayor, Rauffe Sekerston and others came to the said noise, demanding and asking what they had there to do to presume to make any such noise, and they not being privy thereof, and so stopped them for any more further procedure."

1560. A few years afterwards the Corporation came into 1560  
conflict with a more formidable opponent.

In March, 1560, a ship from Dublin ran ashore at Hoose, near Hilbre Island. She was boarded by some fishermen of West Kirkby, brought into the Mersey, and anchored in the Sloyne. Here she was boarded by Mr. Massey, agent for the Earl of Derby, on behalf of the Admiralty, and ordered

"to be put to the full sea on the Cheshire side of the river ; where-upon the Mayor of Liverpool and John Mainwaring the Water Bailiff took forcible possession, and brought the vessel over to Liverpool, and proceeded to take an inventory of her belongings. Thereupon a Mr Delaine of Dublin appeared, and claimed the cargo. The next day came Mr Massey aforesaid over the water, and knowing all the doings of Mr Mayor was not a little grieved and vexed therewith, and Mr Mayor like vexed towards him, so that Mr Massey departed forth of Liverpoole in a furious and unquiet manner"

Dispute about  
Jurisdiction.

to Lathom House, to lay his grievous complaint before Lord Derby. The matter was then adjourned to Liverpool, where

"there passed certain stout words upon both the parties, insomuch as Mr Massey laid hands on his sword and Mr Hanmer a gentleman of the Earl of Derby riding by upon a demi-lance like a champion, but notwithstanding Mr Mayor commanded Mr Massey to keep in his sword."

High words then ensued. The Derby party departed  
"all in their fumes" to make further complaint at Lathom.

The Mayor was again summoned to Lathom, and ultimately the ship and cargo had to be given up to Lord Derby's agents, for the collection of the tonnage and poundage and harbour dues. The matter was brought before the Admiralty, and an attachment was issued against the Mayor and Bailiffs, but by intercession they were discharged on payment of the fees.

Lord Derby  
interferes.

1590, December 14th. An audit of the receipts and pay-

ments during the Mayoralty of Mr. Thomas Whicksted was held, which is entered as follows :—

Corporation  
Accounts.

“Accompted w<sup>th</sup> the said Thomas Whicksted gent late Maior of Liv’poole, whose receipts in the yeare he was Maior doe amounte to the sume of xliij<sup>li</sup> x<sup>s</sup> v<sup>d</sup> and his payments to xxxix<sup>li</sup> xv<sup>s</sup> vij<sup>d</sup>. Soe all things accompted and allowed he resteth due to the towne in this accompte the sume of iij<sup>li</sup> xiiiij<sup>s</sup> x<sup>d</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> must be bestowed in *gonne powder*.”

Whether this powder was to be expended in *feux de joie* on occasion of festivities, or for a graver purpose, does not appear.

Origin of  
Town Dues.

The origin of the Liverpool Town Dues is involved in considerable mystery. There are two theories on the subject; one, that these dues represent the customs payable to the Crown, which were usually included in the fee-farm rents reserved in the leases granted by the Crown or the Duchy of Lancaster; the other, that these dues were in the nature of fines or penalties paid by non-freemen for the privilege of trading, freemen being exempt. An entry, dated 2nd Sept., 1592, seems to favour the latter view. The levying of these dues had attracted the attention of the High Admiral of England, Lord Charles Howard, whereupon a mandamus was issued, and entrusted to two Commissioners, Marmaduke Langdale and Hugh Robson.

1592.

1592.  
Letter from  
Lord High  
Admiral.

The various heads under which dues were claimed are set forth as follows :—

“Ladinge; Measuringe; Wayinge; Grondage; Ancorage; Betonage; Ferriage; Daiage; Lastage; Wharfage; Keyage; Cranage; Sealinge of Measures; Searchinge of Measures; Sea rounded groundes; Fishinges; Fowlinge; Planckage; Measuringe of Coales, Salte and Corne.

“All these things above mentioned, Wee, Marmaduke Langdale and Hugh Robson, in the righte honorable the Lorde highe Admirall of England’s name doe forbidde you and every of youe to take measure or receive any duties or demands for any of the things aforesaid. In witness whereof, Wee Marmaduke Langdale and Hugh Robson have sett oure hands hereunto the seconde daye of September Anno d’ni 1592.

By us nowe being present in Lyverpoole, readie to fulfill oure comission yf it please Mr Maior and the reste of the worshipfull to see it.

“ MARMADUKE LANGDALE

“ HUGH (R) ROBSON \*

his m'ke.”

“To the Water Bailiffe or Bailiffes and all other officers named or appointed by the right worshipful Mr Maior and the Bailiffs of Lyverpoole or any other p'son or p'sons that doe appoint any suche officer or officers for takinge any fees or other dueties for any of the things w<sup>th</sup>in written.”

\* This worthy could not write his name.



## THE BURGESSES, FREEMEN, GUILDS, AND RESTRICTIONS.

---

Charters.
 The original letters patent of King John conferred certain privileges on those who should take burgage tenements under the Crown, who became *ipso facto* "Burgesses." The charter of Henry III. recognised them as such, and gave power of incorporation as a "*gildam mercatoriam*," with the privilege of preventing all who were not members thereof from transacting any business unless by consent of the burgesses. The original burgage tenements were 168 in number, and were

Burgages.
 never increased. The burgages being heritable property, became divided and subdivided, and ultimately disappeared; the *freemen* who had obtained their right by purchase or inheritance taking their places.

Gentry.
 Many of the neighbouring gentry, the Crosses, Moores, Molyneuxs, Stanleys, &c., identified themselves with the town

Freemen.
 by being enrolled on the list of freemen, and took an active part in the town's affairs, being frequently elected to the office of Chief Magistrate. For this purpose the occupation of a house within the town was an essential requisite. The following entry relates to the admission of one of the Tarletons of Aigburth:—

1552.  
 Tarleton  
 admitted.

1552. "Edwardus Tarleton venit ad hanc cur'et fidelitat' fec' esse liber homo de Liv'p<sup>h</sup> sub condi'o'e q<sup>d</sup> si inhabitat et remanet in hac villa q<sup>d</sup> tunc liber esset et suis p'ten' in burgens' huius vill' h'ebit. Et si no remanet in vill', tunc no' h'et burgom p'd't. Et sic admittat' et fact' est liber per Thomam More gen'os maiore p' d'no Reg' ib'm A° Sext' Reg' Ed'r &c Sext' "



"Condicio fact int' p'dic' Thomam et fratres suis unacu' assensu et concens' coi't atat' vill' p'dic' et p'd'm Edward' Tarleton die vero duodecimo Junii An<sup>o</sup> vj Reg' Ed'r' Sext videlic'—that the said Edward shall inhabite remayne and dwell w'in the towne of Lyv'pull at, before, or in the feast of the purification of the blessed Virgin Marie next to come aft' the daie aforesaid. And yff he do not inhabyt and dwell as is aforesaid, that then he shall loose his freedom and be disfrach'sd of the liberties and freedom w'in the sayed towne of Lyv'pll, and alsoe shall paye all duties and customes to o' sov'n lord the Kyng and the towne as a frem' ought to doe in as ample man' as the condicon is expressed on the other syd of the booke &c.

"By me THOMAS MORE,

þ me EDWARD TARLETON."

1561. In this year it is recorded that

"Edward Prescottt was admitted to the temporary freedom of the town so long as he inhabits, and if he do not inhabit and dwell, he shall lose his freedom and pay all dues and customs as a foreigner ought to do." Prescottt admitted.

The fee charged on admission was 3s. 4d., and from that time many sought enrolment.

In 1581 the fee was raised to 6s. 8d.

In the same year Lawrence Waddington claimed his freedom as the son of a freeman, and paid 3s. 4d. for ingress.

1599. It would seem that the privileges of freemen were not confined exclusively to the male sex, for at a Port Moot, 22nd October, 1599, we read

"Item wee p'sent Alice Parre, widowe, finable for leading goods from the sea syd w<sup>th</sup> her waine, shee not being free." Alice Parre fined.

Glimpses are occasionally given of the continued existence of the burgage tenures side by side with the freemen. There are many such entries as the following:—

1562, January 8th. Record of the conveyance of half a burgage of land in Castle Street, with one half-acre of land in four butts in Everton Causeway, from Wm. Nicholson to John Wytter. Burgages.

The burgage quit rents formed part of the royalties demised in the fee-farm leases.

1565. This year a roll of the burgesses is entered, from Burgesses.



which it appears that the original number had been well kept up, 167 appearing on the list.

1587. It is recorded

“that Henry Backster hath sold his land by which he claimed his freedom and so lost his right.”

1558.  
Trade gilds.

The original grant of the “*gildam mercatoriam*” included the permission to form minor trade fellowships. In 1558, one John Pemberton, tailor, was admitted to his freedom on payment of 6s. 8d. As soon as he was admitted he stirred up his brethren of the craft, and under his leadership a petition was presented to the Mayor and Assembly, along with a *douceur* of 50s., setting forth that the honourable fraternity of tailors formerly enjoyed certain exclusive privileges, which had fallen into disuse, and praying for sanction to form themselves into an exclusive *gild*, prohibiting all others from engaging in the trade under pain of fine and forfeiture. This was assented to, and a charter accordingly granted, signed by Robert Corbett, Mayor, Sir Richard Molyneux of Sefton, Sir William Norris of Speke, Ralph Sekerston, M.P. and Alderman, George Fairclough, Alderman; and John More of Bank Hall, and George Ireland of Hale, Esquires, Burgesses, with the whole assent of the co-burgesses.

1558.  
Tailors' gild.

1559. Alexander Garnett, who succeeded to the civic chair, took a hostile position, and the fraternity was for the time suppressed. The following year, under the sheltering wing of brave old Ralph Sekerston, it was revived, and continued to flourish.

1581. The Tailors' Gild came before the Assembly, and asked for authority to charge 4s. 6d. for the “good will and admission of members.” At the same time the Company of Websters requested authority to charge 5s. for the like privilege. Both applications were granted.

Freemen.

The freemen were very jealous of the infringement of

their exclusive privileges in defiance of the clause in the charter of 1556, by which all such restrictions were abolished and in future prohibited.

1558. It was ordered by the Assembly

"That no craftsmen out of the town not free shall set up their occupation within the town without license of the brethren of their occupation upon forfeiture of 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup>." 1558.

1565. At a Port Moot of the Burgesses it is recorded

"We find and order that all wares transported and brought into this borough Corporate and Port town forth of the Queen's Majesty's realm of Ireland by the way of merchandize, shall be brought into the common hall; that is to wit into the common warehouse of this town, and that all such wares sold or bartered between foreigner and foreigner shall be forfeit as foreign bought and foreign sold,—fells and yarn only excepted,—and that it shall be lawful for any freeman of this town to seize and take the same. Regulations.

"And also that no clothier or other foreign occupier, ship any kind of wares, goods or merchandizes from this port into Spain France or other regions unless they do agree with Mast<sup>r</sup> Mayor for the time being, and his brethren with the whole consent of the commonalty, or at least with the consent of the ancient co-burgesses well skilled, expert, and discreet, in buying and selling. Prohibitions.

"Also we find, order, and decree, that no foreigner, as men of Bolton, Blackburne or any other places, sell any iron, wood, or any other kind of wares to any foreign person other than to a freeman of this town, on pain of forfeiture of the same.

"Also we order that no manner of persons buy within this and liberties thereof, any cannel, coals, turf or other fuel coming within the liberties either by wayns, carts or horseback intending to ship the same into Ireland or any other places, on pain of forfeiture of every ton buying 3<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>."

The records are full of such entries as the following :—

1580, October 18th. At the Great Port Moot Inquisition, the Jury presented

"John Jefforde, gent, for that his wife doth occupy bruinge and bake-inge to sell, he not being free." Prohibitions.

"Wm. Parre, Robert Challoner, Rich<sup>d</sup> Hymer, Rich<sup>d</sup> Clerke and Wm Hoghton for the like."

1583, October 1st.

"That no forrain lady shall buy above eight Wyndles of grain or corn in the market upon any one market day."

“That no townsman or inhabitant shall buy above eight Wyndles of grain or corn upon one market day.”

At the same Port Moot ten persons were presented for trading, not being free of the Corporation.

It was further ordered

“That no forrainer shall buy of any other forrainer either flock, wool, hyde, tallow, brass or checkers.”

Penalties.

“If any freeman of this town do or shall sell any merchandize to any forrainer or stranger, he shall pay the Town’s Custom except he do abide the adventure of the goods himself by sea.”

1589, October 30th.

“Jane Aspendine, spinster presented, for kepinge a shoppe within this towne not being free; that either she shall paye toll, or els in defalte thereof, vj<sup>d</sup> fine for everie defalte.”

“Forrainers” seem to have been the great dread of the Liverpool traders. On the 25th October, 1582, the Jurors at the Port Moot made the following presentment:—

1582.

“The Jurors aforesaid are agreed and do present that all the merchants or chapmen of Bolton, Wygan and Manchester, which bring Hops, Tallow, Soap, or any other kind of ware whatsoever to this towne of Liverpoole, shall every of them sell the same to the free burgesses of this said town, and not to any forainer in any wise, and that they shall pay all their tolls and duties thereon.”

1581. “We are agreed that no ‘badger’<sup>1</sup> coming to the town to buy Corn in this market, shall buy above two Windles of any kind of grain.”

The commerce passing the town was laid under contribution.

1572, October 23rd.

Tolls.

“We agree that all pickards and boats coming into this port intending to go up to Warrington or Frodsham or any creek within this port of Liverpool and thereto belonging shall make their entry and pay key toll, anchorage and customs to the Mayor’s collector appointed town’s customer on pain of forfeiture of such pickard or boat, and the goods in them laden.”

Waterford and  
Wexford.

The Waterford and Wexford merchants, as well as the citizens of London, enjoyed a prescriptive right to exemp-

<sup>1</sup> “Badger,” Fr. *Bagagier*—one that buys victuals in one place and carries them to another to make profit of it.

tion from the town's customs. The Liverpool burgesses endeavoured to restrict this exemption within the narrowest possible limits.

1598. At an Assembly in Common Hall on March 31st, 1598, it is entered

Imprimis. "The men of the towne of Waterford and Wexforde in Ireland being free with us, and wee of this Corporacon free w<sup>th</sup> them, therefor and conc'ninge the Townes Custome of bothe places. Whether they ought to paie Hallage for their goods and m'chandizes or not; for us it is confessed the keper of the comon Warehouse of this towne hath not demanded that Duetie of Hallage of the M'chants and men of those twoe places of Waterforde and Wexford. Yt is nowe concluded and agreed that from henceforth the Keper of the saide Warehouse for the tyme beinge shall take and receive Hallage of all Waterford and Wexford men for all goods and m'chandizes by them brought hither or hereafter to be brought, as other the forrain's do or ought to paie &c., any freedom notw<sup>th</sup>standinge."

These vexatious restrictions were carried into the ordinary transactions of daily life. Thus, on the 14th November, 1588, the following Port Moot presentment appears:—

"Imp'mis. The said Jurors do agree that no Town's folks neither men, women nor servants shall buy any butter, eggs nor fish, before the same brought to the usual place of the market, unless such as be old customers, which use to bring butter to their old customers—upon pain to forfeit for every such offence, every offender six pence." Forstalling.

Oppressed with these absurd and minute interferences and penalties, illegal though they were, one wonders how trade and commerce could be carried on at all. All the ordinances seem calculated, if not intended, to drive trade away from the port. The political economy of the reign of Elizabeth was of a strange and anomalous description. It seemed to consist in a general scramble for monopolies, every trade and every community striving to obtain for itself some special advantage over its neighbours or rivals. Before the end of the reign, however, the results had become so intolerable that a strong remonstrance was made by the House of Commons to the Monopolies.

Queen, who wisely and graciously acknowledged the mistake, of which she said she was unconscious, and promised that a remedy should be applied.

The next section will illustrate the regulations under which commerce was carried on, and the mode of transacting business.





## TRADE AND COMMERCE.

---

The prohibitions and restrictions under which trade was carried on have been noticed above. Even where no restrictions existed a sharp look-out was kept on the tradesmen and merchants. Thus we read:—

1558. Thomas More, Mayor. "Item; it is ordered by the said Inquest that the Mayore for the tyme being cause proclamation to be made at the Crosse that no shoemaker of the countrie doe bring shoes to sell in Liverpole market made of horse hyde or of unlawful barked leather; to forfitt the same for the fyrst tyme, and the second tyme to forfitt the same that be made of horse hyde or of unlawful barked and tanned leather, and further to make fyne at the Mayor's discretion. And the thyrd tyme soe doing to have imprisonment at the Mayor's discretion, and to be banyshed the market." Trade Regulations.

This regulation was repeated from time to time, and officers were appointed to inspect the tanneries, to reject sheep fells and horse hides, to see that the leather was properly tanned and curried, and that the shoemakers were supplied with the proper article. The shoemakers were liable to forfeiture and imprisonment for any neglect on their part.

Forestalling and regrating were severely dealt with. The dealing in corn seems to have been a perpetual difficulty and cause of anxiety.

1562. "Item, we find it needful that no freeman shall buy on the market day in open market over six wyndles of any one grain, and that no farmer or namely trauntors<sup>1</sup> shall buy any corn until the town be served." Against Forestalling.

Again—

Thomas Secum Mayor. "No man shall buy any corn on the market day but one of the house, as the Goodman or his wife, or some of their

<sup>1</sup> Trauntors were carriers, or much the same as *badgers* or *pedlars*.

servants and that no manner of person of this town shall cause or appoint any person of the country to buy any corn for them on pain of 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> for every offence."

1578, April 28th. In the Great Assembly it was ordered and agreed

Shipments  
prohibited.

"That whereas corn and grain was dryven to an excessive price by reason of the transporting thereof by boats into Wales and other places, contrarie to a good order therefor provided, and proclamation in that behalf made. . . . that from that tyme forthe as occasion should require, the water bailiffs and other officers shall make diligent search for all such vessells or boats as shall be laden with corn or grain, and that they shall bring all such vessells to this side the water, and there to get the same discharged and landed and taken to the markett."

The Deputy Customer was also sent for, and instructed that he should not take any entries outwards of vessels so intending to transport grain.

Merchants'  
Gild and  
Hanse.

In the charter of Henry III. the burgesses were granted liberty to have a "merchants' gild and *hanse*" (*gildam mercatoriam cum hansa*,<sup>1</sup> &c.). The merchants' gild developed into the Corporation, but for a long period the *hanse* was a body trading on its own account, and looking with jealous eyes on all competitors, and if it could not drive them from the field, endeavouring to mulct them in a fine for permission to trade. Thus—

1581, April 13th.

"Rauffe Serocold of Manchester gave four marks to the town to be allowed to make his best market for his Iron and Trayne Oil which came to Liverpool in the good ship the barque Straunge."

1590, November 5th. Item—

Town  
Bargains.

"George Hodser a merchante from Ireland, whoe brought hither certen grayne, to wete, Wheate, and Rye w<sup>ch</sup> was thought conveniente to have ben hadd as a common bargain for the towne; howbeit after some conference in the haule at a convocacon there, yt was agreed betwene Mr Maior, his brethren and burgesses, and the said Hodser that the same George Hodser in consideracon of the sūme of xxvj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> by him to be

<sup>1</sup> *Hansa* is explained by Ducange to be "*Mercatorium Societas*," a company of merchants or traders.

paid unto the towne he should have libertie to take his best marquett for his said comoditie within the towne, which was to him graunted and soe <sup>Payments for Privilege.</sup> paide for the same the said sume of xxvj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> to the hands of Mr Bailiff Formebie for the Towne's use."

1591, March 23rd. At an Assembly in the Common Hall,

"One Mr Pratt came before Mr Maior and the whole assemblie concerning certain Rie and Barlie by him and his captin brought into this ryver from Ireland, to the number and quantitie of sixe score barrells of both sorts, w<sup>ch</sup> they p<sup>r</sup>ffered to Mr Maior and the towne to be solde, for the w<sup>ch</sup> Mr Maior w<sup>th</sup> the consente of the wholl assemblie proffered vij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> for a barrell of the said rye, and sixe shillings for a barrell of the said barlie, w<sup>ch</sup> price the said merchants of the foresaid grayne refusinge, did then and there voluntarie make p<sup>r</sup>ffer to Mr. Maior to the towne's use and p<sup>r</sup>ffit of the sume of xxxij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> to have license and free libertie to take their best marquett for the sales of their said graine, w<sup>ch</sup> in ende was to them granted by a gen<sup>r</sup>all consente and soe they p<sup>r</sup>mitted to paye the said sume of xxxij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> which was to be paid w<sup>th</sup>in twoe dayes then nexte following."

The Hanse, or trading body, included the whole of the <sup>Hanse.</sup> freemen and burgesses, to whom any produce imported had first to be offered. A value was put upon it by the *Prizers* (appraisers). If the importers did not chose to accept the price so fixed, they had to bargain with the town as to what they should pay for permission to sell in the open market. In 1591, one Gyles Brooke (who was Mayor in the following <sup>1591.</sup> year) had bargained on his own account for a cargo of grain from Ireland. This was considered a grave offence, and in 1591, March 23rd, at an Assembly,

"It was inquired whether corne or other victuals cominge or to be broughte unto this saide towne and porte of Liv'poole by waye of merchandize may lawfullie and by the orders of this howse be bargained and bought by anie freeman of this towne w<sup>th</sup>oute the speciall licence and consente of Mr Maior of the same towne for the tyme being w<sup>th</sup> the assente also of the aldermen his brethren and burgesses, the same goods beinge before p<sup>r</sup>ffered to the towne to be solde.

"Whereunto all the wholl assemblie (by poles and afterwards w<sup>th</sup> a gen<sup>r</sup>all voice) made answer sayinge yt was not lawfull for anie one to bargain or buie any of the comodities above mentioned, the same beinge first (to be) p<sup>r</sup>ffered to the towne to be solde as is above said.

Gyles Brooke  
prosecuted.

"Whereupon the determinacon of a certen offense supposed to have bene committed by Gyles Brooke of this towne marchant touchinge the buyinge of certen graine brought hither by one Phepole's man oute of Ireland was referred and putt over untill fryday then next followinge."

### On Friday the Assembly met again

"concerninge the determination or ending of the matter of offence committed by the said Gyles Brooke before menconed and spoken of. The offence beinge sufficientlie founde and approved in the said Gyles Brooke as well by the confession of the yonge man s'vante to the said Mr Phepole aforenamed, whoe had solde the forsaide graine unto the said Gyles Brooke as otherwise, a ffyne by a gen'all consente was sett downe, according to the greater p'te of the said assemblie beinge dem'ded for the assessinge of the said fyne to the sume of ffyve shillings in regard the said Gyles Brooke did alledge his said offence to be done and committed ignorantlie and not otherwise, and submitted him selfe to the curtesie and good consideracon of the wholl howse w<sup>th</sup> sume of fyve shillings was by him paid to the hands of Mr Bailiff Ball to the towne's use."

Mr. Phepole, the importer of the grain, was at a subsequent Assembly also fined 5s.

This eccentric mode of doing business was entirely illegal and contrary to the terms of the charter of 1556, but in such a remote part of the country the central machinery of the law was very difficult to put into motion, and there was no powerful body whose interest it was to take the matter up. The system worked anything but smoothly; the shifts and devices which had to be resorted to are ludicrous.

1591, April 14th.

Tallow  
Embargo.

"Item, concerninge certen *Tallowe* called rendered tallowe, brought hither for a towne's bargain, the quantitie whereof beinge soe small as but fyve cwt or thereabouts yt is therefore thought mete and soe agreed upon by a comon consente, that from henceforth anie freeman of this said towne, one or moe may bargaine and buy as well the said quantitie of tallowe above menconed as all other such like w<sup>th</sup> shall fall oute as this doth, not fitte for a comon bargaine yet nevertheles, if any one free burgess of this towne, being a townesman shall buie anie suche quantitie, he shall not denie one or moe of his neighbours beinge free of the Corporacon to be p'takers thereof w<sup>th</sup> him; soe he or they come in conveniente tyme. And that the first buier of the same shall upon suche bargain or contracte made geve undelaied notice and knowledge hereof to Mr Maior



of this towne for the tyme beinge or to his deputie, soe as either proclamacon maye be made or els particular warninge be geven at ev'ie freeman's house by the underbailiff to the same effecte. And the like order and rule to be observed for corn and graine."

"Item. It is nevertheless thought mete and conveniente and thereupon agreed as afore' that anie one towne's man being a free burgess of the same shall and maye w<sup>th</sup>oute restraunte or offence, bargain and buie anie rendred tallowe not surpassing one cwt of roughe tallowe; not above the nomber or quantitie of thirtie or fortie stonnes, or the nomber and quantitie of xxx<sup>tie</sup> barrells, and not above of graine or corne, brought or to be brought hither to be solde by anie maren' or sailors or other p'son or p'sons, and this to be lawfull for anie one townes man beinge free, for his owne p'per use w<sup>th</sup>out anie other to be p'taker w<sup>th</sup> him thereof, anie above to the contrarie notwithstanding."

Permission to  
Freemen.

Again the subject came up April 20th, 1591.

1591. At a Convocation in the Common Hall, before Mr. John Byrde, Mayor.

"First conc'ninge certen tallowe latelie brought hither by one Nicholas Creley and others, whose names are hereafter subscribed, supposed to be bargained and bought contrarie to the orders of this towne, to the use of forrainers, w<sup>ch</sup> said tallowe as it appeareth now sithence, was not so bought as yt was supposed. Soe that it is nowe by this wholl assemblie concluded and agreed, that in the furtherance and advancement of o<sup>r</sup> liberties and trafique here, yt is and shall be lawful from henceforthe, to and for ev'ie or anie mann' of townes man beinge a fre burg<sup>s</sup> of this Corporacon to bargain and buie anie manner of goods m'chandizes, and other comodities whatsoev<sup>r</sup> (victuels onely excepted) to and for his owne p'per use and comoditie not extendinge above the value and s<sup>u</sup>me of twentie pounds; soe as the marchante sello<sup>r</sup> of the same goods &c doe yelde and paye for his libertie and licence to sell the same to the townes use and benefite the s<sup>u</sup>me of eighte shillings, and for victuels the lyke libertie is graunted, both to the seller and to the buier, if the comoditie of such victuells surpas not the value of tenne pounds, the seller yeldinge and paying to the townes use the sum of foure shillings, and this order to have continuance and be in force untill yt be repelled or revoked by this howse."

Privileges of  
Freemen.

"Item, it is further agreed as afore that if anie townes man will have parte of the tallowe nowe supposed to be solde by Nicholas Creley, and others, givinge notice thereof to Mr Maior anie tyme of this p'sente daye, he shall have the same at the price of iij<sup>s</sup> vij<sup>d</sup> the stonne, so as to take it by the Cwt or barrell, and make undelaied paimente for the same upon the receipt thereof. And for this tyme the m'chant buier shall paye for his licence of the sales of the said tallowe but sixe pence upon the barrell,

Nicholas  
Creeley and  
others.

1591.  
Licenses.



and xij<sup>d</sup> upon the cwt the former order notwithstanding. And the said Patrick Creber for his p'te had libertie for his porcon of the said tallowe viz for licence to sell the same, payinge therefor the sum of twoe shillings sixe pence, w<sup>ch</sup> was paide to the hands of Mr Bailif Formbie to the townes use."

The dealings in "tallowe" had nearly led to another collision with Chester.

1591, May 31st. At a Convocation in the Common Hall

Tallow from  
Ireland.

"Imp'mis for and conc'ninge certen tallowe brought hither by one Garland from Ireland Marchante, viz twoe tonnes in casque, and because that men of Chest' as appeareth by a l're missyve sente from the Maior of the said cite of Chest' to Mr Maior of this towne, have bargained and bought the same by an absolute contracte. To cutt off such disordered dealinge, it is thought mete that the said comoditie shalbe taken by the towne and for that the quantitie thereof is but smale, yt is concluded and agreed by the wholl assemblie that Mr. Maior shall have the said tallowe to his owne comoditie and use payinge to the towne for the same the sūme of x<sup>li</sup>."

The same high-handed measures were adopted with regard to wool, but had occasionally to be relaxed.

1594, January 3rd. At a Convocation in the Common Hall—

Wool.

"Item. Whereas by a former order heretofore made there hath bene taken and levied a peny upon ev'y stonne of Wull brought hither to be solde, it is nowe at and by this p'sente assemblie above menconed for div'se reasonable and good consideracons them movinge and p'tely in regarde of the scarsitie of Wooll nowe beinge. Therefore thought meete and verely requisite and so agreed upon by a comon consent, that the takinge or levyinge of the saide duetie of one peny upon ev'y stonne of Wooll as aforesaid shalbe forgone and cease w<sup>th</sup>in this said towne, untill further order shalbe in and by this said howse therein taken and established."

This constant huxtering and meddling brought with it its natural consequences in driving away trade from the port. It would have been strange had it been otherwise. The greed and selfishness frustrated the objects aimed at, and, instead of enriching, impoverished the town.

1566.  
Decay.

In 1566 the petition to the Queen describes Liverpool as

“your Grace’s decayed town.” At the end of the century it is recorded—

1599. “Item that the keeper of the Comon Warehouse of this towne shall have xxij<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> and the Town Customer xv<sup>s</sup> for this p’sente yeare for theire severall wag<sup>s</sup> in regard of the small trade or trafique that nowe is . . . if Mr Maior, his brethren and burgesses doe thinke of it soe to be, untill God send us better traffique.”

The four merchants or “praysors” annually appointed <sup>Praysors.</sup> to conduct the mercantile business of the borough did not always give satisfaction. In the year 1590 we read as follows:—

“22nd Feby., 1590. An Assemblie in the Comon haule, before Mr Maior (John Byrde)

“In which Assemblie Mr. Maior caused to come before him Richard <sup>1590.</sup> Hodgson of Liv’poole aforesaid, marchante, beinge one of the four m’chants for the said towne, y’is p’nte yeare, conc’ning certain herings to the number of xxxiiii barrell,<sup>1</sup> heretofore sente hither to him by one Richarde Prickett m’chante owte of Irelande, w<sup>ch</sup> said herings were by the said Rd Hodgson conveyed and sente away from hence, w<sup>th</sup>oute makinge Mr Maior privie or in anie sorte therew<sup>th</sup> all acquainted, contrarie to the liberties of this Corporacon, and against the oths of a ffree burges of the same. In soe muche that Mr Maior (havinge thereof intelligence) at this said Assemblie p’posed the question, Whether the said Rich<sup>d</sup> Hodgson was in ffaulte and finable for that his attempte on the p’misses, and caused ev’ie man of the said Assemblie to be demanded by poles of theire sev’all opinions, whoe did ev’y man sev’allie p’nounce against him as verie faultie, and deserved a ffyne to be imposed upon him for the same: yet in conclusion, forasmuch as the said R<sup>d</sup> Hodgson pleaded ignorance, and did earnestlie p’test in open audience that he did not commit the said offence either maliciously or to hinder or p’judice the towne in anie thinge to his knowledg, and soe humbled and submitted himself to the courtesie and good consideracon of Mr Maior his brethren and the rest of the burgesses, cravinge favor for his offence. Whereupon and in regard yt was his first offence in that behalf done, it was therefore considered in favourable manner that his fine should be mittigated, soe as he was assessed to paye but the s<sup>u</sup>me of Two shillings six pence, as a small fine in respect of his deserte, which was paide p’sentlie then down to t’ hands of Mr Bailiff Ball to the Towne’s use.”

The entries respecting these “towns bargains” are <sup>Town’s</sup> Bargains.

<sup>1</sup> A barrel of herrings usually contained 1000 fish.

numerous, and illustrate very significantly the difficulty as well as injustice, of artificially restricting and diverting the ordinary and natural course of commercial transactions.

Weights and Measures.

The regulation of weights and measures formed an important part of the business of the town's officers, and was a source of no little difficulty.

1560.

In 1560, the weights and measures were examined; standards were ordered to be provided and kept, and a public weigh-house was established.

Grain Measures.

1565.

Considerable differences arose as to the mode of measuring grain. The strike measure was the customary method, but from some cause or other it was unsatisfactory. In 1565, it was resolved by the Mayor and Commonalty "that the stricken mete and measure should be laid away and not used any more, but that the old upheaped mete be had, used and allowed and none other," upon pain of forfeiture and imprisonment. It was also ordered at the same time—

Corn Market. "that all persons having corn in this market shall unbind and set open their sacks bags and pouches against Master Mayor or his officers shall come and walk through the corn market place; and also that every person shall keep order in setting down their corn in the market place one by another along both sides the street, as Lancashire folks on the east side and Cheshire folks upon the west side, and not one to stand before another to the grief and annoyance of any person; and also that the foreigners, and specially such as be called Badgers buy no corn before the inhabitants be served during the space of one hour after the bell be rung; so that the inhabitants may have the free market that one hour, according to the ancient use and custom."

Badgers.

1566.

In the following year, 1566, the Commonalty were again called together to consider the diversity of the measures used. All manner of persons were commanded to bring in their wyndles to be examined. About a dozen were brought in, which all differed, some containing 55 quarts, some 56, and others 57, wine measure. A standard was fixed upon, and it was resolved—

Wyndles.

"That one wyndle containing 56 quarts of wine measure up heaped

shall ever from henceforth be fastened with lock and iron chains, and the said wine quart affixed to the same to the bench in this hall to stand, and to be the right and just standard."

In 1589 there is a record that the Assembly

1589.

"find it convenient to have a new half wyndle made for a water measure, to contain two quarts in every half wyndle more than the land measure, and the same to remain in the hall for the town's use."

It was also agreed

"that the two leave lookers shall everie Saturday take a juste half wyndle sealed by Mr Maior to trye everie man's wyndle beinge a seller or buyer of Corne," &c.

In 1558, it was ordered that

1558.

"every Miller on warning given shall bring his toll-dish to Mr Mayor to a lawful size thereof sealed under a penalty of 6<sup>d</sup>."

Millers' Toll Dish.

There are many regulations during this period as to the sale of ale and beer, the general drift being to limit the price to one penny the quart. Thus, on the 24th October, 1586, it is ordered at the Port Moot Inquisition that

Ale and Beer.

"no alewife within this town shall from henceforth sell or cause to be sold any ale or beer above one penny the quart, and that they shall bring a full quart open, to the intent they shall use no deceit."

In 1581, February 5th, it was ordered that

"the Websters, Haberdashers and those of any other trade, from henceforth shall use nineteen pounds to the stone, and sixteen ounces to every pound."

Weights.

From various scattered notices we are able to form a tolerably accurate idea of the nature of the trade carried on in Liverpool in the sixteenth century. The principal intercourse was with Ireland, which led to the friendly exchange of privileges with Waterford and Wexford, the burgesses of each port being exempt from town's dues in the other. A considerable export of fish, principally herrings and salmon, was carried to Spain and Portugal, from whence wine was imported in return. Spanish iron was also brought in. On the 8th July, 1595, there is an entry

Nature of the Trade.

Ireland.

Fish.

Spain. Portugal.



Iron. "concerninge certen Iron to the quantitie and number of ffyve tonnes of Spanishe Iron brought hither by one Thomas Worrall a marchant, whoe demanded xv<sup>ii</sup> xv per tonne of the same, and to be clearlie discharged of all Customes and other charge conc'ninge the towne."

Other entries show that the import of Spanish iron was frequent. English iron was also dealt with. At a Convocation on January 11th, 1596, it is noted—

1596. English Iron. "For and concerning certain English Iron to the quantitie of xvii tonnes brought hither by one Mr Tuckie a marchant and by him offered to the towne as a comon towne bargain, w<sup>ch</sup> said Iron upon triall thereof made by t' hands of Thomas Bannaster at Mr Maior's appointan<sup>t</sup> was founde to be verie coarse mettaill, brickell, and verie unfitt for this place."

On the 20th November, in the same year, mention is made of

Commodities. "a certein barque latelie arrived at this porte from the West Countrie, called the Marie Grace, laden w<sup>th</sup> div'se and sundrie comodities and marchandizes, (as English iron, Traine, Tynne, Woade, Sugar, Sumiacke, Clothe, ffyshe and other things) whether the same p'misses be fitte and necessarie for a comon towne bargaine, the said comodities arrising in the wholl to the value or sume of a thousand pounds or thereabouts, as the m'chants thereof affirme."

Wool.  
Tallow. Wool and tallow were dealt in to a considerable extent. The incipient manufactures of Lancashire are recognised in their feeble commencement. In 1565 mention is made of a cargo consisting of 218 pieces of Manchester "small *cottons*," which were estimated at 14s. 6d. the piece. The texture here mentioned was not cotton in the modern sense, but *coatings*, whether of linen or woollen fabric.

Cottons. Notices of the shipping of the port are interesting, but not very numerous. In February, 1557-8, an order was received from the Privy Council that

Shipping.  
1558. "the Queens Majesty being informed that not only the French and Scots our enemies, but also others by their instigation do make great preparation as is supposed, to attempt some enterprise against Her Grace's Realms, hath therefore thought it convenient for the defence of the same to take order that immediately store be made of all kinds of

Levy.



ships and vessels, being her subjects within this realm, and also of all other her said subjects that hereafter shall happen to come. Wherefore these shall be, not only to desire you, but also in her Highnesse's name, straitly to charge and command you that forthwith you warn and straitly charge all owners of ships . . . . that none of them pass the seas . . . without special license; and that you do with all diligence, certify unto us the number of ships and other vessels within the port or creeks belonging to the same, what tonnage they be of, and likewise the number of mariners and seafaring men within the said port and creeks." 1558.

Signed by the Archbishop of York, the Bishops of Winchester and Ely, the Earls of Arundel, Pembroke, and Shrewsbury, and others.

The return made by the Mayor (Thomas More) certifies Return. that

"There is two ships within this port and haven belonging to the town, the one being of the burden of 100 tons, the other of 50 tons, with 7 other smaller vessels appertaining unto the said town, and creeks, now ready, stayed at this present by virtue aforesaid; and also four of the like burden betwixt ten tons and thirty, which as God sendeth them home shall be stayed by vertue aforesaid, and here be of mariners and seafaring men belonging to the same port, the number of two hundred which obtain their livelihoods by the sea, and thus the Holy Ghost always preserve your Lordships with much success and honour."

In 1565, there is a record that

1565.

"This year, Master John Crosse, Mayor was joined in communion with Sir Richard Molyneux Knt and Capt Piers for the safe keeping of a French ship and cargo of St Jean de Luz taken by Capt. Piers in the French Prize. Sarah, one of the Queen's ships, and also of a Spanish ship taken in the Spanish Prize. port of Liverpool, which ships at this present be laid in dock within Aterpole, and all the goods in the Tower of Liverpole."

The owners of the Spanish ship wished to redeem the property, and an assessment was made of the value. She was an old caravel of 70 tons burden, and was appraised, "with all her furniture and apparell," at the value of £75. Her cargo, consisting of 218 pieces of Manchester small cottons, alluded to above, was estimated at £158 1s. The ship and cargo were redeemed by the Master, John Desareno, of Bilbao, who thereupon sold them to Master Ralph Sekerston and his son Thomas, the price being left to arbitration.

1565.  
Return of  
Ships.

The same year a commission of inquiry was sent down to obtain a return of

"all ships and owners of any ships, vessels or boats as well in this the Queen's Majesty's Borough Corporate and Port town of Liverpool, as also in any town, haven, creek or landing place between Warrington and the water next Preston, called Ribble,"

with other information.

The return states the number of householders and cottagers on the 12th November, 1565, to be 138, being a reduction of 30 from 168, the original number of the burgages. The number of vessels belonging to the port was twelve. The largest 40 tons burden, with twelve men, the smallest a boat of six tons, with three men. Three craft hailed from Wallasey, of 24, 14 and 8 tons respectively.

Requisitions were sometimes made for the conveyance of troops to Ireland. An order in Council was addressed to the Mayor in 1579, to secure

1579.  
Requisition.

"so many ships and barques as shall or may come hereafter into that port or other place belonging unto you, and so that the same with such expedition as may, be put in a readiness with such mariners and convenient furniture for the transportation of the said forces which shall for that purpose make their repair unto you."

1590. In 1590, at the Port Moot Inquisition, there is the following entry:—

Clearances.

"Imprimis, the said Jurors are agreed, that evrie owner of anie shipp, barque, or other vessell shall enter his said Vessell w<sup>th</sup> the Town's Customer of this towne, owte gate and ingate, and shall give his invoice of all suche goods and m'chandizes of all and ev'ye p'son and p'sons not free of this Corporacon, w<sup>th</sup> they have aboard in pain of their fyne."



## STREETS, BUILDINGS, AND SANITARY PROVISIONS.

---

The original town, as set out by King John, consisted of <sup>Original Streets.</sup> two streets crossing each other at right angles, forming four arms, called respectively Castle Street, Jugler Street (afterwards High Street), Dale Street, and Water Street. The centre where they met was called the High Cross. Chapel Street and More Street (afterwards Tithebarn Street), and Mylne Street (afterwards Oldhall Street), were subsequently added, their intersection with Jugler Street being called the White Cross. So the town continued for many ages, with little improvement or extension down to the time of the Restoration.

In 1558, in appointing a committee of the burgesses, four <sup>1558.</sup> were selected from each of the four principal streets. These are repeatedly recognised in the records.

In 1565, seven streets are named, containing 184 tenements. <sup>1565.</sup> These returns, however, vary considerably from 184 down to 138 in the course of very few years.

In 1581 a subsidy was levied on the inhabitants, of whom <sup>1581. Subsidy.</sup> a list is given in the record. About 100 names are given, residing in six streets. There were doubtless many omitted who were too poor to contribute.

In the first chapter I have referred to the grants for paving, or rather the permission given to levy contributions for that purpose, previous to the sixteenth century.

In 1560, Ralph Sekerston being Mayor, a vigorous effort <sup>1560.</sup>

was made to mend the streets, the Mayor, it is recorded, "in his own proper person labouring himself."

1583. In 1583, the Jurors at the Port Moot Inquisition presented Wm. Secum, Alderman, late Mayor,

Repairing Pavement. "for not causing the highways to be repaired and amended the last year, according to the statute."

Likewise

"for not causing the dunghills or myddings within this town avoided, according to the order of the last Court."

1592. In 1592, the same authority resolves

"that the streetes of this towne shall be repaired and amended, where need is, but especiallie Chapel Streete."

1595. In 1595, at a Convocation in the Common Hall, it was resolved—

Paving. "Imp'mis for and conc'ninge the necessarie reparacon of the decaid p'te and place of the strets w<sup>th</sup>in this towne for pavinge of the same; whereupon it is agreed by consent of the whole house that the same decaid place of the pavements shalbe w<sup>th</sup> all conveniente expedicon geve in hand w<sup>th</sup> all. And that ev'y townes man havinge a teame shal serve w<sup>th</sup> the same half a daie a pece in due order and course, as the necessitie of the work shall require."

"It<sup>m</sup> that everie householder not havinge a teame, shall find a sufficient labourer, accordynge as the work shall fall oute, and as he and they shalbe required or appointed by Mr Maior, his deputie or baliff for the tyme beinge."

1601. In 1601, at an Assembly, April 6th, we find an

Repairs. "Item, concerninge the decaid place or p'te of the strete; it is agreed and thought good that a former order heretofore made and set downe in that behalf shall be observed and have continuance viz That ev'y inhabitant of this towne shall repaire, amend and maintaine the pavem<sup>t</sup> before his and their dwellinge houses, but for the place nowe decaid or broken and hereafter to be decaid in the strete before the closes of Mr John Crosse and all other such like grounds, the same to be repaired and amended at comon chardge of the whole towne."

Bridge. Down to the latter end of the seventeenth century, the only exit from the town eastward was by a bridge over the

Pool Stream, at the end of Dale Street, called the Town's End. The stream occasionally overflowed and changed its course. Orders were repeatedly given for its repair and improvement. Thus, under October 30th, 1589:—

1589.

“Item, that the water course shalbe clenſed, that runeth under the bridge at the Towne's ende, for that yt is gone from the right course.”

As an amusing contrast between the Liverpool of the sixteenth and of the nineteenth century, I may refer to an entry of the Port Moot, October 29th, 1590:—

1590.

“Item Wee are agreed and doe fynde yt verie necessarie and convenient that from henceforth all those inhabitants of this towne w<sup>ch</sup> occupie or use anie gorse or fearne, not havinge convenient place nor rowmthes for the settinge or placinge thereof neare or aboute their dwelling howses w<sup>th</sup>out danger of inconvenience or hurt, shall sett and place all the same gorse and fearne either beyonde the Castell, beyonde the Teithe Barn and at the Towne's end, upon pain of such fines as shalbe sett downe by Mr Maior for the tyme being.”

Gorse and Fern.

The road northward to Ormskirk passed through the fields at Kirkdale. The intercourse must have been remarkably sparse, for there is an entry, October 31st, 1597, to the following effect:—

North Road.

“Item, they finde it mete and convenient that the Heyward shall goe ev'y Thursday to the yate at Kirckdall, and that noe beast nor cattail shall be suffred to passe through the towne field coming from Ormskirke in the summer tyme.”

The town was occasionally visited with the plague, doubtless owing in great measure to the narrow ill-built streets and the defective sewage, but when the scourge was upon them the authorities were capable of acting with vigour and decision. Nothing could be better than the following provisions on a visitation of the plague in 1558:—

1558.

“It is ordered that all persons who may happen to be visited with the pestilence in the said town, that every of them shall depart out of their houses and make their cabbins on the Heath, and there to tarry from the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady until the feast of St Michael the Archangel; and from the said feast of St Michael unto the said feast of the Annunciation of Our Lady, to keep them on the back side of their

Plague.



Regulations  
against  
Plague.

houses, and keep their doors and windows shut on the street side until such time as they have licence from the Mayor to open them, and that they keep no fire in their houses, but between 12 and 3 of the clock at afternoon, and that no other person or persons be of family conversation or dwell with them upon pain of imprisonment; and to keep their own houses, and that they walk in no streets except for a reasonable cause; and their houses to be cleaned, dressed or dyght with such as shall be appointed by Mr Mayor for the safeguard of the town."

1559.

On the following January 13th, 1559, it was

Removing  
Sick.

"Ordered that Elyn Denton, widow shall avoid the town to some convenient place with all expedition until God send her health, and amendment of her disease, which is by estimation the plague."

1562.

1562, January 31st, Thos. Secum, Mayor.

No Lodgers.

"We find it convenient that every householder shall solely occupy his and their house and houses on their backsides except they be warehouses for merchants; we say not to take inmates or indwellers unto them, for that we find not to be for the commodity of the town, and Mr Mayor to see this executed and in the default of the same to pay to the common coffer 3<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> for every time."

Dunghills  
removed.

"Item, for the worship of the town we find it very expedient that all dunghills and middings be clearly and clean taken away being within the Mayor's walk; that is from the White Cross to the Castle, and from the house late of Rauff Wilme to the water side, before the feast of Pentecost next."

1567.

There seems to have been a gleam of prosperity about the middle of the sixteenth century. In 1567 there is an entry—

Increase.

"Forasmuch as by the means of buildings as also greater repair of people than in times past, the town is much troubled on market days with beasts and cattle, we find it needful that proclamation be made that from henceforth the beasts and cattle market be kept about the Castle and not in the town."



## ECCLESIASTICAL NOTICES.

---

The entries relating to Church affairs are very numerous. Liverpool was nominally in the Parish of Walton, and so continued down to 1699, but the connection was a very loose one. Beyond the levying of tithe in the lands within the borough, the parochial chapel was left in the hands of the Corporation of Liverpool, who appointed the incumbent and paid his stipend.

The first notice is in the reign of Henry VIII., which was also re-enacted in the reign of Mary (1558.)

1558.

"It is agreed by the Mayor and Bailiffs with a full consent of the whole Assembly of the Burgesses of Liverpool, that there shall be hired a clerk <sup>Priest.</sup> that can sing his plain song and prick song, and play on the organs—5 marks—and it is to be levied by force of one ley yearly to be gathered by the Bailiffs for the time being."

In the same year it was

"Ordered that the Priest of St John's altar for the time being shall <sup>Morning</sup> daily say mass between the hours of five and six of the clock in the <sup>Mass.</sup> morning, that all labourers and well disposed people minded to hear Mass, may come to the church to hear Mass at the said hour."

1555, April 26th.

1555.

"Mem. At this present Assembly came Wm Smythe of Liverpool before Sir Wm Norris Knt, Mayor and others of the Assembly, and there presented one will in parchment dated 3<sup>rd</sup> Feby 1525 made by Thos Gylle <sup>1525.</sup> of Liverpoole dec<sup>d</sup> whereby it appeareth certain copyhold lands, and <sup>Bequest by</sup> Burgage lands are given to certain intents to the Chapel of St Nicholas of <sup>Gylle.</sup> Liverpoole and to the Parochial Church of Walton and to the Chapel of Wavertree."

Then follow arrangements for the safe custody of the documents.

\* There is no record of a parochial chapel ever having existed at Wavertree.

Chuntries.

The four chantries in the chapel of St. Nicholas were confiscated by Henry VIII., but it would appear that the lands appertaining to the incumbency were not meddled with. In 1558, there is an entry on the record that the Mayor should yearly associate with himself twelve of the most honest men of the town, who shall view the Church lands and tenements to see that there be no waste nor decay.

1552.

In the 5th Edward VI. (1552) we find the following presentment of the Port Moot :—

Church  
Goods.

“Item, we ffinde that the Church goods shall be called fore, and put in a place togedd<sup>r</sup> to the towne's use and all the comyns of the towne may be p<sup>vy</sup> to the same.

Clerk.

“Item, we ffinde that the clerke of the churche ffrome his dep<sup>tyng</sup> oute of the towne in to Spayne shall have noe wagys of the towne.”

St. Nicholas.

The chantry rents had been disposed of or leased, and it appears from the documents that the Corporation held a lease of the chantry of St. Nicholas. On the 23rd March, 1591, we read—

1591.

“Item. Mr Maior received the notes or certificate of soe manie of the tenants of the late dissolved Chantrie of St Nicholas, of this towne, as did p<sup>fer</sup> and presente the same before him, to the intente to certifie the same unto Mr Asshton her Ma<sup>ties</sup> receivo<sup>r</sup>.”

St. Nicholas  
Chantry.

“1591, April 14<sup>th</sup> A Convocation in the Common Hall, before Mr Maior, Willm More, John Crosse Esquiers.

“At which Assemblie or Convocacon the matter touchinge the returne of the certificate of the lands of the late dissolved chantrie of Saint Nicholas w<sup>th</sup>in this towne of Lyverpoole was putt in question by Mr Maior. Whether yt were more requisite and conveniente that the retourne or certificate aforesaid should be made and sente unto Mr Asshton according to the late notes p<sup>ferred</sup> by the most parte of the tenants of the said chantrie lands accordinge to the Leasse, or accordinge to a l<sup>re</sup> devised in that behalfe by the councell and advice of Mr Halsall our recorder for div<sup>se</sup> good consideracons in excuse of the towne, (the copie of w<sup>ch</sup> said letter hereafter ensueth) And yt was thereupon concluded and agreed by a generall consente, That the same letter (then and there beinge openlie read) shoulde be ingrossed, made upp and for answer aforesaid certified unto Mr Asshton ; and Roger Rose to be the messenger to carie the same.

“The copie of w<sup>ch</sup> said Letter ensueth.

“ Righte Worshipfull, whereas at yo<sup>r</sup> laste beinge in Lyverpoole yo<sup>r</sup> Lands. pleasure was that I shoulde signifie to youe the contents of the Landes w<sup>ch</sup> wee holde by leasse of her Ma<sup>tie</sup>, beinge of the Chantrye of Sainte Nicholas in Liv’poole. Soe it is, and it please yo<sup>r</sup> worshippe that manie of the tenaunts are in Ireland and some of theim in London whereby I can neither informe youe nor my selfe of the contents thereof, nev’theles wee are to entreate yo<sup>r</sup> worshippe to be the meane for the towne of Liv’poole, that a Leasse of the p’mises may be graunted to the Mayor, 1591. Bailiffs and Burgesses for suche lyke tyme and consideracon as hathe Lease applied bene graunted and geven for the same afore tyme, and in soe doinge wee for. the saide Mayor, bailiffs and burgesses shall not onelie thinke o’selves greatlie indebted unto yo<sup>r</sup> worshippe, but also tyed to yo<sup>r</sup> commands.”

What the result was is unknown. There is no further entry on the subject.

The appointment of the incumbent was in the hands of Incumbent. the Corporation, and had probably been so from the erection of the church in the fourteenth century. In 1555, during the 1555. Catholic reign of Queen Mary, Sir Evan Nicholson was the priest.<sup>1</sup>

At an Assembly, August 12th, 1555, it was inquired how the priest should be answered of his wages, which had got Stipend. into arrear. This was respited, and continued to hang on for several years; for in 1559 it was ordered 1559.

“that Sir Evan Nicholson should receive the arrearages of the stipends and wages due.”

Sir Evan Nicholson, like the Vicar of Bray, seems to have Nicholson. gone with the times. In 1555 he was the Catholic priest. In 1559 he became the Protestant incumbent.

In 1581 we find Sir James Seddon installed as incumbent, 1581. but his appointment is not recorded. He seems to have been a pluralist, for on the 24th October, 1583, there is an entry on the record :—

“A note of the stipend or wage of S<sup>r</sup> James Seddon, clerk incum- Seddon. bent here, both how much and in what manner he is paid at Halton and here at Liverpool as followeth ”

<sup>1</sup> In the sixteenth century the parochial clergy usually had “Sir” prefixed to their names. Sir Hugh Evans and Sir Topaz will occur to Shakespearean readers.

|           |                                                                                                               |                                                    |                                                                                                                |
|-----------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Stipends. | “The said stipend paid at Halton is $\text{iiij}^{\text{li}}$ $\text{xvijs}^{\text{s}}$ $\text{v}^{\text{d}}$ |                                                    |                                                                                                                |
|           | Deducted viz                                                                                                  |                                                    |                                                                                                                |
|           | ffirst for a Debenter                                                                                         | $\text{xij}^{\text{d}}$                            | so there is paid clear at<br>Halton $\text{iiij}^{\text{li}}$ $\text{iijs}^{\text{s}}$ $\text{vij}^{\text{d}}$ |
|           | Postage                                                                                                       | $\text{iiij}^{\text{s}}$ $\text{x}^{\text{d}}$     |                                                                                                                |
|           | Messenger                                                                                                     | $\text{xij}^{\text{d}}$                            |                                                                                                                |
|           | Porter—                                                                                                       | $\text{xij}^{\text{d}}$                            |                                                                                                                |
|           | Garder & }                                                                                                    | $\text{xij}^{\text{d}}$                            |                                                                                                                |
|           | Clevicorde }                                                                                                  |                                                    |                                                                                                                |
|           | Acquittance                                                                                                   | $\text{viij}^{\text{d}}$                           |                                                                                                                |
|           | Going & Coming                                                                                                | $\text{ijs}^{\text{s}}$ $\text{iiij}^{\text{d}}$ ” |                                                                                                                |

This is not quite correct. The balance, according to the figures, would be £4 6s. 11d. The sum for postage 4s. 10d., looking at the difference in the value of money at the time, exhibits in strong light the difficulty of intercourse.

Dismissal. According to the records, Sir James Seddon was dismissed from his office. We read, under date August 24th, 1585 :—

Martyndale appointed. “Sir James Martyndale, being recommended by a letter from the right hon<sup>ble</sup> Henry Earl of Derby, was chosen as incumbent by a majority of 30 against 14 in the room of Sr James Seddon; at which Convocacon a great number of the burgesses, inhabitants within the same town were assembled.”

Sir James was not dead, for on the 3rd November following he was presented by the Port Moot Inquisition “for suffering the church yard to be spoiled with swine.”

1590.  
Janion. In 1590, Sir Hugh Janion was the incumbent. The Port Moot, on the 26th October, administer a rebuke to him in these words :—

“Howbeit wee thinke it not mete nor conveniente that he doe continewe his former accustomed journey soe often as he hath done to Chestr.”

1592.  
Presented. In 1592, he is again presented “for not kepinge the yate of the church yeord open at the tyme of divine service.”

This seems to have been a point of honour with the authorities, for it was ordered



"that the Clerke shall call to S<sup>r</sup> Hugh Janion for the kaye of the church yeord yate, and shall set open the same yate ev'y Sabaoth daye, and other festivall days at the second peale ringing, and shall also kepe doggs oute of the church at service tyme."

Sir Hugh Janion does not appear to have got on smoothly Complaints. with his parishioners. There are repeated entries of complaint against him. The shutting of the gate was a constant cause of dispute. In 1593 he is presented 1593.

"for cuttinge downe the greate thorne in the church yarde w<sup>th</sup>oute licence —pena est vi<sup>d</sup>."

In 1594 he is presented again 1594.

"for breakinge the order of the court anent the yate, and also for kepinge horses and kyne in the church yarde and not takinge away their donge."

The Corporation claimed the power of dismissing the incumbent. Amongst the

"Orders set downe by the xxiiij sworne burgesses,"

in 1594, occurs the following :—

"Item that S<sup>r</sup> Hugh Janion, clerke incumbent here, shall be and continue in his place duringe the tyme he useth him self well and in good sorte, but yet alwaies to be removed at th' appointment of Mr Maior and his brethren."

Again, on the 20th October, 1595—

1595.

"Item. Wee agree that if S<sup>r</sup> Hugh Janion doe dislike of his place or s<sup>r</sup>vce as not to be and continue in the same, or of suche stipend and wages as was yelded to his late p<sup>r</sup>decessor S<sup>r</sup> James Seddon, that then upon half a yeare's warninge thereof by him to be geven to the towne, or Notice. upon the like warninge to him to be geven by the towne for anie dislikinge of him, hee to be at libertie to dep<sup>r</sup>'te, and likewise the towne to entertaine anie other in his place at their pleasure. The stipend or wage paid by the towne to the minis<sup>r</sup> beinge iij<sup>li</sup> xiiij<sup>s</sup> v<sup>d</sup> shalbe paid at the feasts of the blessed virgin Marie and St Luke the evangelist by even porcons."

These disputes were temporarily set at rest by the death of Sir Hugh in 1596, when the Assembly elected Mr. Bentley in 1596.  
Bentley. his place, but the spirit of litigation still continued. The ancient dispute about the opening of the churchyard gate, to which so much importance appears to have been attached,

was revived. An an Assembly in the Common Hall, March 31st, 1598, there is an

1598.

Disputes.

"Item. Mr Bentley our incumbent or minister here, being called before Mr Maior at this Assemblie, p'tely concerninge open of the church yard yate at the tyme of Divine s'vice upon the Sabaoth and other festivall daies, and whether he be mynded to continue in his place as minister here, w<sup>ch</sup> questions beinge demaunded of him, he answered that bicause Mr Maior (before that time) had used some speaches to him, tendinge (as he did conceive of them) to a dischardge, he was therefore resolved, and had accepted the same as an absolute dischardge of his office, and therefore had p'vided an other place for him selfe, and not to staie anie longer than his tyme viz. St Luke's daie then next to come."

On the subsequent St. Luke's day, therefore, October 18th, 1598, there is a

1598.

Grant.

"Memorandum that at the same tyme Mr Bentley had graunted unto him the sūme of foure pounds of lawful money of England in consideracon of his charg<sup>s</sup> latly bestowed upon the stonne house in the churche yarde, to be paide him at the purificacon of the blessed Marie the virgin next cominge."

A fortnight after this (October 31st) there is the following entry :—

Wainewright.

"An Assembly in the Comon Hall. First concerninge a Minister in lewe of Mr. Bentley, whoe wente awaie of his owne accorde &c. Whereunto S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Wainewright by a comon consent was elected and admitted to be minister here, so that hee doe p'cure the consent of the Lorde bushoppe of Chest<sup>r</sup> thereunto."

Why Mr. Bentley is not dubbed "Sir," when all the other incumbents noticed during this century have the prefix attached, does not appear. No explanation is given.

1599.

School.

On the 22nd October, 1599, it is ordered—

"That S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Wainewrighte shall kepe schole here untill God sende us some sufficient learned man and noe longer, and to receive the wages to be deducted out of the Schole Maister's stipend according to the tyme."

1601.

1601. On the 6th April it is recorded—

"Imp'mis touchinge the wag<sup>s</sup> of the Minister and schole maister of this towne due to have been paied at the feast of th' annunciacon of the blessed Virgin Marie last past, and for that there is no money remaininge

in th'ands of the Bailiffe to dischardge the same, it is therefore thought <sup>Stipend.</sup> mete and convenient by the whole Assemblie, and so agreed upon, that a taxa<sup>co</sup>n as well for theis as other nedefull causes, and chieflie for the repara<sup>co</sup>n bothe of the Chapell and Com<sup>o</sup>n hall of this towne, shalbe forthw<sup>th</sup> taxed and laid, to the s<sup>u</sup>me of tenne pounds."

Disputes as to the mode of conducting divine service <sup>Disputes about service.</sup> were as rife in the sixteenth century as at the present day. Puritanism was gaining ground in the country, and any deviation in the direction of ritualism met with great opposition. It would seem that a practice had grown up of reading the lessons for the day in the chancel. Against this the laity, as represented by the Corporation, steadily protested. At the Port Moot Inquisition, October 26th, 1590, amongst the 1590.

"Orders appointed and sett downe by the said Jurors"

is the following :—

"Item, they fynde it necessarie and conveniente that the Chapters <sup>Reading the Lessons.</sup> shall be redd in the bodie of the church."

At a second Port Moot, on the 29th October, a Sunday having intervened,

"they p'sente finable, Mr Thos Whicksted late Maior of this towne for that he did not cause the curate to read the latter lesson in the bodie of the churche."

They also

"p'sente finable S<sup>r</sup> Hughe Janion the curate or incumbent here for that he dothe not reade the latter lesson at morninge and eveninge prayers in the bodie of the churche."

This order appears to have met with very slight attention, for we find it repeated in 1592 1592.

"that the chapters shall be read in the bodie of the church, that the people may heare them."

In 1610, the order is enlarged as follows :—

"We doe agree that both the chapters shalbe read in the bodie of the church at Divine s<sup>r</sup>vice tyme ev'y Saboth day and holydaye" 1610.  
Reading the Lessons.

"Item. We do agree that the Curate for the tyme being shall read the

Epistle and Gospel. Epistle and Gospell in the pulpytt ev'y Saboth day and holydaye, and that he shall (if there be no s'mon) in the same pulpytt reade an Homylie accordinge to the Canons."

1602. 1602, October 22nd—

Surplice. "The Portmoot Inquisition present Thomas Wainwright, Curate of Liv'poole for not wearing his surplis according to the king's injunctions."

Although the funds were so low that they were occasionally without money to pay the incumbent, they engaged a lecturer or preacher in addition to their regular minister. On the 21st June, 1591, is the following entry:—

Preacher appointed.  
Carter.

Contributions.

"At the Assemblie last above mentioned a motion was made by Mr Maior for and on the behalfe of Mr Carter the preacher, conc'ninge what alloweance the inhabitants of this towne will (of their owne voluntarie and free wills) yelde and give towards his better maintenance, in consideration of his greate good zeale and paines in bestowinge the good talents to him geven of God by his often diligente preachinge of God's worde amongeste us more than he is bounde to doe, but onelie of his mere good will, and the rather in regarde that he thinketh that stipend allowed him by Mr Alexand' Mollineux is verie slender for his maintenance, w<sup>ch</sup> motion soe made as aforesaid Mr Maior then declared was not to th' intent to have anie taxacon to be laide or imposed upon anie one save those which of good will would become contributories for such allowance and consideracon as they themselves and ev'ye one p'sent would willingly p'nounce and cause to be sett downe to be paide quarterlie during their pleasures, and the same to revoke, or otherwise to continue at their owne freewills and not otherwise. Whereupon Mr Maior w<sup>th</sup> his brethren and div'rs of the burgesses there p'sent did yelde to paye for one quarter of a yeare such sumes as are sett downe in a rolle deliv'ed to the Bailiff of this towne, wherein are conteyned manie other names ov' and besyde those w<sup>ch</sup> then did yelde to the said contribucon, to th' entente Mr Bailiffe should take the paines to know of them their myndes therein, w<sup>ch</sup> said first quarter taketh comensment at the feaste of St James th' apostle next."

1591. October 25th, 1591.

Stipend. "That Mr Carter the preacher, shall have paide unto him for his paines this present yeare upon the towne's charge the sume of foure pounds usuall money of England."

Clerk and Sexton.

There are many notices of the clerk or sexton, which appears to have been a joint office.



1589, October 27th. At a Port Moot Inquisition, the jurors make a presentment that

“they are agreed that the Sexton or Clerke shall have the wag<sup>s</sup> or Stipend. stypend w<sup>ch</sup> his father had when he supplied the office of the sexton, and that he shall kepe the clock and receive the yearly stipend of xiiij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> in lewe of his wages.”

Two of his duties are repeatedly insisted on—the ringing Curfew. of the curfew and whipping the dogs out of church. Thus it appears to have been an annual order at the commencement of every municipal year on St. Luke’s day (October 18th)—

“That the clark shall ring Curfie from All-hallows day (Oct 31st) beginning at vii of the clock, and to continue ringing half an hour every night until Candlemas day next coming” (the Purification of the Virgin, February 2nd).

The clerk required keeping to his duty, for we read an entry on October 24th, 1596— 1596.

“Item, wee agree that the Clerke shall have no wages onles hee loke Clock. well to the kepinge of the clocke, and that hee shall ringe or cause Curfewe to be rong” (as above).

The whipping the dogs out of church appears to have been rather a serious business, for it is repeatedly referred to, Dog whipping. and orders given accordingly.

There are repeated notices in the records during this century referring to the Free School. When the Chantry of Free School. St. Katherine was founded by John Crosse in 1515, provision was made for supporting a grammar school in connection therewith. After the confiscation of the chantries by Henry VIII. the revenues were received by the Crown, but on an application to Queen Elizabeth, in 1565, a grant was made out of Grant to School. these revenues towards the endowment of a free school, whereupon the Assembly of the burgesses resolved to supplement it by a voluntary assessment on the inhabitants. A list Assessment. of the assessments is given, which is curious as giving the



names of all the householders then resident. The total number was 151, and the amount of assessment £5 13s. 4d.

1566. In February, 1566,

Ore appointed. "John Ore, Bachelor of Arts was hired in London by Mast<sup>r</sup> Ralph Sekerston and others to be schoolmaster. He appeared before the Assembly on the 20<sup>th</sup> Feby and was admitted to enter and teach upon the proof and good liking, and to have for the year, sick and whole, ten pounds, to be paid quarterly."

1582.  
Ryle.

There seems to have been some falling off in the status of the office, for in 1582, John Ryle filled the position of schoolmaster and clerk, and was ordered to ring the curfew daily. In 1588 the salary was only £7 14s. 8d.

Chapel of the  
Key.

In addition to the church or parochial chapel of St. Nicholas, we have notices of another smaller chapel, probably of greater antiquity.\* Richard Blome, in his *Magna Britannia*, published in 1673, describing Liverpool, says :—

"Here is also a great piece of antiquity formerly a Chapel, now a free school, at the west end whereof next the river, stood the statue of St. Nicholas, long since defaced and gone, to whom the mariners offered when they went to sea."

1581. In 1581 there is an entry—

"We are agreed that the rents of the chapel of the key (quay) shall be paid to Mr Mayor to the use of the town as heretofore."

1582. In 1582, 22nd October, the jurors

"have agreed and presented that the little stone Chapel in the Churchyard shall remain to the town, and that Mr Hall at his pleasure receive the key of the same for the town's use and behoof."

This is no doubt the building referred to by Blome where the school was kept. It remained here until 1720, when the building was taken down and the school removed to a room in School Lane, which was built by Mr. Bryan Blundell as the first site of the Blue Coat Hospital. After the present Blue School was built, 1717-20, the room was let to the

\* *Vide supra*, p. 23.

Corporation for the purposes of the Grammar School, and here it continued down to about 1803, when the last master, Mr. Jno. Baines, died, and no successor was appointed.

In 1587, a curious controversy arose about precedence in the places in church, which is thus entered :—

Decr. 10th. "It was ordained, concluded and by the whole Assembly aforesaid agreed, That where some controversy, contention and variance hath been had and moved amongst divers women, as well the Bailiff's wives now being, as others whose husbands have heretofore supplied the same office, and chiefly for and about their place of kneeling or sitting in the church. That from henceforth she whose husband is and hath been Mayor of this said town (to wit) the most ancient in that degree shall take her place to sit or kneel in the church in the uppermost form or place within the same nearest to M<sup>rs</sup> Maiors for the time being, and so consequently every one of them of that degree and calling, to have her place, and so in degree one after another according to the succession of her and their said husbands in the said office of Mayoralty aforesaid. And in like manner she whose husband is Bailiff for the time being shall have highest place in that form where they have been and are accustomed to be and have their kneeling; and she, whose husband hath been the most ancient Bailiff the second place next unto her and so every one in degree according to their calling as is above expressed and limited for the Aldermen's wives for their degrees. And if the forms be not sufficient and large enough to contain them all; then she, whose husband was last offic' or being youngest in office to remove unto some other convenient place which to her or them shall be appointed by the commandment of Mr Mayor for the time being, or his deputy; and this order to have continuance from henceforth."

Precedence in Church.

Mayor's Wife.

Bailiff's.

Alderman's.

From these arrangements it is evident that the practice prevailed which still exist in some districts, of the men and women occupying different sides of the church. It is equally evident that no private pews were in existence.

Towards the end of the century, probably from the increase of the puritanic influence, the church regulations were strictly enforced. Thus, at the Port Moot, 23rd October, 1592, we read—

1592.

"Imprimis, wee p'sent finable Mr Maior, Will'm Golbrand and Thomas Kuype for lodginge m'chauntes and other gests, w<sup>ch</sup> absent themselves and do not come to the church according to her Ma<sup>ty</sup>s injunctions upon the Sabaoth dayes to divine s'vice."

Sunday regulations.

And again—

Item. "That there shall be no breakfasts nor tippling or drinkinge in anie tavernes nor alehouses at Morninge Prayer nor at the tyme of morninge prayer nor service tyme upon the Sabaothe daye upon paine of xij<sup>d</sup> to be levied upon the goodman or owner of the house for ev'y tyme offendinge; the moitie thereof to the fynder and the other moitie to the poore."

Again in 1592—

Irish  
Merchants.

"Wee order that the merchaunts of Ireland beinge w<sup>th</sup>in this towne upon the Sabaoth daies shall come to the churche to heare divine service, as others her ma<sup>ts</sup> subjects do upon paine of their ffyne."



## NATIONAL AND POLITICAL AFFAIRS.

---

There is in this portion of the town records very little reference to national affairs, which may be accounted for by the remoteness of the locality and the difficulty of access. Even at the stirring period of the Spanish Armada, when the whole country thrilled with excitement, the journals are remarkably meagre, and occupied with details of the most trifling and local character.

In 1551 a severe rebuke was administered to the port authorities for their disregard of the king's proclamation prohibiting the export of certain specified goods and merchandize. The document runs as follows :— 1551.

“To my frends the customers, comptrollers and searchers of the King's Ports of Chester and Lyv'pole Censure by  
Government.

“After hartie comendacons having daylie knowledge and experience that by the greediness and covetuous desyre of div'se p'sons, the comodities of this realme that be p'hibited both by p'clamacons and statut<sup>s</sup> ben daylie conveyed awaye, w<sup>ch</sup> ben taken and retorned againe, when they be halfe the seas over ; Whereby appeareth great negligence in youre and all other that have authoritie in his grace's parts to suffer such things to passe. And to me it is no lesse leyd by the Lords of the Counsell that have the charge of you that I for my p'te doe noe better look to yowe, w<sup>ch</sup> is not a litle lack to me and a gud cause to think unkindnes in yowe, that would by negligence bringe yo'selves to blame and p'ill, and me to prayinge yowe hartelie and in the king's behalfe straitlie, and charging yowe to see better to yo' office And charge that nothings passe that is p'hibited by statute and p'clamacon, onles you have speciall lycens and commandment therefore, as you will answer the king's ma<sup>tie</sup> at yo' p'ill and w<sup>th</sup>stand his Grace's displeasure in that behalfe, and the p'ill and forfaicture of your office. Thus fare you well.

“From London the ix<sup>th</sup> of September Anno D'ni 1551, that is Sexto Dwardi Sexti.

“yo' ffrende

“W WYLTESH<sup>R</sup>.”

1547.  
Election.

In 1547 the privilege of returning members to Parliament, which had been in abeyance since 1306, was restored, when Thomas Stanley and Francis Cave were elected.

1553.           1553, May 2nd.

"It appeareth that in the last quarter of Rauffe Bailie's Mayoralty, Queen Marie was proclaimed."

1560.

In 1560 a proclamation was issued, requiring all men of worship, gentlemen and freeholders,

Quo  
Warranto.

"to be at the church at Liverpool on Thursday Octr 10th at 9 o'clock and to bring with them such evidence as they had for the proof of the tenure of their lands, to be certified unto the Queen's Majesty's Court of Wards and Liveries, upon their peril."

There are many entries of subsidies and levies of soldiers.

In 1560 a requisition was made for the town to send

Bowmen.

"two able and well picked men meet for bows and arquebusses."

1565.  
Sir Henry  
Sidney  
embarks.

In 1565, Sir Henry Sidney was appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland, and in December set sail with a large convoy and forces. Part of the fleet took their departure from Liverpool, which is thus described in the record:—

"The Sacar one of the Queen's ships, Will<sup>m</sup> Peers, Gent. Captain of the same, departed forth of this port and haven with a merry wind for Dublin water for the safe conducting of the Queen's Treasurer, Sir Henry Sidney, Lord Leigh, Deputy of Ireland then being in Beaumaris there tarrying for the said Capt<sup>n</sup> Peers with other of the worshipfuls and their ladies and their train; with the said Captain and his company many fine trim and tall pickards from Liverpool and the coast, all charged with great horses, all fine apparel and other treasures, besides the worshipful company and all their costliness to a great abundance of riches. And Sunday morning then next after being windy, cold, frost and snow, misty, dark and dim, without ceasing, the snow driving and warping to and fro, that all Christian people called and cryed praying and making their most humble prayers unto Almighty to amend the weather so fearful and terrible and to save the aforesaid ships and barks and all the Christian people in them, but it continued all day; and about ten or eleven of the clock that Sunday at night suddenly sprung and rose the marvelloussest and terriblest storm of wind and weather, that continued about six hours to the great hurt of the commonalty; and their houses barns with many windmills clean overthrown and all to broken, with great hurt upon churches and chapels," &c.

Great Storm.



In March, 1567, a muster of soldiers was ordered, to reinforce the army in Ireland, when the following proclamation was issued in Liverpool :—

“Every one must have a cassock of blue watchet Yorkshire cloth, guarded with two small guards, stitched with two stitches of blue apiece; a very good yew bow and a sheaf of arrows in case, a red cap, a stag or stirk buckskin jerkin, a sword dagger, and every man to have 13<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> in his purse.”

Muster of  
Soldiers.

The levies of South Lancashire mustered in Liverpool, and were sent to Chester, where they were joined by the forces from Derbyshire, Staffordshire, and the Midland Counties. The Staffordshire uniform was red; all the others were dressed in blue. They were shipped, part in Chester and part in Liverpool, whence also 650 horse soldiers were despatched to Ireland.

In 1573, the Earl of Essex passed through Liverpool, and set sail for Carrickfergus to take the command of the Queen's army in Ireland. A detachment of his troops was left behind to follow him, when an *émeute* took place, very graphically described in the town's records, of which the following is the substance :—

1573.  
Earl of Essex.

“Magister Jno. Crosse, Armiger, Mayor

“Edward Bartley, esquire, Captain of the Motley Coats, and Roger Sydenham, gent. Captain of the Blue Coats, came to this town after the said Earl of Essex and his company were departed and sailed for Knockfergus, alias Carrickfergus.

“On the 4<sup>th</sup> day of September a grievous contention and discord sprang betwixt these two, Bartley and Sydenham; and Sunday morning next after, being 5<sup>th</sup> Sept, the same year, Roger Sydenham, Lieutenant of the Blue Coats, at his uprising, walking and coming forth of Roger Jameson's house, his host, with three or four of his soldiers, and the said Captain Bartley coming with a company of his Motley Coats, drew their swords and set upon the said lieutenant, and forced him and his men for safeguard of their lives to take in to the houses, where, against the ragious persecution and enterprise of the said Bartley, therein by the good shift of the roof of the same house, the said Sydenham and his men all but one were conveyed into a high loft or chamber by the ladder, and so they drew up the ladder up to them in the said loft, and so escaped death, as pleased God, but that one soldier which was stayed in the house was all to much swinged and beaten, kneeling upon his knees bareheaded, calling and

*Emeute* and  
Riot.

Blue Coats  
and  
Motley Coats.

Bartley and  
Sydenham.

crying out most woefully for mercy and pardon of life. In these the said Captn Bartley caused that soldier Blue Coat to be set in the stocks at the High Cross, and caused a cantel of a chest board to be nailed to his side and there was watched with a dozen tall bills of this town.

“Roger Sydenham, poor gentleman, was in cover all the while. It is long to repeat and more to rehearse, the riot, tumult and disorder of the said Capt. Bartley and his Motley Coats and over tedious to write of the spoils of both motleys and blue coats as well abroad in the country hereto adjoining as within this town.

Muster of  
Townsmen.

“Truth is, there was such insurrection stirred by the said Capt. Bartley as the like was never seen in the town and this country, for to be short, Mr Mayor and all the town suddenly as pleased God Almighty were ready upon the heath of this town, every man with their best weapons, so as by good chance every householder being at home Sunday morning, eager as lions, made show almost even like to the number of the said captains and all their soldiers; so as the captains and all their men being arrayed and there upon the said heath, the said Capt. Bartley and all his gentlemen moved Mr Mayor to order all in good part, and to think no other but all shall be well and quiet, and so passed; and after the said battle array, Mr Captain showed all gentleness and courtesy to Mr Mayor, and came up to the town in friendship and amity; and after all this done, the captains and their soldiers were more gentle to deal with all the while they abode within the town.”

1574.  
Essex's Army.

In 1574, in a letter to the Mayor, entered upon the records, a pitiful account is given of the results of the expedition of the Earl of Essex. The letter describes

Distress.

“the evil luck and grievances the Earl and his soldiers suffered and took at Knockfergus in the north of Ireland after their arrival. I dare not nor am able to pen it directly and orderly. I do omit it therefore. But most miserably poorly and lamentably many of the poor soldiers were licensed and returned to England again by ships and pickards; some sailing to the Isle of Man; some as pleased God died pitifully, some came to land at Peel of Foudrie, and some dying upon the seas aboard the ships and baroques. Some got direct to Liverpool, by the George of Liverpool, Thos Winstanley, Captain,”

the expenses and charges of whom the writer sets forth.

These Elizabethan wars in Ireland were a continual source of trouble and expense to the burgesses of Liverpool.

1595.

1595, July 8th.

“Open and publique warning was geven by Mr Maior to all victuallers and Inne keepers to make p'sente and undelaied p'paracon for the receipte of the soldiers and horsemen w<sup>th</sup> theire horses appointed to be here at diet untill the tyme of theire embarquing for her Ma<sup>ties</sup> S<sup>r</sup>vce in Ireland.”

The same year, October 20th—

“Wee do agree that all owners of shippes and barques w<sup>thin</sup> this towne that do or shall from henceforth bringe anie sicke or diseased soldio<sup>rs</sup> ov<sup>r</sup> on Restrictions from Ireland, shall not lande therein nor anie of them before notice thereof Passengers. be geven to Mr Maior of this towne or his deputie for the tyme beinge upon paine of their fine—pena posita est iij<sup>s</sup> iij<sup>d</sup> toties quoties.”

Repeated precepts were directed to the bailiffs for the levying of subsidies for these miserable wars. One specimen Subsidies. may suffice:—

“1581. To the Bailiffs of Lyv'poole and either of them.

1581.

“By virtue of the Queens Majesty's most honourable Commission to us and others directed for the taxing, rating and levying of a subsidie granted to her Majesty at the Parliament holden in the 23<sup>rd</sup> year of her most happy reign, we, in her Majesty's name do straitly charge and command you, not only to bring before us at Wigan upon Wednesday next, being the tenth of May by nine of the clock in the afore noon of the same day six of the most substantial men within your township, But also a true presentment of all the names of such persons as in Lands have to the yearly value of xx<sup>s</sup> and above, and goods three pounds and upwards remaining and dwelling in your said town or hamlet. Failing not hereof, at your uttermost peril. Given under our hands this of May the iij<sup>th</sup> 1581. Return of Assessments.

“Your very loving friends

“EDWARD STANDYSHE.

“RAUFFE ASSHETON.”

These repeated impositions became at last so onerous that the sturdy burgesses of Liverpool, who have never lacked courage in the defence of their rights and privileges, determined to make a stand against the levy of men. The incident is rather a remarkable one, and deserves setting out at length.

“1601, Aug 4th. Johes Bride, gen<sup>s</sup> Maior.

1601.

“An Assemblie in the Comon hall of this towne of Liv'poole the daie and yeare above written, before the Maior above named, and certain Aldermen, Bailiffs and a competent number of the bailiffs peares and other burgesses of the same towne, Concerninge a p'cept sent from S<sup>r</sup> Cuthbert Halsall, knight, high shereffe of the countie of Lanc', S<sup>r</sup> Richarde Molineux knight and S<sup>r</sup> Richarde Houghton, knight, her Ma<sup>ties</sup> Justices of the peace w<sup>thin</sup> the said countie of Lanc' conc'ninge the levyinge of the porcon of eight pounds imposed upon the whole parishe of Walton towards the furnishinge forth of souldiers for her Ma<sup>ties</sup> warres in her highnes realme of Irelande, and also comandinge by the said p'cepte to bringe before the saide S<sup>r</sup> Richarde Molyneux at the Castell of Liv'poole aforesaid the number of twelve sufficient and s<sup>r</sup>viceable men of Lev Register.

the most experienced in their peec<sup>s</sup> to be there mustred &c the copie of which L<sup>r</sup>e ensueth

“Concerninge w<sup>ch</sup> said L<sup>r</sup>e it is agreed at and by the whole Assemblie above menconed that a taxa<sup>con</sup> shalbe laid and forthw<sup>th</sup> taxed and levied w<sup>th</sup> in this said towne as well for o<sup>r</sup> por<sup>con</sup> of the said viij<sup>li</sup> as also for and towards the supplie of div<sup>s</sup> other things verely nedefull to be done w<sup>th</sup> in the same towne to the s<sup>um</sup>e of sixe pounds.

“Item for the musteringe or bringing of anie men as by the said p<sup>ce</sup>pte is comanded, yt is by the whole Assemblie thought mete and conveniente not to yelde thereunto nor to bringe anie men of this towne at all, but rather to stand uppon and maintaine our privileg<sup>s</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> wee have both by ch<sup>re</sup> and the Lawes of this reame, and for that wee s<sup>ve</sup> her Ma<sup>tie</sup> by sea, and in this so doinge the towne will save Mr Maior harmeless from all indemnities that shall or maie happen to fal or arise thereof in the defence of the same ”

Further  
Resistance.

“And at another Assemblie in the said Comon haule the sixte daie of August then next following before Mr Maior above named, having with him Mr Leonard Chorley esquier o<sup>r</sup> recorder, Mr Robert Moore and the gent. above named, w<sup>th</sup> a greater number of free burgesses than were at the other Assemblie above menconed, and beinge demaunded by Mr Maior and Mr Recorder whether they wolde yelde to the motion made by the saide S<sup>r</sup> Richard Molineux, knight according to the said p<sup>ce</sup>pte or noe, they all denied to yelde thereunto w<sup>th</sup> a gen<sup>all</sup> voice, although beinge p<sup>sw</sup>aded by Mr Maior, Mr Recorder and a fewe others to yelde thereunto; whereupon Mr Maior caused them all to be called by pole; howbeit it wold nothing p<sup>va</sup>ile to dissuade them from that w<sup>ch</sup> they had spoken form<sup>ly</sup>.”

There are no minutes entered during the mayoralty of Egidius Brooke, 1601-2, hence there is no record of the result of this recalcitration against the levy.





## MANNERS AND CUSTOMS.

---

The records contain many incidental notices of the manners, customs, and tone of thought of the period. A few of them may be brought under review.

1558. Marriages appear to have been usually celebrated Marriages.  
in the guild or town hall. It is ordered—

“That the stewards of this hall or guild shall gather, demand, and take, of every wedding and celebration of marriage to be made within this hall xvi<sup>d</sup>.”

1565. A record is entered of a marriage between one Marriage Settlement.  
Gilbert Martyn and a widow; and an agreement is registered whereby the husband covenants “to pay to the eldest son of the previous marriage on his attaining the age of 14 years xxx<sup>s</sup> of good and lawful money, also one brass pot, price vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>, and a brass pan price iij<sup>s</sup> iv<sup>d</sup>; to the eldest daughter xl<sup>s</sup> ready money, a silver piece, price xx<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>, a pair of amber beads with silver jewels, price xx<sup>s</sup> and a brass pot, price vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>, four pieces of pewter, price v<sup>s</sup>; and to the youngest daughter xx<sup>s</sup> of ready money.”

Apprentices and servants were kept under strict rule.

Apprentices.

1565. “We order that no manner of person abet, receive or succour 1565.  
by cover or operte, any apprentice or servant at any time day or night, within the liberties of this town contrary to the will and pleasure of any such master or dame on pain of vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>”

Also,

“That no manner of apprentice or servant shall depart out of their master's or dame's house after eight of the clock after the sunsetting, unless it be upon his master or dame's business on pain of imprisonment.”

The wages of labour were regulated by authority.

Wages.



1592, October 23rd.

“Item, that noe workeman or labourer at husbandry or other labour, shall take for his or their day wag<sup>s</sup> above three pence between Michaelmas and Candlemas.”

1594. This regulation is repeated, with the further proviso that

“from Candlemas to Michaelmas the wages shall be four pence the day and not above.”

Beggars.

Beggars were a source of trouble in the sixteenth century, as they have been ever since, and the more so at that period, as the Poor Law of the 43rd Elizabeth had not yet been enacted.

1592, March 10th.

Regulations.

“At the Assemblie holden in the Comon hall it was ordered, concluded and agreed by the wholl Assemblie that from thenceforth there shall none of the poore people of this towne (being ordinarie wanderers and goers abroad for relief) be suffred or p'mitted to begge except onely suche as shall (from tyme to tyme) be thereunto admitted and licenced by Mr Maior of this towne for the tyme beinge w<sup>th</sup> the assente and consente of his bretheren the aldermen of the same or twoe of them at the least, and this order to have continuance.”

1598, June 12th. At a Convocation or Assemblie in the Comon haule

House of  
Correction.

“It was agreed by all the Assemblie that a howse termed a ‘Howse of Correction’ shoulde be had and taken for the poore people aforesaid. Whereupon motion was made to Mr Rob<sup>t</sup> More abovenamed by Mr Maior, whether hee wold lett unto the towne his howse at the Poole, called the Poole Howse for that purpose upon a reasonable rent, whereunto the said Mr More agreed and so in ende it was agreed by and betwene Mr Maior and the whole Assemblie, and the said Mr More, that he should have the yearely sūme or rente of twenty shillings for the said howse.”

Provision for  
Poor.

Item. “It is agreed as above that the poore impotente people and children, whose names are set downe in a catalogue to be relieved within this said towne shall have licence to goe abroad w<sup>th</sup>in the towne in such sorte and to such howses w<sup>th</sup>in the sev'all stretes of the same as hereafter shall be limited and appointed.”

Penalties for  
Harbouring.

Item. “It is further agreed as above that whoesoever hee or they bee householders w<sup>th</sup>in this towne that from henceforth shall lodge or gyve

harbourough to any rogues or other vagarant p'sons p'hibited by the Lawes and statuts in that case p'vided shall suffer the penalties of the said statuts and orders."

Item. "That noe poore p'sons or p'son whatsoever within this towne shall from henceforth followe any gentleman or other stranger repairinge or that shall come unto this said towne to th' intent to begge or crave any alms or benevolence as heretofore hathe bene verie disorderlie used, but shall forbear the same, and that a poore mans boxe shalbe p'vided for their relief." Begging prohibited.

"Scolders and chiders," especially amongst women, have always occupied a prominent position in the police courts. This is the way in which they were dealt with three centuries ago. Scolds.

1587, December 10th.

"Item, concerning scolders and chiders to the nuisance of their neighbours. It is ordered and agreed as above, that all such as shall from henceforth be found offenders in that behalf shall be punished as ensueth, videl' every offender aforesaid duly approved and found by sufficient testimony of witness, shall either pay the sum of ten shillings in money, or else to have and suffer imprisonment by the space of ten days without bail or mainprize at the discretion of the Mayor of this town for the time being or his deputy. And that there shall not be any wine, beer, ale, or other kind of drink brought or conveyed to any such prisoner or prisoners during the time of their imprisonment, except only their due and ordinary meals, which shall be sufficient for their ordinary diet and not otherwise, upon such penalties as therefor shall be imposed and assessed by Mr Mayor or his deputy upon the bringers and senders thereof, and this order to have continuance from henceforth." Fines. Imprisonment

Particular attention was directed to the preservation of female virtue by stringent measures against its infringement. Regulations are very numerous with regard to "*Inmakes*,"<sup>1</sup> which, though not explained, evidently means women of loose character. Inmakes.

At a presentment of the Port Moot Inquisition, October 26th, 1587, it is ordered—

"That there shall not any woman being with child come into the town to stay and abide within the same until she be delivered, nor be suffered

<sup>1</sup> This word is by no means common, and is not to be found in any of our dictionaries. "*Inmate*" is defined by Johnson and Bailey as a lodger. *Mace*, in Anglo-Saxon, is a wife.

to make her abode to that intent upon pain of such penalty as shall be set down by Mr Mayor."<sup>1</sup>

"That all those who keep or succour any Inmakes within this town shall avoid the same Inmakes or cause them to be avoided on this side or before the feast of St Andrew the Apostle next ensuing, upon pain of their fines."

1596. 1596, March 29th.

Catalogue.

"Item, conc'ninge Inmaks w<sup>th</sup>in this towne, it is agreed that a catalogue or note shalbee taken of all such Inmaks as are nowe w<sup>th</sup>in this said towne, and that all suche of them as have not hadd continuance here above three yeares (or founde to bee unfitt members) shalbe expelled, and shall have a reasonable tyme for their avoidance geven them. And further it is agreed at this Assemblie and by the same, That from henceforth noe inhabitant of this towne shall receive anie strang<sup>r</sup> into his howse as tenantes to anie of them (so receivinge anie such straanger) will and doe undertake for the good and honest demeano<sup>r</sup> and sufficient abilitie of ev'y suche one as shalbe so received, to be able and sufficient to lyve upon their owne, without charginge the towne w<sup>th</sup> anie their families or familie. And this to be done and acknowledged before Mr Maior for the tyme being before anie such receipt or admitment be had or made."

Strangers.

This regulation reads as if it was intended for lodgers of both sexes, but the next entry proceeds further:—

Char  
Women.

"Item, conc'ninge all such yonge Wemen and others called Charr Wemen in this towne as are in noe service, whereof div'se of late tyme have bene gotten w<sup>th</sup> childe, shall ev'y of them place themselves in some good and honest s<sup>v</sup>ice, or els be avoided together (in mann<sup>r</sup> and forme as is above sett downe for the Inmaks) w<sup>th</sup> the same Inmaks."

1597. 1597, October 31st, the Port Moot Inquisition

Searchers.

"fynd it mete and convenient that Mr Maior doe appoint foure sufficient men to take a vewe through the towne for Inmaks, and to p'sent all the same at the next Court of Passage aft<sup>r</sup> to be holden."

1588, November 14th.

"Jane Wignall, widow, fined for keeping an Inmake within her house iii<sup>s</sup> vii<sup>d</sup>. and the Inmake in xij<sup>d</sup>."

Of the same nature is the following regulation:—

1582. 1582, October 22nd. Port Moot Inquisition.

"They are agreed that every inhabitant within this town having any

<sup>1</sup> It might be supposed that this regulation was made to prevent any settlement giving a claim to parochial relief; but this could not be the case, as no Poor Law then existed.

guest in their houses, if the same guest or guests shall happen to stay over one night and a day, then he or they in whose house or houses they shall so stay shall give or cause warning to be given to Mr Mayor or his deputy.” Guests.

1597, October 31st—

1597.

“ Wee p’sent Walter Chambers finable for receiving straungers to ov’chardge the towne, pena xij<sup>d</sup>. ”

The Port Moots at which most of these regulations were passed, were very jealous of their authority, as the following entry will show :—

1598, October 23rd.

“ Item, we p’sent Richarde Mosse, finable for standinge under the churche wall, listning and harkeninge to heare what we the saide Juro<sup>rs</sup> did saie.” Eaves Dropping.

Not only the morals but the religious observances of the community were carefully watched over. In 1566 a proclamation of the Queen was published in Liverpool enforcing the abstinence of eating flesh in Lent. This it would appear was to a great extent disregarded, whereupon, in 1572, a more stringent mandate was issued as follows :—

1566.  
Proclamation  
about Lent.

1572.

“ Whereas divers orders have been heretofore taken by public proclamation or otherwise, also by letters privately from us for the forbearing from killing dressing and eating of flesh in the time of Lent, and upon other usual days ordained for the eating of fish, which notwithstanding by means of licensing, and other indirect dealings have not been well observed nor taken that effect that reason and good policy hold ; this is to signify unto you, and we now again expressly write unto you and the rest of the Justices of the Peace, that you give good diligence and consult and debate by what ways and means the said former orders for the forbearing of eating of flesh upon fish days and especially in Lent may be kept and observed.”

For this purpose bonds or obligations were directed to be entered into by butchers, innholders and victuallers against killing, dressing, and suffering to be eaten any beef, mutton, veal, or other meat commonly sold, under pain of forfeiture. Exception was made for such as were notoriously sick or otherwise weak of stomach.



Amusements. Frequent references occur in the records to the recreations and amusements of the townsfolk.

Waytes. Mention has been made above of the appointment of the Wayte or Musician as one of the town's officers.<sup>1</sup> Originally, and during the sixteenth century, he was a bagpiper. In 1571. October, 1571, it is recorded—

Bagpiper. "This day Lewis Lockwood, Bagpiper was admitted Wayte of this town during pleasure, and got the towns badge delivered to him, but through his misconduct it was taken from him to his extreme grief, but upon his repentant submission it was restored to him to be held during pleasure."

On the appointment of Henry Clennes in 1583, it was ordered

Duties. "that he shall play at every man's door that hath borne office."

In the following year we read:—

"Henry Clennes finable for that he doeth not use to play at every man's door that hath borne office in the town, according to the order made in that behalf by the last Port Moot xxiiij jurors."

1610. 1610, October 22nd.

Regulations. "We do agree that the Wayte shall goe about the towne, at the tymes and howers accustomed, both evening and morninge, and so often as he makes default therein, he shall pay, for ev'y default iiij<sup>d</sup>, and the same to be gathered to the use of the poore of the towne."

1598. His duties, however, were limited to the week days, for on the 12th June, 1598, it was resolved by the Assembly—

"That there shalbe no pypinge nor daunsinge upon the Sabaoth daies except it be at after eveninge praier."

Bowling. Bowling has always been a favourite recreation in Liverpool and the neighbourhood, and still continues to be so to some extent, but it does not appear in its inception to have been looked upon with favour. In 1583, amongst the presentments of the Jurors at the Port Moot is one of

"Richard Mather the elder, for kepinge a bowlinge alley and mens sonnes and s'vants to bowle therein vi<sup>d</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> *Vide supra*, p. 61.



In 1586, October 24th,

1586.

“ William Golbrand and Robert Ball were presented for bowling on the Sabaoth day.”

However scrupulous our predecessors of the sixteenth century might be on the dubious question of bowling, they had no hesitation as to cock - fighting. In 1567, it is ordered by the Assembly that

Cock  
Fighting.

“ for the further and greater repair of gentlemen and others to this town, we find it needful that there be a handsome cockfight pit made, and also the butts and stocks kept in due reparation.”

Horse racing was also patronised. It is recorded in the minutes, under date of 1577—

Horse  
Racing.

“ This year on the holy day of the Ascension there was a running of horses at Liverpool for a silver bell given by Mr Ed. Torbock of Torbock to be run for every year under the patronage of the Mayor.”

The course—four miles—was on the shore near Bank Hall. The bell on this occasion was won by Mr. Davenport's horse.



## CHAPTER THIRD.

FROM THE ACCESSION OF JAMES I. (1603) TO THE  
RESTORATION (1660).

THIS may be considered the transition period in the history of Liverpool. The earlier portion, or rather the greater part of it, is purely mediæval in its character, but at its close those influences had already commenced which gave the onward impulse which has continued to the present day.

For the purpose of illustration, I think I cannot do better than group the extracts according to the subjects to which they relate, as was done in the last section. We begin as before with the

### MUNICIPAL AFFAIRS.

Much stress was laid on form and ceremony at the meetings of the Municipality. Thus in an entry

1610, October 25th :—

Attendance of  
Burgesses. “Item, that all Burgesses of this towne shall give their attendance of Mr Mayor at both the fayres and at Midsom<sup>r</sup> accordinge to the antient order of this towne upon payne of their fynes. And that the Wayte shall give one howers warninge in gowinge through the streets.”

1612, October 26th.

Officers’  
Halberds. “Item, We agree that the Hall Kep<sup>r</sup>, Sub-Custom<sup>r</sup> and all other officers w<sup>ch</sup> heretofore have ben accustomed to carry halberds, shall according to form<sup>r</sup> orders attend Mr Maior to the Church and Markett, and all other occasions, as often as need shall require with their halberts.”

1610.

Under the date of 1610, the respective oaths taken by

the members of the municipality are set forth in detail. They were first enacted in 1582. It will be seen how carefully they were framed to preserve the exclusive privileges of the freemen and the independence of the local courts.

“THE OATH OF THE BURGESS OF LIVERPOOLE.

“Youe shall be true and faithfull subject to our Sov’aigne lady the Quene’s Ma<sup>tie</sup> that nowe is, and to her heires and successors, and no treason do, procure or comitte, or knowe to be procured done, or committed w<sup>th</sup>in this towne and liberties thereof, but you shall w<sup>th</sup> all convenient speede do the Maior of this towne to wete thereof. You shall also from tyme to tyme as occasion shall require, aide, assist and obey as well the Maior of this towne as all other her Maties officers within the same under the said Maior in the due and lawfull execucon of their sev’all offices, and especially concerninge the preservacon of her highnes peace, the observacon of good orders, and the maintenance of the aunciente and lawdable privileges, franchises, liberties and customes of this towne, which said liberties and customes youe shall further and increase to your powre and best endeavoure. Youe shall lykewise by no coloure, covin, or deceipte, free anie forrenier or the goods, cataills or marchandizes of anie forrenier or other p’son whatsoever not free within this towne, in the name of yo<sup>r</sup> proper goods, cataills, or merchaundize, whereby the Quene’s Majesties custome, her heires and successors, and the custome of this towne or either of them shall or maye in anie wise be impeached, empayred, hindred, delaied, or embeselled. You shall further be leiable and contributorie at all tymes necessarie, to all reasonable & convenient taxacons and payments w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe assessed upon youe amongst other the burgesses, freemen and inhabitants of this towne, as well for the maintenance and furtherance of the said franchises and liberties of the towne and porte of Liv’poole & other necessities thereunto incident or appertainynge, as also for the upholdinge and reparacon of the Chapell within the same called the Chapell of our lady and Sct Nicholas, accordinge to the auncient orders uses and customes of this towne in that behalf used. And furthermore youe shall not impleade or sue anie free man of this towne dwelling within the same at anie other courte oute of the jurisdiction of the Maior’s courte of this towne, for anie matter or thinge whatsoev’ whereof the said Maior’s courte, by the aunciente usage thereof may hold plea, onles it be for want of justice and righte to be ministred. And if you shall knowe or heare of any unlawfull congregacon, conventicle, assemblie, riotts, routs, or other disordered tumults to be had or made or lyke to be procured had or made by daye or by nighte w<sup>th</sup>in this towne and liberties of the same, to the disturbance of the peace of our sov’aigne Lady the Quene’s Ma<sup>tie</sup> her heirs or

Oath of  
Burgess.  
1610.

successors you shall give warninge & notice therof to the Maior or to his deputie or Bailiff with all speede. And all and everie other thinge and things which shall either touch or concerne the advauncement & p'ferm<sup>t</sup> of the Comon wealth and state of this towne, or shall appertaine and belonge to be done or observed by a good and honest burgesse and freeman of the same, youe shall for your parte do, accomplish, fulfill, performe and observe to the best of your habilitie, power, knowledge and wille, as helpe youe God and the contents of this boke."

1653. In 1653, during the Commonwealth, this oath was altered and shortened, substituting the Commonwealth for the Crown.

"THE OATHE OF THE MAYOR OF LYVERPOOLL.

Mayor's Oath.  
1610.

"Youe shall depose to be true liege man unto the Queene's Majestie o' Sovereigne Ladie, and noe treason doe, or knowe to be done unto her Majestie, but that w<sup>th</sup> all spede you shall geve knowledge to her grace's Privie Councill. And alsoe youe shall execute the office of the Mayor of this her Majestie's towne of Lyverpooll unto the nexte election daye, and to the uttermoste of yo<sup>r</sup> power and knowledge you shall execute or cause the Queene's Mat<sup>ies</sup> lawes executed w<sup>th</sup> true and indifferent justice w<sup>th</sup>oute feare, mede or drede, favoure or affection. And alsoe all Acts and Estatutes made by the Queene's highnes and her most noble progenitours, kings and queens of this realme and theire honorable councells, you shall execute or cause to be executed w<sup>th</sup>in this towne, the franchises and liberties thereof, to the beste of yo<sup>r</sup> power and knowledge. And furthermore, all liberties of this Towne and franchises thereto appertaigninge, you shall mainetayne to yo<sup>r</sup> power. And also you shall see that all inferior officers of this Towne doe their dueties in their offices. And suche as doe offende punishe accordinglie. And furthermore, that you shall not of yo<sup>r</sup> self make anie newe Acte or order w<sup>th</sup>in this Towne and Liberties of the same, onles you have th' assent and consente of suche as have bene Maiors of this Towne, w<sup>th</sup> the consente of the most aunciente burgesses threof. And alsoe all other thing and things that doe appertaigne to the office of a Mayor of a Corporacon and a libertie, you shall minister or cause to be putte in due execucon to the beste of yo<sup>r</sup> knowledge.

"Soe helpe you God, and by the contents of that Boke."

The oaths of the other officers are in the same strain *mutatis mutandis*; but it is worth while to quote that of the Churchwarden, who, at this time and for long after, was regarded as a corporate officer.

## " THE OATHE OF THE CHURCHWARDEN.

" You shall dulia and trulie execute the office yf Church warden of this Church-warden's Oath.  
towne of Liv'pooles untill the next elleccōn day. You shall doe yo<sup>r</sup> endeav<sup>r</sup> and diligence from tyme to tyme, during the tyme of yo<sup>r</sup> office, that all good orders belonging to the same be obs<sup>'</sup>ved and kept w<sup>th</sup>in the Church or Chappell of this said towne, and Church yard of the same, and speciallie upon the Saboth daye at the tyme of dyvine s<sup>'</sup>vice and other festivall dayes. And if any p<sup>'</sup>son or p<sup>'</sup>sons doe or shall wander or walke in the Church yard at Dyvine S<sup>'</sup>vice tyme, or wilfullie or obstinatlie absent or withdrawe himselfe or themselves from dyvine s<sup>'</sup>vice upon any the dayes aforesaid, Then shall you not onlie by sp<sup>'</sup>ciall warninge appoint and charge them to repayre unto the Church but see that it is soe done accordinglie. And alsoe if you shall heare, know or understand of any p<sup>'</sup>son or p<sup>'</sup>sons that doe frequent or use any Tavernes, Alehouses or other Tipplinge or drinking place at the tyme of Dyvine S<sup>'</sup>vice upon any of the dayes aforesaid, you shall give sp<sup>'</sup>ciall warnynge as well to the house holders wher the same is or shalbe used, as also to the offenders therein for reformation thereof to be had. And if upon such yo<sup>r</sup> warnynge geven they doe not amend the same, Then shall you from tyme to tyme as occasion shall require p<sup>'</sup>sent the offenders or offender as to yo<sup>r</sup> office and duetie app<sup>'</sup>teyneth, w<sup>th</sup>out any favor, affeccion feare, dread or mede. And of all such duties and money as shall come to yo<sup>r</sup> hands, or shalbe due to be taken or receaved by you conc<sup>'</sup>ninge yo<sup>r</sup> said office, you shall collect and gather, and thereof make a just and true accompt and undelayed paym<sup>'</sup>t when you shalbe thereunto reasonable called and requyred by the Maior of this towne or his deputie for the tyme beinge and these &c So helpe you God."

It will have been seen by the records quoted in the second chapter, that in 1580 a resolution was adopted in Common Hall of the burgesses, to supersede the general assemblies by the election of a Council of thirty-seven members, with power to fill up vacancies. For a time, however, general assemblies of the burgesses continued occasionally to be held. 1580. Council appointed.

In 1625 a list of the Council is given, containing forty-seven names. Some dispute appears to have arisen as to the mode of voting, for by an entry dated October 20th, 1626— 1625. List of Councillors. 1626.

" Yt was agreed that touchinge or conc<sup>'</sup>ninge anie order or election of anie thing whatsoever conc<sup>'</sup>neinge the gov<sup>'</sup>m<sup>t</sup> or state of this towne, neither the Maior or Alderman, nor anie oth<sup>'</sup> to have anie voyce more than anie oth<sup>'</sup> of the Comon Councell being then p<sup>'</sup>sent; save that at ev<sup>'</sup>y election of a new Maior, the Maior to have foure voycs, the Ballives, Ballive's



peares, and the S'geant to have twoe voyc<sup>s</sup> a piece, and the rest of the burgesses only one voyce a piece."

In 1619, it was agreed that the number of Common Councillors should be fixed at forty, which was increased in the charter of Charles I., in 1626, to forty-one, at which it stood until the Municipal Reform Act, 1835.

In 1620 the number of burgesses enrolled was 256.

At the outbreak of the Civil War the Corporation of Liverpool was pretty equally divided, but as the course of events swayed to one side or the other, the government of the borough was influenced thereby. In January, 1645, after the town had passed into possession of the Parliament by the retreat of Prince Rupert, a list was taken of the then existing burgesses, which is set forth on the record, and is a very interesting document. It contains 450 names, but a large number were non-resident, having been created freemen for political purposes.

The register comprises two peers of the realm, the Earl of Derby and Lord Morley; Colonel John Moore, the then Governor appointed by Parliament; four baronets, five knights, fifteen colonels besides the Governor, twenty-six officers below the rank of colonel, fifteen ministers of the gospel, thirty-five esquires, thirty styled gentlemen, and eleven merchants. The rest are called townsmen.

The entries are very numerous about this time of non-residents admitted to freedom, a large number being officers in the army. Some of the names are worthy of notice. Amongst them is one Francis Quarles. It is hardly to be supposed that this could be the celebrated author of the "Emblems," yet it is remarkable that there is a notice of his death in the register, and that the author died in September of the same year. There is also a Capt. Gregorie Cromwell, whether related to the Protector is uncertain. A large number

1645.

List of  
Burgesses.Names on  
Register.Non-resident  
Freemen.

Quarles.

Cromwell.

of the county landed gentry have their representatives, the Gentry. Gerards, Stanleys, Hoghtons, Blundells, Astons, Leighs, Asshetons, Irelands, Heskeths, etc.

Subsequently all the officers of the garrison were admitted Officers. to freedom.

The spirit of litigation has always been very demonstrative in the Liverpool Corporation, and it is curious to turn over the instances of this in the records. As an example, on St. Luke's day, 1626, Thomas Brookbank and John Ashlyn were elected bailiffs, but from some unknown cause they soon came to cross purposes with their colleagues. On the 25th June following, Bailiff Brookbank was presented at the Port Moot "for abusinge Mr Raffe Seacombe, Alderman and Justice of peace by opprobrious speeches." 1626.  
Brookbank  
and Ashlyn  
presented.

On the 22nd October, he was again presented along with his brother bailiff, John Ashlyn,

"for leading Corne upon St. Mathewes day last."

Ashlyn was also presented

"for disorderinge himselfe in the night, to the annoyance of his neighbors."

On the 21st September an entry is made that

"it is ordered by the said Assembly (of the Council) that in respect the Bailiffs of this Towne viz<sup>t</sup> Thomas Brookbanke and Jno Ashlyn have acknowledged to have made full execucon for Judith Ulster al<sup>e</sup> Derby against Richard Tarleton, and that they refuse to make and give her satisfaccon for the same accordinge to the custome of this Towne, that the said Ballives and either of them shall remaine prison's in the Common Hall according to the custome of this Towne, untill they have satisfied the said Judith Ulster al<sup>e</sup> Derby." Imprisoned.

Then follows the resolution—

"That yf it shall fortune that the said Maior or other officer of the said towne shalbe called in question by suite or otherwise for any supposed offence for the committing and detaininge in prison the bodies of Thomas Brookbank and John Ashlyn for their misdemean<sup>r</sup>, that then the whole

Indemnity. towne shall beare the chardge and expence, as well in fees as other ordinary chardges."

On the 19th October—

"Yt is agreed by the whole house that Ralph Seacombe gen' Maior shall appoint the Jurors for the next two great courts in respect the two last ballives stand p'sented for breach of their oathes, in neglecting their office."

The two bailiffs were not disposed to submit to the summary jurisdiction thus assumed, and a long course of litigation ensued. Brookbank entered an action in the King's Bench against the Mayor and Corporation.

1629. In April, 1629, the following entry occurs :—

Litigation. "Coram Joh'ne Walker gen'ose Maior &c  
"Yt is concluded and agreed upon by this wholle Assemblie that whereas Thomas Brookbank hath served his Ma<sup>ty</sup> writt of Subpœna upon the newe Maior in the name of the whole Corpora<sup>con</sup>, to appear in the King's Bench at Westm' die Mercurii next after Quindecim Pasche next, to w<sup>ch</sup> Subpœna S' Rob'te Heath Knt is the Relator. Now yt is agreed that the chardg<sup>s</sup> conc'ninge the defence of the same suite shalbe borne and sustayned out of the Comon stock of the Towne."

The result of the action is not recorded, but it is pleasant to find that some years afterwards these differences were healed.

1638. On the 11th October, 1638, there is an entry—

Restoration. "M<sup>dm</sup> that whereas Thomas Brookbank of Liverpoole hath heretofore for some misdemean<sup>rs</sup> beene disfranchised of his freedome of the same towne. It is thought good and soe agreed, upon his submission this xi<sup>th</sup> daie of October 1638 before me Thomas Eccleston, Maior, Will<sup>m</sup> Banister (and others) to restore him to his former freedome, w<sup>ch</sup> wee doe hereby confirme gratis."

A few years afterwards the Corporation got embroiled in a dispute of a more serious nature, which led to a long course of litigation. The Irish rebellion broke out in 1641. A considerable trade with Ireland existed at that time, and any goods *in transitu* belonging to traitors or rebels were liable to confiscation. It would seem that escheats had hitherto been the

1641.  
Seizure of  
Rebels'  
Goods.

perquisite of the Mayor and Bailiffs, but on the 1st February, 1642, at an Assembly of the Council, the following resolution was adopted :—

“ Whereas the severall forfeitures of Traytors, felons, or oth<sup>r</sup> malefactors goods confiscate and incident w<sup>th</sup>in the said towne have heretofore belonged to the Maior and Ballives for the tyme being in their owne p<sup>r</sup>per right. It is therefore now ordred (for the generall good of the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on) by the free consent of the said Maior and Ballives, and of the aforesaid Assemblie That from henceforth the full moitie and one halfe of all such forfeitures and confisca<sup>c</sup>ons of Goods and Cattels whatsoever and all wayfes and estrayes by reason of anie accidents happening and ariseing w<sup>th</sup>in the said Towne shalbe and inure to the use and behooffe of the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on, and the other moitie thereof to the use and behooffe of all Maiors and Ballives of the said Towne successively. Notwithstanding anie usage, right, or custom, heretofore had to the contrarie.”

Resolution of Council.

Acting upon this resolution, a quantity of goods from Ireland belonging to one Christopher Malone were seized and confiscated, on their way to Manchester consigned to a Mr. Hartley, who interfered and claimed them as his property, whereon, in June, 1642, the following order was issued by the Council :—

Seizure.

“ It was ordred by the generall consent of that Assemblie that the moneys remaining in the hands of Lawrence Marcer raised out of the goods of Christopher Malone and claimed by Mr Hartley of Manchester, shall still remaine in the hands of the said Law<sup>r</sup> in regard the said Malone is thought to have beene in rebellion, whereby the said goods are become confiscate. And further alsoe that the said Law<sup>r</sup> Marcer and Edw<sup>d</sup> Formby who (for y<sup>t</sup> occasion) are now sued and questioned by the said Mr Hartley shalbe saved and kept harmlesse losses, and indemnified by this Corpora<sup>c</sup>on conc<sup>n</sup>ing the retaineing of the said moneys for the use of the towne as aforesaid good. Soe that they or the one of them restore the said moneys unto the towne, they first deducting their charges and expences, disburs<sup>d</sup> in defence of the sute.”

Defence.

On the 19th June, 1643,

1643.

“ At an Assemblie held before Thomas Bicksteth gen. Maior, the Ballives, and the moste p<sup>t</sup>e of the rest of the Com<sup>o</sup>n Councell of this towne, it was moved touching the secureing of Thos Hodgson and John Woods late Ballives of this towne, and others that were or are officers

Indemnity for Bailiffs.



w<sup>th</sup>in the said towne from all molestation or sute that may be moved or brought ag<sup>t</sup> them by one John Booker of Manchester or anie other on his behalfe, and on the behalfe of Garrold Connon, for and conc'ning anie goods or merchandize by either of them challenged and heretofore t<sup>n</sup>sported out of Ireland, wh<sup>ch</sup> upon good evidence appears to be Rebell's goods and as the goods of rebells seized upon for the behooffe of this Corpora<sup>c</sup>on by John Walker then Maior of this burrough. It is therefore ordered by this assemblie that accordingly the said p'sons upon whom this may reflect by reason of such seizure, shalbee secured and kept from all indempnitie at the comon charge of the whole Corpora<sup>c</sup>on, the money thereupon due being paid in to the Towne's Treasurer, and by him to be kept for the benefit of the said towne."

1644.  
Col. Moore  
Governor.

After the siege and recapture of the town in 1644, Colonel John Moore was appointed Governor, and John Holcroft, described as "Collonel of a Regim<sup>te</sup> and one of the Deputie Leiveten<sup>ts</sup> of this Countie and of the Comittie in the same Countie," was elected Mayor. The record of this election is rather curious; it is described as having taken place

"by the free consent of the Maior, Ald<sup>n</sup> and Burgesses then p'sent in the Towne Field, at a place then named the Maior's Mount and postea scil' vj<sup>o</sup> die Novemb<sup>r</sup> Anno Dni 1644 in Cort' Aulæ Cur' p'd<sup>o</sup> jurat' est demum fore Consilio ejusdem Burgi."

1645.

Under the sanction of these authorities, the following declaration was issued xvj January, 1645 :—

Authority for  
Seizure.

"Whereas it appears by the auncient Priviledges, Charters and Customes of this towne and Port of Liverpoole, that the forfeitures and confiscacons of all rebells, traytors, fellons, or other Malefactor's estates, goods, cattells or merchandize whatsoever being found w<sup>th</sup>in the p'cincts and liberties of this towne, doe p'perlie belong unto the Maior, Ballives and Burgesses of the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on, wheresoev<sup>r</sup> the said offend<sup>rs</sup> be and remaine, or in what place or Countie soev<sup>r</sup> the said offences be committed. These are therefore to will and require you the Ballives of the said burrough from tyme to tyme to make diligent search and inquire for anie the goods, chattells or m<sup>r</sup>chandize of all such as are suspected or knowne to be guiltie of anie the offences before menconed, and forthwith to take and seize into safe custodie, all such estates, goods and chattells whatsoever in right of the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on. That if in case the said p'tes shall be convict, that they may be p'served for the use of the said burrough and Corpora<sup>c</sup>on as afforesaid, for w<sup>ch</sup> this shall be yo<sup>r</sup> lawfull and sufficient warr<sup>t</sup>."



This was no doubt intended to operate as a bar to the legal proceedings already instituted, which it did for a time. During the troublous period of the Civil Wars the suit remained dormant, but as soon as peace was restored, in 1649, it was revived. Alderman Bicksteth, who was Mayor when the action was commenced, was sent to London to advise and assist.

On the 25th May, 1649, it was

1649.

“Ordered by the Councill by the advise and with the consent of Collonell Moore, that Mr Bicksteth shall yet stay longer in London to compleat and effect the business of the towne, and that he shall have x<sup>li</sup> more sent him up to defray his charges, and letters subscrybed were sent him accordingly.” Resumption of Litigation.

“Ordered that the sute commenced at London ag<sup>t</sup> Mr Walker for the rebell's goods shalbe appeared unto and defend<sup>d</sup> at the Towne's charge.”

This was done, but the cause dragged its slow length along till the funds and patience became exhausted.

On the 25th January, 1650, it was

1650.

“Ordered by Mr Maior, the Ald<sup>n</sup>, Ballives and Comon Councill, That Mr Thos Bicksteth Ald'man, who hath long tyme lyen at London at a great charge to the towne, and to the great greeffe and trouble of his frends, shall speedily come downe and give in his accompte, and the Maior and Ald'men are desired by the gen'all consent of the towne to take course to see it donne accordingly, in such a way and manner as they shall think fit. Whereupon Mr Wainewright was writt unto, who took much paines in the busines, and sent downe a note of his debts and ingudgments contracted upon him by his long stay there, w<sup>ch</sup> amounts to about xc<sup>li</sup>. Whereupon Mr Washington being questioned by the house concerning the L<sup>li</sup> taken up of one Mr Weston, for wh<sup>ch</sup> Mr W is ingudged, confessed that moneys all come to his hands.” Bicksteth in London.

On the 11th March following, we read—

“Whereas violent sutes have been and are p'secuted in the Upper Bench agt Mr Walker, by Mr Edw<sup>d</sup> Johnson and Mr Nicholas Hawett of Manchester, for certaine goods of Irish rebels w<sup>ch</sup> by him were seized on the behalfe of the towne in the tyme of his maioraltie, the p'ceed whereof was violently taken away by the Earl of Derby.<sup>1</sup> Whereup' hee hath beene outlawed, and aft' rev'salls and sp'iall baile entered at London the

<sup>1</sup> The Earl of Derby was executed on the 15th October in the same year (1650).

Delegates to  
Derby.

issues are readie for tryall at Derby Assizes where the accōns are laid. It is therefore ordered that Mr Maior and Mr Winstanley shall goe to Derby to attend those p'ceedings, the towne being concerned therein. And shall have their charges borne, and are to be there on the 22nd instant,"

added

"where they attended accordingly but the plaintiffs did put in their records."

On the 15th July (1650) it is entered—

Trial at  
Derby.

"Forasmuch as Mr Johnson and Mr Hawett have the last tearme taken out the records in the Upper Bench for tryalls at Derby against Mr Jno Walker in the busines concerning the Rebells goods, wherein the town are ingudged and concerned and must be looked after. It is therefore ordered by this assembly that letters shall be written unto Mr Greene the Councillor and Mr Halley about the said busines, and that Mr Edw<sup>d</sup> Chambers shall goe to Darby to attend the tryalls, and shall have his charges borne."

Claim of  
Walker.

The result is not specifically entered on the record, but it is tolerably certain that it was unfavourable to the Corporation. Mr. Walker, the Mayor at the time, who was the nominal defendant, had died, and his widow claimed a sum of money said to be

"by him disbursed to Mr Hawley who was the towne's Solizitor. It was voted by the gen'll consent of the said Assemblie not to be paid her unles shee mak it appeare to be a reall debt."

What is the most surprising in these lengthened proceedings is the cool assurance with which the town's authorities took upon themselves to confiscate to their own use merchandise coming into the port without any legal decision or inquiry. At the same time there is something to be admired in the courage with which they were always ready to stand up for their privileges against any encroachment from whatever quarter.

1636.

In 1636, the Judge of the Palatine Court of Admiralty tried and convicted certain burgesses of Liverpool for mis-

demeanours, whereupon the Corporation issued the following protest :—

1636, August 8th.

“ It is ordered by the Maior, Aldermen Ballives and Comons this day assembled, That whereas the Judge of the Admiralty of Lancashire and Cheshire hath amerced fined, attached, and imprisoned by his sev'all offic's some free burgesses of this towne for supposed misdemeano<sup>rs</sup> contrary to the lawes and statutes of this realme and customes of this towne. That if any acon, informacon, bill, plainte or any other vexacon bee broughte or comenced against any Maior, Alderman or Ballive for the tyme beinge or any other offic<sup>r</sup> or free burgesse, that the chardge of all and ev'y such suite shalbee born att the chardge of the towne by lay, taxacon or otherwise att the discrecon of this howse.” Assertion of Independence.

Another litigation was revived about this time with Sir Richard Molyneux. The Molyneux family had for many generations held by fee-farm leases the Crown revenues of Liverpool. As the Corporation claimed also to levy certain dues or tolls, the two interests not unfrequently came into collision. In 1533 a complaint was made that for the purpose of depriving Sir Wm. Molyneux, the Crown lessee, of his just rights, the Corporation had conferred the freedom upon “ divers and many foreign men not resident ne abiding in the said town,” thereby escaping the tolls. Litigation with Molyneux. 1533.

In 1622, a further complaint was made by Sir Richard Molyneux, the then Crown lessee, whereupon the following writ of inquiry was issued from the Court :— 1622.

“ 1622, Jany 27th

“ Mr Maior

Writ of Inquiry.

“ Upon the complainte of Sir Richd<sup>d</sup> Molyneux, who is the Kings servant for the Prysage of wyne at his Port of Liv'poole, where I understand that certen French men have brought in wyne of w<sup>ch</sup> they denye unto the officers of the said S<sup>r</sup> Richard prysage for those wyne. And for that I conceive that course of freedome in other p'ts of this kingdome may by them be an imboldeninge to make ther freedome soe gen'all as the priviledges of the County Palantyne of Lancaster may be much impeached thereby. Therefore for the p'servacon of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Rights in those parts w<sup>th</sup>in the said County Palantyne, let me wish you (if the officers of the said S<sup>r</sup> Richard on the behalfe of his Ma<sup>tie</sup>

for the said prysage be not satisfied and fully contented) to certify unto me the names of the owners, bringers, factors, servants, sellers and buyers of the said shippe and wyne w<sup>th</sup> as much convenient speed as you may, To th' end proces, and other p'ceedings may be had against the offenders therein as the law will in such cases, for the sp'all mayntenance of the priviledges of that County.

“ Thus, w<sup>th</sup> my most heartie Saluts I rest

“ Yo<sup>r</sup> very loveinge frend

“ Grayes Inn

“ EDWARD MOSLEY.

“ January this

“ xxvii<sup>th</sup> 1622.”

1628.  
Sale of Manor.

Six years after this, in 1628, King Charles I. sold to certain merchants of London, the Manor of Liverpool, with all the Crown rights, which were subsequently purchased by Sir Richard Molyneux, and conveyed to him in 1632, subject to a yearly rent of £14 6s. 8d.

Ferry.

The ferry boats across the Mersey and a windmill in the town had been held by the Corporation, but under this grant were claimed by Sir Richard (then Lord) Molyneux, who entered an action in the Court of Wards for their recovery.

1638.

On the 21st May, 1638,

Proceedings.

Petition.

King's Reply.

“ At an Assembly held in the Towne hall of Liv'poole before Thomas Eccleston gen. Maior of the said borrough (and others); at w<sup>ch</sup> tyme it was declared to this Assembly how farre the sayd Mr Maior, together with the sayd Mr Walker and Thos Bicksteth and the rest, trusted for the townes busynesse (att London upon the suite comēced against the Towne by the Lord Molyneux in the Court of Wards) had p'ceeded therein in the last Easter terme, and further it was then declared how that besides the p'ceeding in the said suite the said Mr Maior and the rest trusted in that busynesse had p'ferred a petico<sup>n</sup> to the Kinge's most excellent Ma<sup>tie</sup> whereon the townes grievances were at large layd open to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> as also the claymes of the said Lord Molyneux by virtue of a late grante made by the London<sup>rs</sup> to the said Lord, and what was desired by the Towne in the same petico<sup>n</sup>, whereunto the Kinge made a most gracious answeare referring the same to exayming of the Lord Treasurer and Chancello<sup>r</sup> of the Excheq<sup>r</sup> and further as appeareth by the said petico<sup>n</sup> and reference hereunder at large verbatim written w<sup>ch</sup> petico<sup>n</sup> and reference thereupon this whole Assembly had openly and distinctly read unto them by the said Mr Maior. Now forasmuch as great sumes of



money will bee required from them whoe shall goe on the towne's behalfe to expedite this busynesse in London this Trinity terme next if it shall please his Ma<sup>y</sup> to graunte ov' the said towne and the emolum<sup>ts</sup> thereof to the Maior Baylieves and Burgesses of Liv'poole and theire successors for ev' in fee farme for ev' as is desired by the said peti<sup>con</sup>. Therefore this whole Assembly joyn<sup>tly</sup> agree and p'mise to the said Mr Maior and such other persons as shall be ingaged . . . that they and ev'ie of them will beare theire reasonable p'ts in the same ingagem<sup>ts</sup> and will be readie from tyme to tyme to pay and discharge theire porcons and p'ts as shall be assessed upon them." Levy for Expenses.

Then follows

"A Memorandum of what moneys are lent towards the defrayinge of the ch<sup>rges</sup> of the suite nowe dependinge betweene the Lord Molyneux and this towne of Liv'poole by the Maior and div's of the Aldermen and free burgesses, the greater p'te of the Comon Councell of this towne beinge all voluntary tendered to lend the towne for the expedico<sup>n</sup> of the towne's business att London, w<sup>ch</sup> somes followinge are to be repaid to them or their assignees att or before the 25th of August next."

1638.

Then comes a list of subscriptions, amounting altogether to £162.

A temporary arrangement was made by which a rent of £20 per annum was paid by the town to Lord Molyneux, but he having taken arms for the King against the Parliament, which was now in the ascendant, a petition was presented by the Corporation of Liverpool for a restoration of their rights, which they alleged had been wrongfully usurped. Whereupon the following order was made :— Petition.

"Die M<sup>c</sup>curii, primo die 8<sup>br</sup> 1646

"Whereas a Wyndmillne and ferrie boats formerly belonging to the Corpora<sup>con</sup> of Liverpoole were lately in the possession of Richard Lord Mollyneux, who is in hostility against the Parliament, and by his power with the Lord Cottington, (late Master of the Court of Wards and Liveries) brought a vexatious suite against the said Corpora<sup>con</sup> to theire great damage and impoverishment; And whereas all the wrytings and auncient records belonging to the said Corp<sup>n</sup> were taken away when that towne was taken by the enemy; (Considering the excee<sup>d</sup>inge great losses and sufferings of that said towne) And to the end that the auncient rights of the said Corp<sup>n</sup> may be restored and those priviledges whereof they are and long have been in possession, may be continued and remaine inviola-

1646.  
Order of  
Parliament.



Grant to  
Corporation.

ble: The Lords and Comons assembled in Parliam<sup>t</sup> doe order and ordayne: That the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on shall hold and enjoye the said Wynd Milne and ferry Boats and the rent of xx<sup>li</sup> p<sup>t</sup>ann' formerly paid by the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on to the said Lord Molyneux till both Houses take further order: And it is hearby further ordered and ordained That all other the rights powers priviledges lyberties and franchisem<sup>ts</sup> whatsoever con-  
tayne<sup>d</sup> in the Charters of the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on shall be and continue to the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on (saveing to the King's Ma<sup>tie</sup> his heirs and successors and all other person and persons, bodies pollitique and Corporate other than the said Lord Mollyneux and his heires) all their rights, tolles and interests whatsoever."

Lord  
Molyneux's  
Composition.

Before this order was issued, Lord Molyneux had attempted to effect a composition with the Parliament, whereupon the following minute was entered on the Liverpool record.

1646, September 7th.

Solicitor  
appointed.

"Whereas it is conceaved necessarie that a Solizitor shalbe apoynted to goe up to London on the behalfe of this town now in regard the Lord Mollyneux is ab<sup>t</sup> his composico<sup>n</sup>, and to put in excep<sup>t</sup>ions against him concerning o<sup>r</sup> lib<sup>t</sup>ies and priviledges granted to this towne by o<sup>r</sup> late Ordinance of Parliam<sup>t</sup> that hee may not compound for Liv<sup>'</sup>poole."

So matters remained until the Restoration, when another action was commenced by Lord Molyneux in the Duchy Court of Lancaster.

1660. November 20th.

Treaty.

"At an Assembly holden before the Maior Alexander Green (and others) it was propounded concerning the suyte in the Duchie comenced agt the said Mr Maior the Ballives and others: That Mr Maior and the Aldermen may meete with the said Lord Mollineux or his Comission<sup>er</sup> and s<sup>r</sup>vants to treat with them on the towne's behalfe and know their demands."

1661, January 31st.

"An order was agreed upon and subscriybed unto for making an agreement with the Lord Mollineux."

Agreement.

By this agreement a rent of £20 per annum was to be paid by the Corporation as a quit rent for their privileges, but again a misunderstanding arose. Under Lord Molyneux's

title from the Crown a burgage-rent of £14 6s. 8d. had to be paid. This he claimed should be borne by the Corporation, in addition to the £20 per annum received by himself.

1661, December 30th.

"Att an Assembly holden in the Towne halle of Liverpoole before the Maior, Ballives (and others of the Council) it was propounded concerning the clame made by the Right hono<sup>ble</sup> the Lord Mollineux of xx<sup>li</sup> a yeare over and above the Burgudge Rents due to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> out of w<sup>ch</sup> xx<sup>li</sup> it was conceived that the said Burgudge rent of 14<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> ought to have been by him paid and discharged, according to an Agreem<sup>t</sup> lately made betwixt the said Lord Mollineux and some of the Aldermen for that purpose, as was affirmed, w<sup>ch</sup> is now denyed and the 20<sup>li</sup> p<sup>r</sup> annum ov<sup>r</sup> and above the said rent is insisted upon to be paid him: It is therefore thought fit and ordred, that Mr Maior and such of the Ald<sup>r</sup>men as did formerly treat concerning that affaire, shall forthwith goe to the Lord Mollineux and treat with him further, and endeavo<sup>r</sup> to settle and rectifie that mistake."

Burgage  
Rent.

1662, January 20th.

"At an Assembly held before Mr Maior Balives &c It was ordered that the yearly rent of twentie pounds agreed by Mr Maior to be paid to the Lord Mollineux be duly paid according to the said agreem<sup>t</sup> at or before Michallmas next, at w<sup>ch</sup> tyme the said agreem<sup>t</sup> doth expire."

Rent to be  
paid.

1663, January 6th.

"At an Assembly &c—it is alsoe ord<sup>r</sup>ed that a meeteing be observed on Fryday the 17<sup>th</sup> January with Mr Hawarden, and Mr Nicholas Fazerly concerning the differences betwixt the Corpora<sup>con</sup> and my Lord Mollineux, because he denyes the agreem<sup>t</sup> lately made to accept of 20<sup>li</sup> p<sup>r</sup> ann, and out of that to pay the Burgage rent, that Mr Maior, Mr Greene and Mr Sandeford shall goe to the meeteing and to settle that affair according to a right understanding and to rectifie that mistake."

Negotiations.

Before this dispute was finally settled another cause of difference arose of far more importance, which will come under notice in the next chapter.

The Corporation of Liverpool have always jealously guarded the 'independence and jurisdiction of their local courts of justice. Thus, on July 6th, 1629, at the Sessions of the Peace, the Grand Jury present James Sotherne

1629.

"for goeing to a forraigne Justice to bynd himselfe to the disablinge of the authoritie of this towne."

Protection of  
Local Courts.

1630.

At a similar Session, June 28th, 1630—

“Item, wee p’sent Derrick Carsley for p’secuteinge a suite ag<sup>t</sup> Mr John Walker in a forraine Co<sup>t</sup>, contrary to the oathe of a freeman of this towne.”

King’s Writs  
rejected.

They went even further than this, and refused currency to the king’s writs of *certiorari*. At a Port Moot, April 30th, 1637—

“Item, they p’sent Francis Walworth gent. for that hee being a free-man of this towne did upon the third day of Aprill 1637 within the jurisdiction of this Co<sup>t</sup> bring and deliver into this same Co<sup>te</sup> his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Writt of Certiorari beareing date the first day of Aprill in the xiiij<sup>th</sup> yeare of his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Raigne that now is, thereby to remove a cause there depending betweene Rob<sup>t</sup> Bavand p<sup>t</sup> and the said Francis def<sup>t</sup> contrarie to the oath of a freeman of this towne and contrarie to the imunities privileges and franchises thereof.”

Strange as it may appear at the present day, this claim of independence was successfully maintained. In the March Assizes at Lancaster, in 1637, an indictment was preferred against Thomas Bicksteth (Mayor in 1636) and his officers for a forcible entry. The following is the record of the Court thereon :—

Corporation  
successful.

“Whereas Thomas Bicksteth and others, inhabitants w<sup>th</sup>in the Towne of Liv’pool weare indēvored to be indicted att these assizes for a forcible entrie, and that Mr John Vernon of Councell w<sup>th</sup> the Corpora<sup>cō</sup>n enformed this Co<sup>te</sup> the same is an ancient Corpora<sup>cō</sup>n, and that the inhabitants thereof ought not to be drawne in question for such offences but at the Sessions w<sup>th</sup>in the said Corpora<sup>cō</sup>n as by their charter they alledge they are privileged. Yt is therefore ordered that the said inhabitants of Liv’poole shall some tyme betweene this and the end of Trinitie terme next, p’duce Charters before the Lord Vernon. And yf it appeare they have not such priviledge as they alledge Then they are to pay such costs as those whoe p’secute the said Indictm<sup>ts</sup> have beene put to at theis Assizes in theire attendance about the same, and in the meane tyme the p’secution of the said Indictm<sup>ts</sup> to cease.”

Charters  
produced.

These charters were produced to the Court in April, whereupon the following order was issued by the Bench :—

Order of  
Court.

“Ordinat’ est p’ Curiam q’d fiat l’tre de p’cedendo Maiori ballijs et Burgiensibus Burgi de Liv’poole, tangen’ o’ilz recogn’ et indictament’

cogn' ib'm p' Josephum Rose, non obstant' aliqua priori regula aut Certiorar' in contrariu'. Et ulterius ordinat' est q'd nulli fiant Certior' imposteriu' eisdem Maiori, ballijs et Burgiensibz ad certificand' aliqua p'cessor; Cur hic quia libent' p'cart' div'sor' Reg<sup>m</sup> hujus regni Angl' ut patet ex mocone Mr Hugonis Rigby."<sup>1</sup> 1630.

The proceedings in the town during the period of the Civil War. Civil War form a very interesting series of documents. Before the commencement of hostilities, parties in Liverpool Parties. were much divided. The two members for the borough took opposite sides. The majority of the Council were for the King, but the preponderance amongst the inhabitants was for the Parliament. In June, 1642, the King issued a Commis- 1642. sion of Array, requiring the loyal inhabitants of Lancashire to arm in defence of the Crown and its prerogatives. The Mayor, John Walker, acting under this authority, and co-operating with Lords Strange and Molyneux, did his best to put the town into a state of defence. About thirty barrels of powder, Town fortified. with a quantity of match, were brought from Warrington. Earthworks were thrown up round the town, furnished with gates and bars at the street ends, with a fosse twelve yards wide and three yards deep. In doing this, he was met with considerable opposition from within, and was threatened from without. In order to encourage his loyalty, the following letter was forwarded from the King at York:—

“Charles R

“Trustie and welbeloved, Wee greete you well. Whereas you have by vertue & obedience to o<sup>r</sup> Comission of Aray issued unto o<sup>r</sup> Countie Pallatyne of Lanc<sup>r</sup> doone dyvers services tending to the putting in execucon of the said comision for which you are threatened to be arrested and carried out of the said Countie, although wee have still speciall occasion to use yo<sup>r</sup> service therein. Our expresse will and 1642. King's letter to Mayor.

<sup>1</sup> It is ordained by the Court that a writ “de procedendo” be issued to the Mayor, Bailiffs and Burgesses of the Borough of Liverpool touching the recognizances and indictment preferred by Joseph Rose, any prior rule or certificate to the contrary notwithstanding. And it is further ordered that no writ of *certiorari* be authorised in any proceeding against the said Mayor, Bailiffs and Burgesses; and this as appears by the charters freely granted by divers kings of the realm of England exhibited by Mr. Hugh Rigby.



command therefore is that you faile not to attend us p'sonally forthwith upon significacon made unto you in this behalfe dureing our abode in these p'ts, and therefore we straitly require you upon yo' allegiance that you dep'te not nor absent yo'selfe out of o' Countie Pallatyn of Lancast' neither suffer yo'selfe to be aniewise ingaged, detayned, or kept from giving yo' readie attendance accordingly, being thereunto called or sumoned by us or o' comānd whylst we shall continue there, upon anie p'tence, ord<sup>r</sup> warrant or comānd whatsoev<sup>r</sup> from either or both howses of Parliam<sup>t</sup> w<sup>th</sup>out o' speciall leave and lycence first obtained or direccōns to you under o' owne hand as you tend<sup>r</sup> o' highest displeasure, and will answer the contrarie at yo' p'ill. For w<sup>ch</sup> this shalbe yo' sufficient warr<sup>t</sup> and authoritie. Given at o' Court at Yorke the 1<sup>st</sup> July, 1642.

"To o' trustie and welbeloved John Walker, Maior of Liverpoole in o' Countie Pall' of Lanc'."

1642. After the raising of the king's standard at Nottingham, on August 25th, 1642, Liverpool was held for a few months by Colonel Edward Norris, of Speke, on behalf of the Royalists in possession. After the fight at Whalley, on April 20th, 1643, Lords Derby and Molyneux retreated; and on the 20th May Surrendered. the town was surrendered to Colonel Assheton, and was garrisoned for the Parliament, under Colonel John Moore as Governor.

1643, May 31st. Entry on the records:—

Arms and  
Ammunition.

"Whereas by the direccōn of Collonell Holland there is delivered unto y<sup>e</sup> Maior and Aldermen of this towne 100 Musketts, 100 Bandalliers & 100 Rests to be employed for y<sup>e</sup> defence and saftie of this towne, for redeliverie whereof the said Maior and Ald<sup>n</sup> have ingudged themselves. It is therefore ordered by this Assemblie that the said Armes shalbe secured and made good if anie defect shalbe, at the gen'all charge and costs of this towne, who shall lykewise stand ingaged gen'allly together with y<sup>e</sup> said Maior and Ald<sup>n</sup> for saffe redeliverie theirof unto y<sup>e</sup> said Collonell when y<sup>e</sup> same shalbe required &c.

"Mem<sup>d</sup> y<sup>t</sup> p'sently afterwards <sup>(50)</sup>1<sup>ic</sup> of these armes were restored."

1643.  
Rosworm  
Engineer.

About the same time, Rosworm, a German engineer attached to the Parliamentary army, was brought from Manchester, which he had fortified, to advise as to the strengthening of the works. The town was placed under martial law, and a number of the military officers were admitted to the freedom.



On the 13th December, 1643,

"It is ordered that the Ballives and the Serjant and some others of the Governor's officers are to goe through the towne and make inquirie and take notice of all strangers and other lodgers ; that such as are not Strangers faithfull and trustie to the service of King and Parliament may be removed. expelled and removed forth of the towne w<sup>th</sup> all speed possible, in respect of the present dangers."

On the 16th March, 1644, the following proclamation was 1644.  
issued :—

"Whereas divers of the inhabits of this towne have refused and con- Garrison temptiously neglected contrarie to divers orders, to appeare w<sup>th</sup> their best service. Armes att the beating off the drume These are therefore to give publicke notice and warninge to all p'sons whatsoever inhabittinge w<sup>th</sup>in this Garreson heartofore appoynted for the obs'vinge of the watch w<sup>th</sup>in the same, That if they, or anie of them shall hereafter refuse or neglect to appeare at the beatinge of the drume for the settinge of the watch w<sup>th</sup>in this Garreson or for the p'forminge of other duties w<sup>th</sup>in the same, or anie p'son whatsoever sett upon his watch or guard, shall come off the same or neglect his duties therein, till he be thence called and releevd by an officer shall for everie such offence pay to the use of his fellow soldiers the some of xii<sup>d</sup> or lie in prison in the Towne-hall untill he have paid the same."

On June 16th, 1644, the town was taken by escalade by Stormed by Prince Rupert, who only remained nine days, and retired, Rupert. leaving Lord Byron as Governor. In August the town was again invested by the Parliamentary forces under Sir John Meldrum, who blockaded it until November 4th, when the garrison surrendered.

There is no doubt that, as was bitterly complained of by the inhabitants, the town was seriously plundered during Prince Rupert's occupation.

On the 5th March, 1645,

"The Ballives are required to make demand to the Coll' of the Towne's Armes that were lost."

On the 13th January, 1645, there is an entry of the Port 1645.  
Moot Inquest—

"We finde that a great company of o' inhabitants were murthered and

slaine by Prince Rupert's forces, the names of the murtherers we cannot as yet be certified of any of them or their names."

The slain to  
be buried.

"Ordered, that the dead bodies of o<sup>r</sup> murthered neighbours buried out of towne, shall be better covered betwixt this and the second of February next, and for the effecting thereof, We ord<sup>r</sup> that the Ballives or any other officer giving notice or warning to any house shall send one thither w<sup>th</sup> a spade or wiskett for the covering of them as afforesaid."

Fortifications.

Several entries relate to the fortifications.

On the 20th December, 1644, it was ordered by the Assembly

"That for the p'sent, the gates now att Lawr. Mercer's house end shold be removed and set in the worke att the Tyth Barne street end."

1646.

On the 30th March, 1646, at an Assembly, it was ordered

"That the said Mr Maior (and others) repaire to Preston w<sup>th</sup> all speed to sollicite the Comittees, That the Mud-walls heare now standing being repaired, may continue as they are w<sup>th</sup>out demollishing, and that there may be noe Inner-worke made, in regard it will spoile and ruine the Towne"

On the 22nd December, 1646—

Map.

"Concerning this Towne being a Garrison, it was petitioned that the Works might stand as they are and not be altered; and a true Mapp was drawne of them by Samuell Aspinwall and c'tified to the Comittee of Parliam<sup>t</sup> by Lt Col Ashurst Gov'nor."

1647.  
Works to  
stand.

"Att an Assemble alsoe held the 16<sup>th</sup> April 1647, it was alsoe resolved that the works shold stand as they are, and not be altered; or otherwise for want of competent meanes to maintaine a Garrison they shold be demolished; it being conceived that as they now stand they are more advantageous and easie to be kept than otherwise altered."

"Ordered that the gates at the Chappell streete end shalbe made and sett up at the Towne's charges by the Governor's consent."

1647.  
Castle  
repaired.

On the 30th April, 1647—

"Ordered that Mr Maior should request 'that the Castle may be repaired and fortified, and the Works *slaighted*.'" <sup>1</sup>

1648.

On the 28th July, 1648, two resolutions were passed; the first—

<sup>1</sup> *Slaighted* means to be levelled down, destroyed. High Ger., *Schlechten*; Low Ger. and Flemish, *Slechten*.

"The Petition for demolishing the works and disgarrisoning the towne <sup>Petition.</sup> to be drawne up and a letter to Mr Ashurst (the Governor) to further the same, and to Mr Bicksteth, to Coll Moore and the Committee of the Militia of Lancasheire for the same purpose, and Mr John Winstanley is to goe about the solizitation of it, and to have his charges borne."

### The second

"Ordered that a Peticon shalbe drawn to this effect, that the Committee wold be pleased to take speedie course that this Towne may be so victualled manned and fortified as to make it secure and tenable, and constant meanes be allowed from the Publick to maintaine it without being p'judiciall to the inhabitants, or to certifie with us that the works may be *slaighted*."

### On the 17th October, 1648—

"Ordered that a peticon unto the Committee at Derby House and to the Generall shalbe drawn up and this Committee solizited that wee may have this Garrisonn sufficiently manned, maintained and fortified, or the works *slaighted* and demolished, and letters to be written unto Mr Ashurst and Mr Recorder to that purpose." <sup>1648. Petition to fortify.</sup>

### On the 27th November, 1648, we read:—

"Whereas the inhabitants of this Towne are much dampnified by reason of the Works. It is therefore Ordred that the peticon concerning the *slaughting* of them shall be p'ceeded in, and solizited by Mr John Winstanley, who is to attend the Committee for that purpose and is to have his charges borne and allowed by the Towne." <sup>Petition to destroy the Works.</sup>

### On the 31st July, 1649—

"Att an Assembly this day was red the copie of a letter from the Lord President of the Councill of State unto the Governor concerning the *slaughting* of the Works and fortificacons, and contracting the Garrison into the Castle w<sup>ch</sup> being much desired by the Towne: It is therefore thought fitt and soe ordred that Mr Maior shall goe up to London and accompanie Coll Birch the Gov'nor about the same busines and endev<sup>r</sup> to gett the same effected for the good of the towne and shall have all charges borne."

On the 9th November, 1650, a further petition was <sup>1650.</sup> adopted

"concerning the demolishing of o<sup>r</sup> works, w<sup>sh</sup> are soe much p'judiciall to the Towne, but suspended until the Gov'nor shold come home."

As nothing more is heard of the "Works," it is presumed they were at this time destroyed.

Garrison. The presence of the garrison, and the demands made on the inhabitants, both for money and military service, were very distasteful.

1646. On the 21st October, 1646, it is recorded—

Watch and Ward. "Whereas it hath been lately p<sup>r</sup>ounded by the Governor that soe many men as are to keepe Wach and passe upon duetie for the Towne shold be inlisted und<sup>r</sup> what Captaine they please, w<sup>ch</sup> being taken into consideraçon, this Assemblie thinks fitt that a gen<sup>l</sup>all cattalogue of the names of all the able men within this Towne shalbe taken by John Kirk and others, and tendred to Mr Maior on Friday next ; That soe many as are willing to be enlisted may be then taken notice of and enlist accordingly ; And whereas dyvers of the inhab<sup>t</sup>ants doe neglect their Wach being thereunto called : It is therefore ordered that all such persons as shall upon sumons neglect their duetie in this p<sup>t</sup>icular shalbe punished according to the discretion of the Maior, and for that purpose the Captaine of the Wach is to obs<sup>r</sup>ve Mr Maior his com<sup>and</sup> in the p<sup>r</sup>formance thereof accordingly at his perill."

Penalties for neglect.

1647. April 30th, 1647.

"Agreed that Mr Maior and the Ald<sup>n</sup> shall treat<sup>e</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the Governor abt the setlem<sup>t</sup> of this Garrison ; first that one Companie of the Townesmen may be employed, and to have pay as others have. 2<sup>nd</sup> that the soldiers may pay 3<sup>d</sup> per meale, or quarter themselves."

At the same time

"It is ordered and agreed by this Assembly that Mr Willm Williamson shall next week goe to London to solizet the Towne's busines and shall have all charges borne.

Soldiers objected to.

"1—to prevent the coming in of 600 soldiers to be garrisoned here ; and to get the Works slaighted and the garrison to be ordered to be kept in the Castle ; w<sup>ch</sup> if repaired may be manned w<sup>th</sup> 200 men."

One cannot but admire the pluck and energy of the little community at this trying period. In addition to the losses by the war, the plunder at the siege, the suspension of trade, the hemming in by the fortifications, and the expense and trouble of the garrison, they were threatened by the plague, which actually attacked them with virulence a few years after-

Plague.



wards, yet their courage never seemed to fail; they were prepared for every emergency.

On the 12th June, 1647, it was

"Ordered that strict wach shalbe kept by the townesmen because of the rumour of sicknes to be begune in Warrington."

On the 29th June, 1647—

"Mem<sup>d</sup>, p'pounded by the Governor concerning the distraccons betwixt the Armie &c and other p'ticulars at this Assembly, whereunto answered <sup>Garrison service.</sup> was made That it is the desire of Mr Maior, the Aldermen and Comon Councill of this Towne, that in all things their may be a free and faire compliance betwixt the townesmen and the soldiers and for all business conc'ning the Militia and soldierie they referr all to the discrecion of the Governor, and withall doe hold it fitt and ord<sup>r</sup> that the townesmen from tyme to tyme according to Mr Maiors direccōn shall joine w<sup>th</sup> the soldiers in keepeing wach, and that noe Chester nor Warrington people nor their goods dureing the tyme of this infeccōn shalbe admitted to come into this towne."

August 9th, 1647.

"Ordered that the townes-men together with the soldiers, shall wach everie day their turne upon warning to them given in their owne p'sons, and if anie being able shall refuse or neglect to p'forme the same accordingly, they are to forfeit v<sup>s</sup> for everie default at the discrecion of the Maior."

1st November, 1647.

"Mem<sup>d</sup> that upon the comeing in of a Regim<sup>t</sup> of horse belonging to the Parliam<sup>ts</sup> Army under the comand of S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Farefax, Ordered by the Comitie to be quartered in this Countie p'porconably, whereof 2 men and their horses and the 3<sup>d</sup> p'te of another were allotted to this towne they demanding 15<sup>s</sup> p' week for everie horse and man, or els Quarters in kynd to be assyned them according to orders. Upon consideracon had by this Assembly it was resolved that they shold have quarters within the towne at the severall Innes from house to house weekly by turne at the appoyntm<sup>t</sup> of the Ballives, and they to be content with such allowance as is duely allotted them, w<sup>ch</sup> the Ballives are to see paid and discharged accordingly after the rate of xi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> p' week, and it is alsoe agreed that they shall have noe allowance at all in moneys for their quarters when they are or shalbe absent, except they show good warrant for it; and noe one house or inne to be more burthened than another.

"It is also agreed that a Ley or Taxacon of xii<sup>d</sup> be imposed upon the Towne for payeing of the Quarterage of the horse, and towards the dis- <sup>Monthly</sup> tax.

chargeing of the monthly tax and for non-paym<sup>t</sup> the Ballives are to distraine, and restore the overplus."

Quarterage.

"Ordered that a letter and petico<sup>n</sup> be drawne to be eased of these burdens of quarterage and paying taxa<sup>c</sup>ons with the rest of the Countie, and the reasons of o<sup>r</sup> sufferings to be alledged, w<sup>ch</sup> was done accordingly, but noe releefe granted."

1648.

July 28th, 1648.

Quartering  
Soldiers.

"P<sup>r</sup>ounded at this Assembly concerning the quartering of soldiers for the Governor upon his owne securitie, w<sup>ch</sup> is unanimously denied by this Assembly by reason of the p<sup>r</sup>esent danger, and the scarsitie of all p<sup>r</sup>visions."

After the recovery of the town by the Parliament, in November, 1644, no time was lost in applying to the Government for aid and assistance.

1645.

1645, March 6th, there is this record :—

Application  
for aid.

"Forasmuc<sup>h</sup> as the p<sup>r</sup>esent state and condico<sup>n</sup> of this towne doth require that some speedie course be taken, as well for the repairing of the losses and sufferings of the inhabit<sup>nts</sup> thereof by the crueltie of the Prince's Army lately p<sup>r</sup>valeing there, as alsoe for the better secureing of the said towne for the tyme to come: It is ord<sup>rd</sup> That Mr Wm Langton, Record<sup>r</sup> shall accompanie Mr Maior to London, and there solizit in the behalfe of the said towne according to the insuing instructio<sup>n</sup>s viz<sup>t</sup>

Relief.

1 "To procure releefe (if it be possible) for pooer widdoes and fatherles children that had their husbands and fathers slaine and their goods plundered, and others in the towne who are in distresse and want.

Inquiry.

2 "To p<sup>r</sup>cure that the manner of the looseing or rather the giving up of the towne to the enemie be fullie tryed and exam<sup>d</sup>, that soe it may apaire in whose neglect or default it was that soe much inocent blood was spilt, when there was possibilitie of resistance, or anie tearms of quarter wold have beene granted."

A grant accordingly was made and distributed as follows :—

1646, March 30th.

Grant.

"It is Ordered: That the widowes and fatherles children of this towne rec<sup>d</sup> iij<sup>s</sup> a peece, and the maymed soldiers vj<sup>s</sup> a peece out of the xx<sup>li</sup> allowed by the Comitee for theire p<sup>r</sup>esent releeffes and the overplus to others in the greatest necessitie resideing heare, according as the Warr<sup>t</sup>

dat' 7 March 1645 directs, and that for everie street ij of this house be chosen to distribute the same p'porconable."

1646, December 22nd.

"A Cattalogue of the poore Widdowes and fatherles children and Catalogue. mamed soldiers who were hurt and had their husbands and fathers slaine in this towne and in the Parliam<sup>ts</sup> service is ordred to be made and c'tified to the Comitee, soe that they may receave allowance of contribucon for their maintenance according to the ordinance of Parliam<sup>t</sup>."

1645, September, 17th. An order was issued by the Parliament

"That 500 tons of Tymber be allowed unto the Towne of Liverpoole Grant of Timber. for rebuilding the said towne, in a great p't destroyed and burnt downe by the Enemie; and that the said 500 tons be felled in the grounds and woods of James Erle of Derby, Richard Lord Mollyneux, Will<sup>m</sup> Norris, Robert Blundell, Rob<sup>t</sup> Mollyneux, Charles Gerrard, and Edw<sup>d</sup> Scarisbricke, Esqrs; and that it be referred to the Comitie for Lanc<sup>r</sup> that are members of this Howse to take order for the due and orderly felling of the said Tymber, and for apporceninge the quanteties to be allowed to the p'sons that suffered by the burninge of the said towne for the rebuilding thereof."

1646, September 7th. The deputation to London on the Deputation. dispute with Lord Molyneux were instructed

"Alsoe to p'fect the ord<sup>r</sup> for the 500 tunnes of timb<sup>r</sup> allotted to this towne, for the effecting whereof Mr Chambers is made choyce of, to goe up at the Towne's charge ab<sup>t</sup> these occasions."

What resulted ultimately from this grant is not recorded. It is very doubtful if the timber was ever received.

The claims of the Corporation for compensation were pursued with considerable pertinacity.

1647, April 15th.

"It was ordered that Mr Thos Bicksteth shall goe to London to solizit Bicksteth the towne's business, and shall have a horse p'vyded him and his charges deputed. necessarie borne."

1647, May 10th.

"Ordred and agreed that Mr Ald<sup>a</sup> Bicksteth shall goe to London to solizit the towne's business and shall have his charges ratably allowed."

1648, July 28th.

"Concerning Mr Bicksteth, his long stay in London, agreed that hee shall yet stay a fortnight to see what wilbe effected, and earnest letters to be written unto him to presse o' manie busines forward, as alsoe to Coll Moore which is donn accordingly."

1649.  
Petition.

1649. In order to expedite the business, and to aid Mr. Bicksteth in his application, the following petition was sent up:—

"To the right hon<sup>ble</sup> the howse of Comons in Parliam<sup>t</sup> assembled.

"The humble Petition of the Maior, Ald' and the rest of the towne of Liv'poole.

"Sheweth that the Town of Liverpoole was for a long tyme the only port within the power of the Parliam<sup>t</sup> in that p'te of the kingdome.

"And it being then of that concernm<sup>t</sup> both to England and Ireland, yo' Peticoners, who have alwais beene well affected to the Parliam<sup>t</sup> and kingdom, did not only contribute their money and labour, but for the better strengthening and secureing of it for the Parliam<sup>t</sup> suffered many of their howses and outhowes to be pulled downe, and their gardens and their orchards to be digged up in the fortificacons to the great impoverishing of very many of the inhabitants of the said towne.

"That the most p'e of the said towne who were able bodies, did take up armes for the Parliam<sup>t</sup>, and did together with the souldiers of the said garrison, often repulse the forces of the en'my when it was besieged and often assaulted by Prince Rup<sup>ts</sup> forces.

"That in y<sup>e</sup> seidge very much of yo' Petitioners Corne, Cattel, Beere, and other p'visions were taken and seized on by the Governor Coll Moore for y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> Garrison, and yo' Peticoners would not suffer anie of y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of the said towne to ship away the rest of their goods, lest y<sup>e</sup> soulders sh<sup>d</sup> thereby have beene discouraged. Whereupon when the said towne was at last taken without anie condicon, very many of y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> said towne were killed, all their goods plundered and spoyled, and many of their howses pulled downe and burned, whereby the said inhabitants are utterly undonne unles they be releved by this hon<sup>ble</sup> howse.

"May it therefore please yo' hono<sup>rs</sup> to take y<sup>e</sup> p'mises into serious consid'acon, and to ord<sup>r</sup> such satisfaccon for their goods soe seized and taken for y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> said garrison and their howses pulled downe and burned. And alsoe for their great sufferings and losses as in yo' wisdom you shall think fit.

"And yo' pet<sup>rs</sup> shall ev<sup>r</sup> pray &c.

"Die Veneris xxviiij<sup>th</sup> of January 1648-9

"The humble Peticon of y<sup>e</sup> Maior Ald'men and y<sup>e</sup> rest of y<sup>e</sup> towne of Liv'poole was this day red, and ordered to be p'ticularly referred to the consideracon of the Comittee for destroyed howses, where Mr Dodrige



hath y<sup>e</sup> chaire, to consider of their losses and how some satisfaccon and redresse may be given them.

“H. ELSEING,  
“*Clerc' Parl. Com.*”

“The Certificate of the Sheriffe and other Gent' of Lancashire comes in order heere, w<sup>ch</sup> was read

“1649—12<sup>th</sup> May Resolved upon the Question

“That ten thousand pounds bee allotted for satisfaccon of y<sup>e</sup> losses of Grant by  
the towne of Liverpoole in the Countie of Lancaster out of Parliament.

“S<sup>r</sup> Will<sup>m</sup> Gerrard of y<sup>e</sup> Brinne

“Mr Blundell of Crosbie

“Mr Chorley of Chorley

“Mr Fazakerley of Walton and

“Mr Scarsbrick of Scarisbrick's Estates

Papists in Armes, and whose estates are not otherwise disposed of, and were at Liverpoole at y<sup>e</sup> taking of it and were Comissioners of Array and Collonells and Captaines for y<sup>e</sup> King.”

“1649 Feby 1<sup>st</sup> Propounded at the Assembly concerning Mr Bicksteth his long stay at London to the great charge of the towne and greefe in London. of his family and frends. It is thought fit in regard his long attendance hath proved fruteless and the charge great, that hee shall come downe from London at or before the first day of March next, and an ord<sup>r</sup> and letters were sent to him for that purpose sygned by the Councill.”

“1649 May 25<sup>th</sup> Ordered by this house by the advise and with the consent of Collonell Moore, that Mr Bicksteth shall yet stay longer at London to compleat and effect the busines of y<sup>e</sup> Towne, and that hee shall have x<sup>li</sup> more sent him up, to defray his charges; and letters subscrybed were sent him accordingly.”

“1650, Jany 9<sup>th</sup> Att an Assembly &c it was p'pounded by Mr Maior concerning Mr Bicksteth his long stay at London, and resolved that letters shall be written and inquirie made, how much moneys will discharge his ingudgements there, and that hee shall forthwith come downe if his healthe will p'mitt.”

“1650, Janry 25<sup>th</sup> It was ordred by Mr Maior, the Ald<sup>r</sup> Ballives and Comon Councill assembled, that Mr Thomas Bicksteth Ald<sup>r</sup>man who hath long tyme lyen at London at a great charge to y<sup>e</sup> towne and to the great greiffe and trouble of his frends, shall speedily come downe and give in his accompt: And the Mayor and Aldermen are desired by the gen<sup>l</sup>all consent of the towne to take course to see it donne accordingly in such a way and manner as they shall think fitt. Whereupon Mr Wainwright was writt unto, who tooke much paines in the busines, and sent downe a note of his debts and ingudgments contracted upon him by his long stay there w<sup>ch</sup> amounts to about xc<sup>li</sup>; Whereupon afterwards Mr Washington being questioned by the house concerning the 50<sup>li</sup> taken up  
1650.  
Bicksteth recalled.

of one Mr Weston for w<sup>ch</sup> Mr Way is ingudged, confessed that moneys all come to his hands."

Second grant. Another grant was made by Parliament, nominally of £10,000, which ultimately proved delusive.

Irish estates. "1652 Nov 22<sup>nd</sup> Att at Assembly holden before Mr Maior (Ralph Massam) the Aldermen and Councell assembled, a letter from Collonell Birch the Governor was read, whereby it appears that the 10,000<sup>l</sup> to be allowed by the Parliam'ts ord<sup>r</sup> for repaire of the losses and plund<sup>r</sup> of this towne forth of certain<sup>e</sup> delinquents' estates, is now to be allowed forth of the lands in Ireland, w<sup>ch</sup> caused a letter to be written that the allottmt might be as neere Dublin as possible."

1653. 1653, January 10. At an Assembly before the Mayor (Edward Williamson) and the Council. "Upon reading of severall letters from Dublin concerning the sending over of a Solizitor about the allottmt of ten thousand pounds in lands in Ireland, it was p<sup>r</sup>ounded to be considered of who was fitt to be sent over. It was votted and ordered that Alderman Thomas Blackmore and John Winstanley Towne Clerk shall by the apoyntm<sup>t</sup> of this Assembly goe ov<sup>r</sup> soe soone as shalbe thought convenient . . . and upon o<sup>r</sup> peticon there it is referred to the Lord P<sup>r</sup>ect<sup>r</sup> upon this poynt: Whether to be sett out before the Adventurers and Soldiers be first satisfied" &c.

#### After some further correspondence—

Town Clerk sent. 1654, January 24th. At an Assembly, "It was ordered and agreed that Mr John Winstanley Towne Clerk shall again goe over to Dublin abt the deliverie of the Lord Protector's letter to the Dep<sup>ty</sup> there. And to solizit that busines concerning the p<sup>r</sup>portion of forfeated lands in Ireland, w<sup>ch</sup> his Highnes letter directs to bee in the Countie of Wicklowe to the value of tenn thousand pounds, in lew of their great losses.

Letter from Cromwell. "W<sup>ch</sup> was referred to the Judges at the Court for adjudicacon of claimes, and by them it was reported that the Adventurers and Soldiers must be first satisfied, and this allottment to be sett out in course."

Judges' Report. 1655, May 9th. "Mem<sup>d</sup> that this day severall papers concerning the proceedings in o<sup>r</sup> busines of lands in Ireland were read and the Judges' Report and resolucon therein made; whereupon it was resolved that new adresses shold bee made to the Lord Protector concerning the same, and that Collonell Ireland and Collonell Birch shold bee againe solizited to move for to have a more absolut and authentick order, and that wee shold advise with Mr Record<sup>r</sup> about it."

Petition to Cromwell. 1656, February 27th. "It is ord<sup>r</sup>ed that a peticon bee p<sup>r</sup>pared and p<sup>r</sup>ferred to his Highnes the Lord Protector concerning o<sup>r</sup> lands in Ireland, w<sup>ch</sup> Captaine Browne being now bound for London is desired to p<sup>r</sup>ferr."

"This was left with Mr Sandford whom hath beene since solizited, but

nothing can be donne, it being referred to the Lord Dep<sup>tie</sup> Fleetwood, with whom another peticon now remains.

“That a letter bee sent to Lieut Newcomen in answe<sup>r</sup>e to his, relating to o<sup>r</sup> lands in Ireland, w<sup>ch</sup> is sent accordingly.”

1656, September 17th. An application was addressed by the Assembly to Col. Thos. Birch, the late Governor, recently returned as member, Application to Birch.

“to endeavo<sup>r</sup> to gett o<sup>r</sup> lands in Ireland allotted and established according to the late Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup> to the value of 10,000<sup>l</sup>.”

1657, October 16th. At an Assembly it was

“Ordered concerning the lands in Ireland, that Mr. John Winstanley Towne Clerk shalbe Solizitor for the Corporation, and shall goe to London this and the next tearme and endeavo<sup>r</sup> to get the same busines effected.” Town Clerk in London.

1657, October 23rd. At an Assembly of the Mayor and Council a resolution was passed, of which the following is the substance :—

“Whereas by Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup> of the 26th Sept 1653, it is enacted that in considera<sup>o</sup>n of the great losses of the towne of Liverpoole the Comm<sup>rs</sup> of Parliam<sup>t</sup> in Ireland should set forth and appoynt so much lands there as amounts to the value of tenn thousand pounds at the rate that the publique faith debts are to be satisfied, for the use and benefitt of this towne . . . and aft<sup>r</sup> great endeavour and div<sup>s</sup> considerable somes of money have been used and expended ; And notwithstanding his Highnes l<sup>tre</sup> of comand hath beene p<sup>c</sup>ured to that purpose yet the said lands nor any p<sup>t</sup> of them cannot as yet be obtained to be set out and ascertained . . . in regard the Judges in Ireland and other Gent<sup>l</sup> of Quallitie there to whom the said busines was referred have certified their opinions that the Adventurers and Souldiers are to be first satisfied ; And for that it was alledged that the said forfeited lands there were not sufficient to pay and satisfie them and such other publique debts as are first to be paid by vertue of the said Act . . . therefore the p<sup>m</sup>isses beinge taken into serious considera<sup>o</sup>n it is conceaved that the effecting of this busines will yet be a worke of great difficultie and charge unto this Corpora<sup>o</sup>n unles the whole manageinge and p<sup>se</sup>cuc<sup>o</sup>n thereof shalbe undertaken by some p<sup>t</sup>icular p<sup>so</sup>ns to be interested therein ; It is therefore ordered, consented and agreed that Mr John Winstanley now Town Clark and such other p<sup>so</sup>ns as he shall agree with, shall have a good and sufficient lease and grant of one full moietie of the said lands in Ireland. . . yielding and paying to the said Corpora<sup>o</sup>n of Liverpoole, the yearly rent of twentie 1653.

Agreement with Winstanley.

shillings; and that the said Winstanley and the other p'sons shall give securitie to endeavour and to use all their power and interest speedily to procure the said lands at their own charge w<sup>th</sup>out any further charge or troble to the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on . . . the lands to be devyded by lott betwixt them and the said Corpora<sup>c</sup>on."

Deputation to Ireland. 1658, August 2nd. At an Assembly of the Council, Aldermen Giles Formby and Thomas Sandiford were appointed to go over to Ireland to press the business forward; and

"that all patents, writings and assurances shall first be perfected and the Corporation established in actual possession before anie division shalbe made betwixt the towne and Mr Jno Wiestanley and his partner Captaine Jas Browne."

A letter was read from Captain Browne

Houses in Galway. "concerning the howses in Galway given to this towne, but nothing ord'ed at p'sent."

The locality of the grant of lands was changed from Wicklow to Galway.

Deputation to Galway. 1658, September 2nd. Messrs. Corless and Sandiford were deputed to proceed to Galway, and to enter upon all the houses, lands and tenements

"given and now belonging to this towne of Liverpoole by Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup> & ord<sup>r</sup> of the Lord Deputie and Councill in Ireland,"

and to make a particular survey and report thereon.

Recorder's advice. "It is alsoe ord'ed that Mr Thomas Will'mson and Mr Greene shall goe to Preston and shall take advice of the Record<sup>r</sup> concerning the p'sent affaires of Ireland busines and vew and advice of all the papers and p'ceedings what is fitt to be doone w<sup>ch</sup> was donne accordingly."

1658, December 20th. At an Assembly of the Council it was propounded

Division of Property. "concerning the lands in Ireland to be sett and allotted to this towne. It was voted and ordered that noe division shall be made with the Und<sup>r</sup>takers in that busines till the Corpora<sup>c</sup>on be first settled and invested in the full and peaceable possession of the whole p'misses, and have better assurance thereof. And then the grants and assurances are to be made and p'fected according to the first order and agreem<sup>t</sup> with Mr Winstanley notwithstanding anie importunitie or p'tence whatsoev<sup>r</sup>."



1659, January 28th. At an Assembly, &c.

"Ordered: That Mr Henry Corless and Mr Sandiford having made Settlement of their accompts for the Galway voyage, be discharged and indemnified; <sup>Accounts.</sup> the remainder of the rents being ix<sup>l</sup> i<sup>s</sup> v<sup>d</sup> is now paid over to the Balives for the towne's use."

1659, December 14th. At an Assembly, &c.

"Ordered that letters be written to frends in Galway in Ireland to <sup>Offer to sell.</sup> make it knowne that this Corporacon and all p'sons interested and concerned in that allotmt are willing to sell or sett the howses there, before anie division be made."

1660, October 30th. At an Assembly, &c.

"It was voted, resolved and ord'red that the twoe Burgesses of Paliam<sup>t</sup> <sup>Power of sale.</sup> for this towne, together with Captaine James Browne and Mr John Winstanley or his sonne shall have imediate powre and are hereby authorised forthwith to make sale of all the towne's interest in Ireland as to what was lately sett out unto them by Act of Parliamen<sup>t</sup> to anie p'sons as they can have an oportunitie to sell and dispose thereof for the towne's best advantage."

1661, December 30th. At an Assembly, &c.

"It is alsoe ordered that l'res be written to Mr Henry Waddington <sup>Inquiry into</sup> concerning the towne's interest in Gallway, and that hee wold informe <sup>Accounts.</sup> himselfe of Capt Browne's receipts of rents and his other proceedings there, that course may be taken to bring him to an accompt for the whole, that the towne and his partner Mr Winstanley may be satisfied their proportion."

1662, June 3rd. At an Assembly, &c.

"It was ordered that the Maior and Balives shall make a l're of <sup>Power of</sup> Attorney to some sp'iall frends in Ireland, to enable them to calle <sup>Attorney.</sup> Captaine James Browne to an Accompt what moneys are by him received &c and concerning his other transaccons on behalfe of this Corporacon as to their affares in Gallway."

This is the last entry on the subject, which it is to be presumed brought the transaction to a close.

It might have been thought that in the midst of civil war, with exposure to siege and onslaught, there would be little opportunity for attention to the luxuries of plate for municipal banquets; but we find it otherwise. In 1644, after one siege 1644.

and in the expectation of another, there is recorded the following

Town's Plate.

"INVENTORIE OF THE TOWNE'S PLATE.

- "Imp<sup>s</sup> A great double Salt, double guilt—waight 19 oz.
- "A great guilt Cup, w<sup>th</sup> harts and cover waight 23 oz 3 qrs.
- "A great glt Cup w<sup>th</sup> halfe moone and cover w<sup>t</sup> 23 oz 1 qr.
- "A lesser Cup w<sup>thout</sup> a Cover doble guilt w<sup>t</sup> 9 oz 1<sup>dwt</sup>.
- "A Boll double guilt w<sup>t</sup> 12 oz 3 qrs.
- "A guilt Boll, given by George Marshall w<sup>t</sup> 14 oz.
- "A Beyker p<sup>t</sup> guilt w<sup>t</sup> 10 oz.
- "Another Beyker p<sup>t</sup> guilt, w<sup>t</sup> 10 oz 1 qr.
- "Twelve silver spoones called Apostles spoones.
- "One great sylv<sup>r</sup> Boule ex dono Mr Edwards.
- "One Escuchion w<sup>th</sup> the Towne's Arms ingraved.
- "One Sylver Cann given by Ralph Seacome Ald<sup>r</sup>.
- "(lost) One Sylver Mace.
- "The Towne's Seale in 2 p<sup>ts</sup> for statuts."

When the town was taken by Prince Rupert, in 1644, no doubt, as stated by the Corporation in their petitions to Parliament, there was considerable plunder, but the plate appears to have been preserved—probably secreted, but to some extent injured. On October 22nd, 1656, it is

1656.

Exchange of  
Plate.

"Ordered that whereas dyvers Peeces of Plate belonging to the towne are much decayed and bruysed, and some cups are broken and not fashionable, they shall be exchanged for new Plate such as may be good and serviceable, and the towne's arms to be sett and ingraved upon them, and the Ballives are to disburse money for the same."

1657, October 23rd.

Inventory.

"Mem<sup>d</sup> that the Towne's Plate delivered ov<sup>r</sup> unto the succeeding Maior was inventoried as followeth

- "Item the bottom of a great Salt guylded.
- "One great Cupp guylded with harts and a cover.
- "One great Cup guylded w<sup>th</sup> a halfe Moone & Cover.
- "(This disposed to church use 1667).
- "One lesser Cup guylded without cover.
- "(This also to church use 1667).
- "One Wyne Bowle guylded.
- "One Sylv<sup>r</sup> Bowle of Mr Edwards's guift.
- "One Cann guilden of Mr Seacome's guift.
- "12 Silver Spoones.
- "2 Silver Beykers.

"One Escucheon with the Towne's Armes upon it.

Plate.

"(This the Towne's Waite hath).

"One Cawdell Cupp with a top, w<sup>ch</sup> were exchanged for the top of  
"a Sault and Marshall's Cup by order.

"Two Silver Wyne Cupps bought by order 25<sup>th</sup> June 1667.

"The Towne's Comon Seale.

"Statute Seale, the greater p'te."

In a previous chapter reference was made to disputes with Chester as to its interference with the privileges of the Port of Liverpool. An occasional outbreak of the kind still continued. On January 20th, 1647, at the very height of the 1647. civil war, occurs the following entry:—

"It is desired that whereas this Port is a free and independent Port, Dispute with that all the officers for Customes may bee p'perly belonging to this port, Chester. and that the officers of Chester may not hereafter usurp anie power or authoritie in this Port; as from Charter, or Charters, and auncient grants and customes, are that wee shall enjoy all such lib'ties and priviledges as anie other Port within the King's dominions.

"This was p't of the Record<sup>s</sup> direccōns to London."

"1652, Jany xxi<sup>st</sup> A spetial l're was written to the Governor con- 1652.  
cerning the Chestermen's goeing about to p'judice this Port by seeking to Letter to  
get lib'tie to land goods on Worrall syde, and to pay customs there, w<sup>ch</sup> is Governor.  
contrarie to o' privilege and ch'."

1658, October 29th, there is the following entry:— 1658.

"Be it remembered that upon a contest and difference aysing betwixt Inquiry.  
Major Henry Ogle, Mr Brett, Mr Michael Tarlton & Mr Harvard, the officers for collecting of customs at the severall ports of Chester and Liverpoole, concerning the takeing of such dueties and customs as might aryse for M'chant's goods imported or landed on this syde of the place called the Redd Stones in Worrall w<sup>ch</sup> is all w<sup>th</sup>in the lymitts & p'cincts of the s<sup>d</sup> port of Liverpoole, it was debated, referred and ordered as followeth viz

"That Major Ogle did affirme that the Red Stones is the place w<sup>ch</sup> makes a division betwixt this port and Chester, and that from thence all along the sea syde and up to Sankey Bridges soe farr as the tyde flowes, all customes & dueties are payable and ought to be received by the officers of Liv'poole on both sydes of the river of M'cie.

"Mr Brett alleadged that hee knowes not how far the lib'ties reach, but that Liverpoole had beene a member of Chester and that it is to the advantage of the state that the officers of Helbree should rec' there, being neare unto them. Major Ogle replied that it is to the disadvantage of the state if it shold bee soe, and that the s'vice wilbe donne for a lesse charge

by y<sup>m</sup> of Liv'poole it being but six myles from Liverpoole & is sixteene from Chester.

Resolution.

"Soe that upon the whole matter it was concluded and resolved by the said officers, that all Goods and M'chandizes landing within the same places and above shalbe entered and pay custome at Liverpoole; and Mr Dormett is required to give notice and stay or seiz all goods soe landed to be entered in the custom house at Liverpoole, and that Owner Wright who hath herein miscarried be no more employed by them of Chester, but that William Harrison shall be employed as Dep'tie for both officers, and shalbe paid by Major Ogle for his s'vis to Liverpoole syde, and by Mr Brett for Chester syde, and the paym<sup>ts</sup> to be certified from each to other, that soe he may not rec' his wages duble."

The matter was finally set at rest by the following award:—

Award.

"Whereas difference did aryse betwixt the Officers of the Customs in Chester and Liverpoole as above said, in that they of Chester did interupt and hind' them of Liverpoole of their antient lib'ties on Chesheir syde, but the whole matter being treated of and referred by both of them the 29th day of 8<sup>br</sup> 1658 to Mr Samuel Sandford Surveyor Generall for the Customs and exsice, hee did declare and conclud that the lib'ties of Liverpoole doe reach unto the accustomed place on the further syde of the redd stones, and advised that the Corporation of Liverpoole shold sett a mere stone there to divyde the said lib'ties and that all goods there landed shall pay customs to the officers of the custom-house of Liverpoole, and soe consequently Towne's Duties.

"SAM<sup>L</sup> SANDFORD."

1658.  
Dispute with  
Moore.

A similar dispute as to boundaries or "liberties" arose with Edward Moore, of Bank Hall, the author of the *Moore Rental*, whose relations with the Corporation were never of a very friendly character, as may be seen from the publication referred to. The boundary of his estate adjoined that of the borough, the two being separated by a small stream, called "Beacon's Gutter." Owing to some supposed encroachment, a suit in Chancery was commenced in 1658, by Mr. Moore against Mr. Gilbert Formby (Mayor in 1656-7) and others, on the part of the Corporation. We read in the records—

"2<sup>o</sup> die Augusti 1658.

Chancery  
Suit.

"Whereas a certaine suyte is comenced in the High Court of Chancerie against Gibb<sup>t</sup> Formby and others of this towne by Edward Moore Esq<sup>r</sup> concerning the Walking of the Lib'ties last yeare. It is ord'ed that the same suyte shalbe answered unto and defended at the publick charge of the



towne forth of the comon stock and a comission sued out for taking the anweres of Mr Thomas Will'mson, and the rest, according to the Recorder's advice, who was therein retained accordingly, whereto two of the Deft<sup>s</sup> have answered; Mr Formby being then at sea, & Mr Sandiford's name mistaken, have not answered."

1659, July 4th. Record of the Port Moot:—

1659.

"We ord<sup>r</sup> that the merestones for the Lib'ties shall be sett by the advice Mere Stones. of the Maior and Ald'men and other knowing p'sons they think fitt."

1659, October 7th. It is recorded

"That interrogatories be drawne up and p'paration made for executing Evidence. of the comission ag<sup>t</sup> Edward Moore Esq concerning the lib'ties of this towne according to notice given, and that Richard Holland be sworne & examined; hee can depose that the lib'ties extend round about the Beacon heyres, and ov<sup>r</sup> the Beacon-Gutter within the feild; and that Mr Crosse be sent unto to p'duce the boundaries and deposicons taken long since in the Court of Wards, and that in the meane tyme Ald'man Blackmore, Ald. Massam and Ald<sup>r</sup> Andoe doe treat with Mr Moore about Treaty. the composeing of those differences in that suyte depending in the high Court of Chancerie agt Mr Thos Will'mson, Mr Gilbt Formby and others Defend<sup>ts</sup>."

1660, January 28th. Record—

1660.

"To cause a mocon and reference to the Masters in Chanc'ie to have Depositions. the Depositions heretofore taken upon Mr Moore's p'te ag<sup>t</sup> Gilb<sup>t</sup> Formby &c concerning o<sup>r</sup> Lib'ties to be supressed, in Chanc'ie, it being sureptiously obtained, and his sole comon illegally issued & executed, and joyne in a new comon, name com<sup>s</sup> for the towne, John Fox Esq, Michael Tarleton, Rd Mercer &c."

"June 14th, Att an Assembly of the Comon Councell of this Towne holden before the Worp<sup>n</sup> Mr Maior &c. It was ordered consented and agreed upon that Mr Maior and the Aldermen shall treat with Mr Moore Negotiations. concerning the p'sent differences betwixt him and the Towne in relation to the lib'ties, and shall endeavo<sup>r</sup> to compose & end the same, and this Assembly doth allow of & confirme what they shall conclud and agree upon."

The differences were thus settled for the time, but left a very disagreeable feeling rankling in the mind of Mr. Moore, which he did not fail to give expression to, in his *Rental*.

*Charters.* It has been noticed above that the exclusive Charters. privileges granted in the Charter of Henry III. (1229), after

several vicissitudes, were withdrawn in the charter of Philip and Mary (1556), notwithstanding which they continued to be maintained and enforced by the Corporation. Various attempts were made, as appears by the records, to obtain a new charter which should legalise these extortions, and also sanction the powers usurped by the self-elected Council.

1617. 1617, November 27th. An entry occurs as follows:—

Application  
for New  
Charter.

“Whereas there hath bene dyvers somes of money heretofore dispended and defrayed about the p<sup>c</sup>ureinge of a New Charter for the towne and for the confirmacon of the lib<sup>t</sup>ies there, w<sup>ch</sup> hitherto hath taken little effect, and this day it being moved unto the said wor<sup>ll</sup> Mr Edward Moore that hee would undertake the p<sup>s</sup>ecutinge of the same, w<sup>ch</sup> although hee would not absolutely grant unto, yet upon hope hee would undertake the same busines, it is this day ordered and agreed upon, that a Lay of x<sup>ll</sup> shalbee levied and gaithered w<sup>th</sup>in this towne of the inhabitants w<sup>th</sup>in the said towne onely; and that all forrayne burgesses shall further paie after the same rate as they are abillited for their towne bargaines, and if any forrayne Burgesse shall refuse to pay such lay, he and they to loose the benefite of their freedome.”

§1626.  
Charter of  
Charles I.

A ley was made, and realised the sum of £47 18s. 2d. A charter was obtained from King Charles I. in 1626. The terms of this charter sufficiently indicate the apprehensions of the Council. It gives a confirmation of all rights and privileges derived under former charters; and then proceeds to enjoin and command the Attorney and Solicitor-General, the Judges, and all the Crown officers,

Provisions.

“that neither they nor some or any of them, any writ or information of *Quo Warranto* or any other writ or writs or processes . . . against the Mayor, Baliffs and Burgesses . . . . for any causes, things matters offences, by claim or usurpation . . . . duly claimed attempted used, had, or usurped . . . . may prosecute or cause to be prosecuted or continued. Willing also that the same Mayor &c by any justice, officer or minister may not be in the least molested or hindred for the said due use, claim or *abuse* of any other liberties, franchises or jurisdictions . . . . or be compelled to answer for them or any of them.”

1650.

Even with this protection, the Corporation do not appear to have felt easy in their minds. On the 29th November, 1650, we read

"Upon readeing the Governor's letter (not inserted) concerning the Application p'ferring of a peticon to the Parliam<sup>t</sup> for the renuing of o' Charter and confirmation of the auntient priuiledges of the towne; It was resolved that wee shold advise w<sup>th</sup> the Recorder about it, and to have his assistance in the draweing up of o' peticon hereafter, but not as yet to stir in it."

The charters were sent up to London. There is an entry in June following requiring them to be sent back, and so the matter slept until after the Restoration.

During this portion of the town's history, the members of Parliament were paid for their attendance.

In 1611, December 3rd—

1611.

"At an Assembly, by the consent of the greater p'te of the Counsell conc'ninge the late Burgesses Mr Brook and Mr Ruishinge, their discharge of the somes of money w<sup>ch</sup> they challenged for their attendance at the p'liam<sup>t</sup>; for their p'ticular somes whereof they exhibited their sev'all not<sup>s</sup> to Mr Maior in that behalf, whereby it appeared Mr Brook his demand to be xxviii<sup>li</sup> xiiij<sup>s</sup>, whereof he had received in allowance and paym<sup>ts</sup> xiiij<sup>li</sup> iiij<sup>s</sup> vij<sup>d</sup>, and so rested due unto him xiv<sup>li</sup>, iiij<sup>s</sup>, v<sup>d</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> iiij<sup>s</sup> v<sup>d</sup> was deducted in regard of his stay in Chester about his owne busines foure dayes and so he was allowed xiiij<sup>li</sup> absolutelie, provided he deliv'ed first the New Ch'rt<sup>r</sup><sup>1</sup> and all such ch'r'es and wrytings of the towne's as he hath, or had deliv'ed him, as by a note thereof remayning amongst the records of this towne will charge. And in default thereof to discharge himselfe upon his othe."

Payment of  
Members.  
Brooke and  
Ruishinge.

"And Mr Ruichinge his demand being xxvii<sup>li</sup>, the whole councell did allowe him it, yet hopinge of his owne free will, in regard he was not put to his othe for the same, that he would abate some p'cell thereof, whereupon he being called willinglie in respect of the towne's kinde dealing w<sup>th</sup> him, did abate xl<sup>s</sup>, and so to have xxv<sup>li</sup> to be paid him by the new Maior and Bayliffes."

Such members as Sir Gilbert Ireland and Colonel Birch do not appear to have been paid, but on the 28th January, 1658, there is an

1658.

"Order concerning the Towne's concernm<sup>ts</sup> in London, that a horse and ten pounds in moneys in hand be paid to Ald'man Blackmore, burgesse for this towne, and what more hee spends is to be allowed him during his attendance in the Parliam<sup>t</sup> there w<sup>th</sup> Coll Ireland."

Payment to  
Blackmore.

<sup>1</sup> It is not clear what this refers to. There had been no new charter since that of Philip and Mary, in 1555.

Blackmore appears to have been the last representative who received an allowance. Soon after the Restoration, the seats became an object of ambition, and in 1670, the modern system of lavish expenditure was commenced by Sir William Bucknall.

1601.  
Poor Law.

The general law for the maintenance of the poor was enacted in 1601 (43rd Elizabeth), but for many years it was very imperfectly administered, and the local bodies had occasionally to be stimulated to their duty. In 1630, the following mandamus was addressed to the Corporation, being probably a circular sent round the kingdom :—

1630.

1630, January 31st.

Proclamation.

“After o<sup>r</sup> hartie commendacions His Ma<sup>ty</sup> in his Princely care and love to the due administ<sup>r</sup>acon of Justice takes notice of many disord<sup>s</sup> growen in this kingdome through neglect or faint execu<sup>c</sup>on of those lawes that tend to the releiveinge of impotent poore people, settinge to worke those that are able, and punishinge such as are idle or vagrant ; and stirr upp all others to activenes and diligence in their plac<sup>s</sup>, for what greater motive cann bee than to see such zeale of justice in a Kinge, hath pleased to expres unto us what he dislikes and what hee desires to be done, both for his owne better informa<sup>c</sup>on and the more due execu<sup>c</sup>on of those lawes ; to w<sup>ch</sup> end after mature delib<sup>a</sup>con his Ma<sup>ty</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the advise of his privy Councell hath thought of a way w<sup>ch</sup> will appere unto you by the tenor of a Comission and by orders and direccons w<sup>ch</sup> herewith wee send unto you, put into bookes in print, that soe the same may bee the better published executed and obeyed, willinge and requireinge you p<sup>s</sup>ently upon receipt hereof, to assemble yo<sup>s</sup>elves together and take such course that what is thereby required may be exactly p<sup>r</sup>formed. And of yo<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ceedinges and the course you have taken, you are to certify us, that soe wee may the better discerne the diligence or negligence used in this service, whereof his Ma<sup>ty</sup> will require a good accompt att our handes.

“And soe wee bid you hartily farewell.

“From Whitehall the last of January 1630.”

It is very remarkable, during the stirring times of the civil war, how very little the Corporation of Liverpool mixed itself up in the national politics. It is difficult to gather from the records any political feeling whatever. The execution of



King Charles is only noticed in the following brief entry respecting the holding of the local courts :—

1649, March 27th.

1649.

“ Memorandum that it was p<sup>r</sup>ounded by Mr Maior unto this Assembly concerning the keepinge of Courts, and resolved that Mr Record<sup>r</sup> shalbe sent unto, to advise concerning the same in regard of the King's death and Coll. Moore's letter inclosed sent him; whose advise was wee might, only altering the style of the Court.”

Whatever party might be in power, the Corporation were principally employed in looking after their own interests, which were never lost sight of, as has been seen by the extracts above given.

There are not many notices of the Corporation mixing itself up with military affairs; but, in accordance with the custom of the time, a certain quantity of weapons had to be provided. Thus, on October 23rd, 1623, it is recorded—

Provision of Arms.

At an Assembly, &c.,

“ It was agreed upon that John Callowe should looke unto & keepe in good repayer, all the harnes belonging unto this towne & now in the custodie of the now Bayliffs, videl<sup>t</sup> x<sup>en</sup> musketts, x<sup>en</sup> pyeks, viij<sup>t</sup> halberts, ten rests & ten bandilerowes, and one drumme, w<sup>th</sup> carefull scowreinge and dressinge as need shall requier, and not to deliver any part of the same unto any p<sup>r</sup>son to use w<sup>th</sup>out the consent of the Maior and Bayliffs for the tyme beinge. And to have for his paynes the some of vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> yerely to be paid by the bayliffs for the tyme beinge.”



## MUNICIPAL OFFICERS.

---

The general relations of the municipal officers continued much as before during the first half of the seventeenth century. Some of the offices were sold or bargained for. Thus we find an entry as follows :—

Town Clerk  
Hewitt  
deceased.

1611. "About the sixteenth daye of August this p'sent yeare, John Hewet, towne clerke of this borough of Liv'poole dyed, who had contynued the said place for the space of thrtie and fyve years, being ' senex et plenus dierum.'

Tarbocke  
appointed.

"After whose death at an Assemblie holden in the Towne Halle of Liv'poole upon soleme somonce of all Burgesses to appeare before the said Maior for the ellecting of a Towne Clarke to succede in the said place, Upon advised and delib'ate consideration had to whom th' ellecon did app'teyne, whether to the Corporacon in gen'all or to the Maior, Aldermen and Consell of the said Borough, yet in ende by the Councell of this towne, Peter Tarbocke of Wytton in the County of Chester was elected and chosen to be Towne Clerke in steed of the said Mr Hewet. And then it was concluded and agreed by the comon consent of the whole howse, That Peter Tarbocke then elected towne clerke is, and shall delyv' on New Yere's day next to the Maior of this towne then beinge, in plate the some of fortie pounds, and ten pounds more in plate on Midsom' even, all w<sup>ch</sup> is to be bestowed on the Maior, marked with the Cormorant the Towne's Armes on it. And y<sup>t</sup> the said plate shalbe by the said Maior delyv'ed ov<sup>r</sup> to the Maior then next ensuyinge and so from Maior to Maior successyvely."

This bargain was faithfully carried out. We read—

Plate  
presented.

"1612—Dec<sup>r</sup> 23. Mem<sup>d</sup> y<sup>t</sup> Peter Tarbok elected Towne Clarke did according to an order and decree sett downe, delyv' upon the said xxiiij<sup>d</sup> day of Decemb' 1611 unto Edward Moore Esquier Maior of this towne certen p'cells of plate hereafter sp'fied videl<sup>t</sup>"

"Item—A doble Salte doble gilt, wayinge 19½ oz

"A great Cup w<sup>th</sup> a Cover doble gilt with haeds  
wayinge 23 oz and 1 quarter

"A lesser Cup w<sup>th</sup>out a Cover doble gilt 9 oz 1 dwt

"A boole doble gilt 12 oz 3 dwt 6 sc.

“One beaker p’cell gilt 10 oz 1 dwt  
 “One other beaker p’cell gilt 10 oz 1 qr.  
 “One silver can p’tē guilt of the guift of Mr Ralph  
 Secome Ald’ deceased.”

Within a year and a-half of his appointment, Mr. Tarbock died, when the following record occurs :—

“1613 xxii<sup>nd</sup> die Aprilis. At an Assemblie holden in the Comon halle of this towne before Mr Maior, the Aldermen, Bayliffs and Burgesses of the Comon Councell, it was agreed by full consent of the whole howse y<sup>t</sup> whereas at the last Assemblie holden in the said towne hall it was agreed y<sup>t</sup> Mrs Tarbocke wyfe of Peter Tarbocke late deceased shold pay to the towne xii<sup>li</sup> being arere by hym unto the towne for his composition for his place, & y<sup>t</sup> thereof she shuld be allowed backe for the use and behalfe of her children vj<sup>li</sup> upon Mr Maior his entreaty in her behalfe, it was consented unto by the greater p’tē of the fortie then p’sent y<sup>t</sup> according to the former order the money shalbe laid downe to Mr Maior to have full power by consent aforesaid to allow her back what in his discreation shall be thought fitt, and the allowance by him to be allowed back to goe to the use of her children according to the form’ order any thing to the cont’y in the form’ order notw<sup>th</sup>standing.”

1613.  
Decease of  
Tarbocke.

“The same day Mr Robt Brooke was elected Towne Clerke and condicoed to geve a comendacon to the towne, for his admittance fiftie pounds, to be paid in man’ and forme videl<sup>t</sup> xx<sup>li</sup> at, in, and upon the feast day of St Michell th’ archangell nowē next ensuyngē, and xx<sup>li</sup> upon the feast day of the Annu’ciacon of o<sup>r</sup> blessed lady S<sup>te</sup> Mary the Virgyn, and ten pounds, last part thereof at, in, and upon the feast of St Michell th’ archangell, w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe in the yere of o<sup>r</sup> Lord God 1614, & to bring Mr Wm Gamull or Mr Harvy of Chester Aldermen, to be bound w<sup>th</sup> hym for paym<sup>t</sup> therof to the towne.”

Brooke  
elected.

Mr. Brooke did not continue very long in office. In 1624 an election of Town Clerk took place, which is a very memorable episode in the history of the town.

In 1624 there is an entry—

“Robtus Dobson gen’ allocat’ cli’cum cur’ ib’m & dedit p’ ingressu suo in tempore Joh<sup>is</sup> Will’mson lxx<sup>li</sup> ad Burgen’ cur’ p’d.”<sup>1</sup>

1624.

Dobson  
elected.

In 1626, the charter of Charles I. was obtained, and therein Dobson is recognised as appointed Town Clerk.

1626.

<sup>1</sup> Robert Dobson, gentleman, appointed Town Clerk by the same Assembly, and gave for his entry, in the time of John Williamson, £70 to the Assembly aforesaid.

The first signal of warfare was manifested in 1633, when the Town Clerk claimed precedence over the Bailiffs, relating to which is the following record :—

1633. Dispute about Precedence. 1633, January 31st. "Att an Assembly this day holden in the Comon hall of this towne before John Moore Esq (and others) Yt was and is ord'ed and decreed as followeth, That forasmuch as upon the search and veiw of auntyent records of this towne, yt therein evidently app<sup>s</sup> that the Clark of this towne for the tyme beinge hath ev' beene elected or allowed ev'y St Luke Day af' the ellection of the Maior and Ballives and so hath had his place by auntyente usage of this towne, accordingly the Ballives for the tyme beinge haveinge ev' p'cedencye of him, not only in their yerely election but also in their tyme of their attendance upon the Maior of this towne, boath at Church, Co'te, Markett, or oth' publick meetinge. That Rob<sup>te</sup> Dobson nowe townclarke and so all town clarks successively hereafter shalbee yerely elected or admitted as auntyently they have beene, and that Rich<sup>d</sup> Tarleton and Edw<sup>d</sup> Chamb's now Ballives and so all other ballives of this towne successively for the tyme beinge, shall have p'cedency of place w<sup>th</sup>in this towne of the p'sent Towne Clark, and so of all other townes Clarks that hereafter may bee . . . And further yt is againe ord'ed by the Comon Councell aforesaid that the nowe Towne Clark and so ev'y town Clark successively shalbee ready in his gowne to attend the Maior of this towne at Church and m'kett . . . And forasmuch as yt is apparent that heretofore some ord<sup>rs</sup> made by this howse heretofore are wantinge and not recorded in the great book, wherein the Records for this towne are written, Yt is therefore ord'ed by the Maior Ald' and Communalty assembled aforesaid, that the Towne Clark shall fairely write downe in the great Booke before this howse breake up, not only this ord<sup>r</sup> but ev'y other ord<sup>r</sup> yt shalbee made by this howse."

Neglect of Records.

The entry was made by Mr. Dobson, no doubt sulkily enough, but in 1636 he was again brought to book.

1636, October 24th. At the great Port Moot and View of Frank Pledge it is recorded :—

Dobson presented by Port Moot. "It<sup>m</sup> Wee p'sent Mr Rob'te Dobson for not entringe the Records accordinge to his Oth."

"It<sup>m</sup> Wee p'sent the said Robert for takeinge place of the Bayliffes, contrarie to ancient ord<sup>r</sup> and an ord<sup>r</sup> made in Mr John Moore's tyme."

"It<sup>m</sup> Wee p'sent the said Robte Dobsonn for takeinge excysse fees contrarie to auncient orders."

"The said Dobson doth praye a Trav'se for the three severall p'sentm<sup>ts</sup> against him, and to everie of them pleadeth 'not guiltie.'"

"And it is graunted by the Courte that the said Trav'se shalbe tryed



here the first Port Moote Co<sup>te</sup> of quart<sup>r</sup> sessions, to be houlden the first Courte for his Ma<sup>te</sup> aft<sup>r</sup> Christmas next."

It was accordingly so tried, and the jury found him guilty on all the three counts of the indictment; but we read further—

"Upon motion of the said Robt Dobson unto the Courte concerninge the insufficiencie of forme of the said p'sentm<sup>ts</sup> it is agreed and allowed by the said Court that a '*Cassat*' shall be entred upon ev'ie severall p'sentment."

Conviction  
quashed.

1636, October 26th. At an Assembly of the Mayor and Council, after recapitulating the charges, it was resolved—

"That if the said Robt Dobson or anie other in his name.....shall stur up or p'sente anie Bill, Playnte or Suit against the Maior Aldermen or Grand Jury &c.....all chardges costs and expences.....shall be defrayed at the comon charge, forth of the comon boxe stocke and treasure of the said towne, or by a general ley or contribution. And forasmuch as the aforesaid Robt Dobson hath voluntarily confessed his errors and offences in not entring the records according to his oath, the said Dobson shall be debarred and suspended from his place of Clarkeshipp.....and shall deliver upp all the Records Co<sup>te</sup> Rowles, Escriptes, books and Munyments whatsoever. And further, if anie one of this Assembly shall publish, discover or revaile the secrets, substance or p'ceedings of this Assembly he shall not only be excluded out of this howse and companie, but shall undergoe such other punishm<sup>t</sup> fyne and sensure as the said Maior &c shall think meete."

Dobson  
suspended.

1636, October 29th. At another meeting of the Council, where Dobson was summoned to appear, it is recorded that he

"not onely denied to deliver upp the same Records, Co<sup>r</sup> Rowles &c but evelly, unreverently and unbefittinglie behaved himselfe before the said Maior and Aldermen, uttering divers p'emptorie, arrogant and unseemly words. And havinge heretofore beene bound unto the peace—and presented by a Jury for breach thereof, the said Maior demanded sureties for his good behaviour, which the said Dobson denying to give, the said Maior and Justice thereupon comitted him unto prison into the custodie of Ralph Massame one of the Bayliffes, who takeing him downe out of the said Councill Chamber with him, the said Dobson forcibly broake from s<sup>d</sup> Bayliffes, & soe made an escape, contrarie to the oath of a freeman, whereof the said Mr Maior being certified caused the Bayliffe to goe fynd him out, and bring him againe, who being found out and brought before

Dobson defies  
the  
Corporation.

Dobson  
committed.

the said Maior, the said Dobson did fynd sureties for his good behaviour and appearance at the next Portmoote."

The Port Moot returned to the charge; and in 1637, January 9th, there is the following curious entry:—

Dobson again  
presented.

"Item—p'd<sup>s</sup> Juratores super sacr'm suu' p'sentant q'd Rob'tus Dobson de Liverpoole p'd gen' infra spat'm duos annos ult p'terit ac infra jurisdictionem hujus Cur' imoderate et indecente hec Angli verba sequen' loquutus est et utavit viz' 'Whosoever the divell was Maoir hee would be the Towne's Clarke.'"

Another count charged him with breaking prison after having been committed by the Mayor and senior Alderman.

A third count accused him of insulting the Mayor with indecent words.

A fourth stated that he had, on the 22nd of the preceding November, "malignantly, scandalously, and opprobriously insulted the Bailiffs and Burgesses by calling them by an English name—to wit, 'Bashragges.'"

A final charge states that he had forfeited his recognizances to keep the peace, by using irreverent words, and indecent gestures, against the Mayor in the presence of the aldermen.

Writ of  
*Certiorari*.

Dobson traversed this attack by obtaining a writ of *certiorari* to remove the cause to the next assizes at Lancaster; whereupon, at the next Poot Moot, on the 3rd April, 1637, the following presentment was made by the jurors:—

1637.

"Curia Dni Regis Portmoote &c

Dobson again  
presented.

"Item they p'sent Robert Dobson Gent. for that hee being a free Burges of this towne and Burrow of Liverpoole, did upon y<sup>e</sup> xvij<sup>th</sup> day of September last past 1636 within y<sup>e</sup> Jur<sup>n</sup> of this Court bring and deliver into y<sup>e</sup> same Court his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Writt of Cerciorar' bearing date y<sup>e</sup> third day of 7<sup>br</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> 12<sup>th</sup> yeare of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> raigne y<sup>e</sup> now is, thereby comanding the then Maior, Ballives and Burgesses of y<sup>e</sup> same towne, to certify a P'sentm<sup>t</sup> unto his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Judges of Assize at Lanc<sup>r</sup>, y<sup>e</sup> next assizes then

The aforesaid jurors, upon their solemn oath, present that Robert Dobson, of Liverpool aforesaid, gentleman, within the space of two years last past, and within the jurisdiction of this Court, did immodestly and indecently speak and utter the following words, viz., "Whosoever the divell was Maior he would be the Town's Clerk."

following. Whereupon hee stood p'sented by the Grand Jury at the Port Moot Court heere holden for o' said sovereign Lord y<sup>e</sup> King upon Monday next after y<sup>e</sup> feast of St Jo. Baptist last past, contrarie to his oath of a free Burges of this Burrow, and in contempt and p'judice of y<sup>e</sup> imunities lib<sup>ts</sup> privileges and franchises thereof; amer' in xx<sup>s</sup>."

A second presentment charges him with violating his recognizances, and amerces him in 60s.

The cause under the writ of *certiorari* came in due course before the assizes at Lancaster, in May 1637, of which there 1637.  
is the following record :—

"Ad Ass'ias tent' apud Lanc' die Lune in quinta Septimana quadrages' Anno R<sup>s</sup> Caroli xij. Trial at Lancaster.

"Whereas Roberte Dobson of Liverpoole Gent. heretofore sued out sev'all Writts of Certiorarie for removeinge of two p'sentm<sup>ts</sup> and a Recognizance out of the Burrough and Port of Liverpoole into this Co<sup>te</sup> And whereas this Co<sup>te</sup> was this day informed by Mr Hugh Rigbie and Mr John Vernon, beinge of Councell with Mr Maior and the burgesses of the said Burrough, that the same is a verie auncient Corpora<sup>con</sup> and Porte towne of this Realme, and hath an auncient Charter to hould Pleas of the Crowne and to make by-lawes for the good of the said Corpora<sup>con</sup>, and to punish such as bee refractorie therein, and that the said p'sentm<sup>ts</sup> and recognizance were taken for offences of the same nature comitted within the same Corpora<sup>con</sup>. And therefore prayed that p'cedendoes may be awarded; and further complayned against the said Dobson for embes-sellinge theire records and other misdemeanors.

"Now upon full and delib'ate hereinge of both parties and their Councell in open Courte, It is ordred, that Writts of p'cedendoes shalbe awarded. And it is alsoe further ordred by assent of both parties, that the examina<sup>con</sup> of all these matters in variance shall be referred unto S<sup>r</sup> George Booth and S<sup>r</sup> Gilberte Houghton Knt<sup>s</sup> and Barronetts, Thos Ireland and Edward Bridgeman Esqrs or anie thereof them. . . . And in the meane tyme the p'ceedings to be stayed." Cause referred.

Then occurs the following entry :—

"According to this Order within written, wee whose names are subscribed mett at Liv'poole the xxij<sup>d</sup> of May 1637 and upon deliberate Award. hereing of all busines in variance betwixt the Maior and Corpora<sup>con</sup> there and the said Robt Dobson, with the consent of the said Maior and Councell of the same towne then assembled together, and of the said Robt Dobson, have mediated and reconciled the same differences accordinge to this yo<sup>r</sup> work<sup>s</sup> reference, and soe wee rest at yo<sup>r</sup> Lor<sup>ps</sup> service, and

afterwards the 23<sup>rd</sup> of May the said Robt Dobson made his submission accordingly.

“GILB<sup>T</sup> HOUGHTON  
“THOMAS IRELAND  
“EDW<sup>D</sup> BRIDGEMAN.”

One cannot help admiring the calmness and good sense exhibited by the superior Court in putting an end to this litigation.

Welles  
appointed  
Town Clerk.

Dobson did not continue in his office, for within a week after this decision, another Town Clerk was appointed by the Council in the person of Mr. Richard Welles,

“comended by the hono<sup>ble</sup> S<sup>r</sup> George Vernon, Knight one of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Justices of the Comon Pleas at Lancaster, and Cheefe Justice of Assizes at Lancaster.”

Contribution.

He did not, like Dobson, pay down a sum for the place, but he undertook to pay a yearly contribution of £6 13s. 4d. “to the Chappel Wardens of Liverpoole aforesaid,” but for what purpose it is not stated.

1641.  
Winstanley  
Town Clerk.

In 1641, Mr. Welles resigned, and Mr. John Winstanley was appointed his successor. Before his election, a resolution was passed by the Council that out of the fees received in the Mayor’s Court, ten pounds annually shall be appropriated for the benefit and better maintenance of the Church and Schoolmaster, the remainder to the sole use of the Town Clerk.

This did not turn out satisfactorily. Twelve months afterwards there appears the following record :—

Remonstrance

“1642, July 11. John Walker Gen. Maior  
“Att an Assemblie this day held it was p<sup>r</sup>ounded to the house by Mr Winstanley concerning the x<sup>li</sup> p<sup>r</sup> ann charged upon the Clark’s place as a great greevance to him, hee affirmeing it to be illegall and unjust, that the fees w<sup>ch</sup> p<sup>r</sup>perly belong to the Clarke shold be taken from him and diverted to anie other use, especially hee never consenting thereunto, and thereupon offered to make it to appeare upon accompt, that the moitie of all fees received at the severall Courts in a yeare’s space wold not amount unto x<sup>li</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> wold not be a competent allowance for his paines and dilligence therein, whereby it appears that the said place (in regard of these troublesome tymes) is much worse than formerly it hath beene. And therefore desired that the same might be wholly taken off; howbeit in respect of



the towne's p'sent necessitie for money hee did offer to deposit and pay (as a voluntary gratuitie) unto the Ballive's hands the sum of x<sup>li</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> p'sent to be employed for the towne's use, w<sup>ch</sup> was accepted of and paid accordingly."

On the 21st October, 1653, it is entered that at a meeting of the Council

"the Wryteing next above written was taken into considera<sup>con</sup> and thought fitt and ordred by the same Assembly that the same Wrying bee utterly outed made null and voyde, as if the same had nev<sup>r</sup> beene entered in this book." Repudiated.

A very graceful resignation of office is recorded under date 28th July, 1634, when

1634.

"Thomas Molyneux Esq Recorder of this Corpora<sup>con</sup> came voluntarily and loveingly, & did desire this howse to disburden him of that chardge, and did desire that the howse would (in respect of his age) take no discortesie at him: and he hartily desireth that the howse would elect Hugh Rigby Esq to bee his successor, and to have the fees due to the Recorder," which was accordingly done. Resignation of Recorder.

The Mayoralty has not always been an object of ambition. We read, on the 18th October, 1614—

1614.

"M<sup>d</sup> y<sup>t</sup> this day Mr Wm Banester Alderman was, by the gen'all consente of the whole Comonaltie of this towne elected Maior, w<sup>ch</sup> he refusinge, did yeld to pay his fyne w<sup>ch</sup> was x<sup>li</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> fyne the said Mr Banester did pay before Xmas now next following." Mayoralty declined.

During the fortification of the town, at the time of the civil war, an officer, called the *Muringer*, was appointed to take charge of the walls. He is found in the list of officers in 1650. Appointment of Muringer.

The Bailiffs were officers originally appointed to take charge of the revenues, both for the Crown and the borough, the *Major* of whom became in time recognised as Mayor. Bailiffs.

In the list for 1650, the distinction between the two is alluded to. James Williamson is elected Bailiff "*pro Republica*," Thomas Ayndoe to the same office "*pro Villa et Burgo*."

There was another officer, called the *Mallinger*, who is apt to be confounded with the *Muringer*, though their duties had Mallinger.

no connexion. He was the crier of the Court ; and is found in the lists for 1626 and 1639.<sup>1</sup>

1655. He was the predecessor of the more modern "bellman," and in the appointment in 1655, he is called "Cryer or Bellman."

During this period of the town's history, the office of Alderman was not merely honorary ; he had serious duties to fulfil. In 1617, it is ordered by the Assembly—

Duties of  
Aldermen.

"in regard of a denyall made by Mr Edm. Rose Alderm' to the said Maior to goe a message to the heath to certifie some measurers and Darbie men that then were measuringe the same ; that if any Alderman hereafter doe deny to goe in the towne's behalf any reasonable journey having his lawfull charges allowed him as hee shalbee by the said Maior appointed that he shall forfeite for ev'ie such offence x<sup>ii</sup> to the towne's use."

<sup>1</sup> "*Mallare*, hoc est in placitum vel iudicium vocare, citare, submonere."—Spelman, *Glossarium Archæiologicum*.



## CORPORATE ESTATE AND REVENUES.

---

However narrow and short-sighted the Corporation may have been during this century in the restrictions imposed on trade and commerce, in respect to their landed estates they displayed a pertinacity and foresight worthy of all commendation. They were always prepared to defend their rights, and to resist encroachments from whatever quarter.

The estate of the Corporation in the first half of the seventeenth century comprised the lands described in the last chapter, and a considerable number of tenements within the town ; how acquired does not appear.

Corporate  
Estate.

The Molyneux family, having estates abutting upon and intermixed with those of the Corporation, being also lessees of the Crown rents, and proprietors in West Derby adjoining Liverpool, often found their interests clash with those of the Corporation. Thus :—

Molyneux  
family.

1617, July 11th.

“At an Assemblie houlden in the Comon halle before Rich<sup>d</sup> Moore gent. Maior (and others of the Council) it was agreed as followeth: that whereas it was then credibly informed that S<sup>r</sup> Richard Mollineux, Knight & Barronett, w<sup>th</sup> the Copihoulders of West derbie, would the same daie enter w<sup>th</sup>in the Liberties of our towne and heath belonginge thereto, and challenge p<sup>te</sup> of the same as belonging to West darbie aföresaid, that the said Maior and King's Bailiffe for the towne shall meete the said S<sup>r</sup> Rich<sup>d</sup> Mollineux and West darbie men at their first entrance w<sup>th</sup>in the townes Liberties, and there make knowen unto them in the behalfe of the towne, that tyme out of mind the liberties w<sup>ch</sup> wee clayme have belonged to o<sup>r</sup> towne, & that wee have evydenche to maintaine the same, w<sup>ch</sup> wee will shewe to them that it shall concerne, when occasion shall serve.”

Encroachment

The attempt so made was not successful. The lands in

question still belong to the Corporation, and form the great bulk of the Corporate estate.

1612, June 29th. At a Port Moot this day, amongst the "Orders sett down"—

Mere Stones. "Wee doe agree that the Maior and the xxiiij Jury w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe next, shall vewe and sett downe meare stones to meare and sett out the Higheways, and to sett out the towne's lands, and other lands; the lords and owners of the lands beinge desyred to be there when the feild is bare, betwixt St Lukes day & M'tinem's."

In 1611 the Corporation entered into a serious litigation with one of their own body—Mr. Richard Rose, Mayor in 1609 and 1624. Mr. Rose had already incurred the displeasure of the Council by

Disputes. "ingrossing into his hands 120 barrels of barley, w<sup>ch</sup> was formerlie offered to Mr Maior to be bought for a comon bargayne to the towne's use, in contravention of an order made and provided for such cases. By w<sup>ch</sup> bargayne there was gayned to clere, the some of iij<sup>li</sup> vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> was for the use of the towne; for w<sup>ch</sup> offence he the said Mr Rich<sup>d</sup> Rose is to receave such sentence as this assemblie shall assesse & thinke meete."

Mr. Rose apologised, whereupon the sentence was remitted, but an ill-feeling remained.

1611, July 3rd.

Disputed Wall. "At an Assemblie holden before Edw<sup>d</sup> Moore Esq Maior, the Aldermen, and the rest of the Comon Councell. Mr. Richard Rose, Alderman, was questioned for his disobedience to Mr Maior and the state of this towne; first, for that the said Mr Rose did p'syst in his stubborne and disobedient courses, in hindering the towne of a certen walle abutting upon the east p'te of the free Schoole of Liv'poole, w<sup>ch</sup> hath ben in the towne's poss'ion tyme out of man's memorie, and never challenged before by any p'son: Notw'thstandinge a Verdit of seaventene of the most sufficient free burgesses of the towne impanelled for that p'pose, geaven and deliv'ed up in wrytinge conc'nyng the same. And secondlie that the said Mr Rich<sup>d</sup> Rose hath geaven out speeches tending to intytle the said Schoole house and buildings thereto belonging, and the said walle, to be his Ma<sup>ties</sup> right as chanterie lands concealed, w<sup>ch</sup> this assemblie thought not to be the p'te of a free burges and good member of this towne; w<sup>ch</sup> may tend to the great charge, troble, and expenc<sup>s</sup> of the whole Corporacon.

"Whereupon this Assembly, havinge duellie and consideratelie wayed



the said causes, w<sup>th</sup> one whole consent, ev'y man deliv'inge his p'ticular opynion by p'role, are of opynion that the said Mr Rich<sup>d</sup> Rose is w<sup>th</sup>in the compasse of div's oathes taken heretofore by him as free burges, Comon Counsell, and Maior of this Corpora<sup>c</sup>on; and hath infringed div'se orders, <sup>Rose expelled.</sup> and the ancient priviledges of this borough; and for the said causes, doe adjudge and sentence the said Mr Rich<sup>d</sup> Rose not a fitt member of this towne and Corpora<sup>c</sup>on."

Mr. Rose did not tamely submit, but took out a writ of <sup>Writ of</sup> *certiorari* in the Chancery Court of Lancaster, to quash the proceedings, whereupon—

1612, September 18th.

1612.

"At an Assembly &c it was agreed and concluded, That wheras div'se Writts of C'ciarare were sente out of the Chauncerie Court of Lancaster, directed to the Maior and baylies of this Corpora<sup>c</sup>on, by the meanes of Mr Rich<sup>d</sup> Rose m'chant late Alderman of Liv'poole, for the removinge of div'se fynes and Amerciam<sup>ts</sup> cessed upon him in Mr Maior's Court, Retornable Imediat, and also for his Reinfranchisem<sup>t</sup>, a course never used or before hard of in this towne, and conceived by this Assemblie to be matters of innova<sup>c</sup>on, and to be against the oath of a free burges of this towne; Whereupon it pleased Mr Maior to calle this p'sent Assemblie, and acquainted them w<sup>th</sup> the said busines, upon whose mo<sup>c</sup>on it was fullie agreed; That the said writts, beinge against the ancient and lawdable <sup>Writ resisted.</sup> customes of this towne and Corpora<sup>c</sup>on, should not be allowed, but insysted upon, w<sup>th</sup>out any retorne to be made thereof according to the tenor of the said writts. And forasmuch as the same tend to the ov'throwe of the lib'ties and franchises of this towne and Corpora<sup>c</sup>on, it is thought fitt and soe agreed upon, that the same shalbe mayntayned and defended upon the comon charge of this towne."

Notwithstanding all this vapouring, Mr Rose was restored <sup>Rose restored.</sup> to his office, and filled the civic chair in 1624.

The system of leasing the Corporate property at this time was for three lives, with a fine paid down, and a small ground rent. Thus, in 1625, we read—

"A house in Dale Street, let to Thomas Tickle for the longest of three <sup>Leasing</sup> lives, for Six Pounds paid down, and a yearly rent of three shillings and <sup>Lands.</sup> sixpence."

The common lands, to which the Corporation claimed a prescriptive right, were very jealously protected.

In 1649, Mr. Wm. Strangewais had taken possession of a portion of the common, and built upon it, on which the following entry was made :—

Common  
Lands  
protected.

“Whereas the said Mr Strangewais hath lately erected a Cottage upon y<sup>e</sup> Towne's Wast, without consent, w<sup>ch</sup> is conceived may be very p'judiciall hereaft<sup>r</sup>. It is therefore thought fitt and ordered, that he shall pay v<sup>s</sup> rent to y<sup>e</sup> towne, or els the same to be pulled downe.”

Mr. Strangewais was recalcitrant, and refused to obey the mandate of the Corporation; whereupon the following minute was passed :—

1649.

1649, October 15th.

Suit against  
Strangewais.

“Whereas it is informed, that Mr William Strangewais hath hindred and resisted the Ballives in the execucon of their office, and hath abused the Maior and the Ald'men in calleing them ‘unworthie fellowes,’ and detaiening the Ballives prisoners in his house: It is therefore ordered, that if the said Ballives shall after advice had, bring anie accon at lawe, or sute against him for the same restraint, that then y<sup>e</sup> charge thereof shalbe borne by the towne, and if they recover, the towne to have y<sup>e</sup> damages.”

Soon after this, the Corporation began to utilise the common lands.

1650, June 18th.

Commons  
enclosed.

“Att an Assembly held this day before Mr Maior (and the Council) it was ord'red and declared by the said Assembly, that all that p'te of the Comon w<sup>ch</sup> lyes btweene the sea syde and the way leadeing to the Park Gate westward unto the new bridge or the Bowleing greene,<sup>1</sup> shalbe improved, taken inn, and inclosed, at the towne's charge, the next winter coming; and mannaged for y<sup>e</sup> best use and benefitt of y<sup>e</sup> towne. And the Maior and Ballives for that tyme beeing, shall disburse moneys and take course to see the same fenced out and donne accordingly.”

1651, February 5th.

Common  
Lands leased.

“Concerning the Comons formerly ord'ed and agreed upon to be inclosed, Mr Maior (by the consent of this howse) is willing to take unto himselfe twoe acres next unto the Poole, and offers to give xxx<sup>s</sup> p' acre fyne for 21 yeares, and 12<sup>d</sup> an acre rent; and not to sett nor let the same unles it be to free burgesses, inhabitants.”

<sup>1</sup> This represents the district between Hanover Street, Park Lane, and Wapping, including Cleveland Square, St. Thomas's Church, and the neighbourhood.

1651, April 10th.

"The same busines was afterwards taken into serious considera<sup>con</sup> the tenth day of Aprill following, and then upon a full debate, it was conceived to be too high a fyne to pay for the tearme abovesaid, in regard of y<sup>e</sup> remotenes of the close, and the great charge of fencing and improving. And therefore upon y<sup>e</sup> votes of the last menconed Assembly, it was ord<sup>'</sup>red Terms of Leases. and resolved, that the tennants to y<sup>e</sup> said new inclosures shold have the same for the severall tearmes of one and thirtie yeeres for y<sup>e</sup> said fyne of xxx<sup>s</sup> ½ acre and xii<sup>d</sup> rent; and that twoe acres of the said Comon where the best marle is, shold be left uninclosed, where ev<sup>'</sup>ie one might have lib<sup>'</sup>tie to digg and get marle for improving the same inclosures, and noe one to set or let the same to anie forreno<sup>r</sup>, but only to freemen inhab<sup>'</sup>tants, on paine of forfaiteing their estates."

These transactions give the first indication of the rising tide in the affairs of the town. The stagnation had been long and depressing, and this demand for land is the commencement of a forward movement, which from the time of the Restoration has proceeded with a steady ever-increasing cur- Revival. rent to the present day.

Other applications poured in. On the 2nd November, 1653, there is an order

1653.

"that James Chorleton and Jonas Horrocks shall have paym<sup>t</sup> and satis- Survey. faccon for their paines, for surveying y<sup>e</sup> new inclosures upon the towne's Comon, at the discretion of y<sup>e</sup> Maior."

1655, July 11th. The names are entered of those who took leases of the common lands enclosed.

They are as follows:—

"CONNECTED WITH THE CORPORATION.

"James, Thomas, Edward & Richard Williamson, Evan Marsh, Rich<sup>d</sup> Leaseholders. Percival, John and Dorothy Sandiford, John Sturzaker, Thos Ayndoe.

"OTHER PERSONS.

"Roger Jones, John Chambers, Rich<sup>d</sup> Washington, James Heyes."

Fifteen acres are mentioned as divided amongst seven persons—six names have no quantities attached. It may

fairly be presumed that about twenty-five acres of common were at this time enclosed.

1659, July 4th.

Division. "Wee order that there shalbe a lyne drawne betwixt the towne's comon and them y<sup>t</sup> have trespassed upon it with their corne, and shalbe mowen as farr as the downe stones reach."

Indications of building begin to appear.

1659, January 17th.

Bricks made. "Ord'red, that Mr Thomas Storie and his partners shall have lib'tie to make bricke upon the Comon."

Revenues. The revenue of the Corporation was derived from various sources.

Town Lands. There was, firstly, the rental from the town lands, independent of the allotments in the great town field granted to the burgesses.

These rents in 1637 amounted to £5 5s. 4d.

„ in 1645 „ „ 5 2s. 8d.

They then began to increase, and in 1651 reached £13 3s. 4d. There were also the town dues, independent of the Crown customs revenues; the ingates and outgates by land; the market tolls; the rents from the ferry boats; the presentment fines; the fees on admissions to freedom; compositions and licenses to non-freemen. In the year 1657, the burgage rents were purchased from the Parliament, but resigned again to the Crown in 1660. The total revenue from all these sources amounted in 1647 to £181 8s. 9d.

In 1651, the receipts from all sources amounted to £273 6s. 8d., which, considering that the value of money was at that time at least five times its present purchasing power, was no inconsiderable sum.

List of Dues. The first list of town dues was issued in December, 1613, and has not varied very much down to the present day, except by the addition of new articles not then provided for.



The funds were kept in a very primitive fashion, banking facilities not having reached these remote parts.

1625, January 10th.

1625.

"Att an Assembly held before Rd Rose Ald<sup>n</sup>, Deputy Maior (and the Council) Yt is agreed, that cl<sup>i</sup> (£150) p'te of clxx<sup>i</sup> xv<sup>s</sup> ii<sup>d</sup> being the town's stock, shalbee kept in a chist w<sup>th</sup> the town's Ballive, whereof there shalbee three keyes, and that the Maior or his deputy for the time beinge shall keepe one key, the auncyenst Alderman for the time beinge shall keepe an oth<sup>r</sup>, and the said Ballive for the time beinge to keepe an oth<sup>r</sup>. And that the said cl<sup>i</sup> shall not bee any wayes disposed of, but by the Comon Councell of this towne. And that the residue being xx<sup>i</sup> xv<sup>s</sup> ii<sup>d</sup>, shall remaine in the now Ballive's hands to bee disposed of as auncyently hath beene, and by them to be accompted for." Money how kept.

Colonel John Moore, of Bank Hall, was governor of the town after the siege in 1644. Although engaged on the Puritan side, he seems to have been a man of very disorderly habits, and was generally in want of money. Whilst in office he borrowed £100 from the town's funds. The Liverpool Corporation, with their usual pertinacity, insisted on being repaid, and proceeded to enforce their claim by law. Under date 18th January, 1650, we read an order of the Assembly Loan to Moore.

"to search for y<sup>e</sup> judgm<sup>ts</sup> against Coll Moore and his suertie, for y<sup>e</sup> c<sup>i</sup> due to y<sup>e</sup> towne and sued for p' Mr Wells (the townclerk)."

Soon after this, Colonel Moore died, overwhelmed with debt, but the Corporation followed up their claim. On the 18th June, 1650, at the Assembly,

"It was alsoe ord'red and appoynted that speedie cause shalbe taken to recover the c<sup>i</sup> and interest due thereupon from Collonell Moore and Mr Jas Sotherne, (his surety) both deceased, and search to be made at London for the judgment." Claim enforced.

Mr. Sotherne had a daughter, Margaret, married to Mr. Henry Corles, who were executors to his estate.

On the 14th January, 1651, it is

1651.

"Ordered that whereas there is a spetiall writt brought downe from London against Mr Corles and his wife, in ord<sup>r</sup> to the revyvall of the judgm<sup>t</sup> & execucon for y<sup>e</sup> hundred pounds debt owing by Mr Moore unto Corles and Wife.

y<sup>e</sup> towne, that the same shall p<sup>'</sup>ceede and be put und<sup>r</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Countie Palatyne Seale, and the Sheriffe shall be solizited for a Devastavit."

The next entry we find is five years afterwards, by which time the debt had swelled considerably by expenses.

1656, January 1st.

Suit. "Att an Assembly this day holden before Thomas Andoe Gent. Mayor &c, it was propounded concerning the suyte against Mr Hy Corles and Margrett his wyffe, executrix of James Southerne . . . for 202<sup>li</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> towne's moneys heretofore lent to Collonell John Moore, and for w<sup>ch</sup> debt they have been prosecuted to a judgment and taken in execucon, and are now remaining in y<sup>e</sup> Bailive's custodie; It is ord<sup>'</sup>red that unles they satisfie the whole some, they are to be sent to Lanc<sup>r</sup>, and they are to beare the Balive's charges whylst they stay at home unsent away; and that the busines bee further prosecuted at y<sup>e</sup> towne's charge as occasion may require till satisfaccon bee obtained."

Arrest.

1656, April 11th.

Escape. "It was again p<sup>'</sup>pounded concerning the same busines, that they haveing made an escape, the same suyte be p<sup>'</sup>secuted at London this tearme. And that Mr. Winstanley, who is alone served w<sup>th</sup> an ord<sup>'</sup> out of the Duchie for a p<sup>'</sup>tended disobeying of an Injuncon, shall go up about it, and shall solizit to gett the Injuncon dissolved, and further to p<sup>'</sup>cede at y<sup>e</sup> Comon Lawe as may be requisite."

Proposals. Mr. Edward Moore, son of Colonel Moore, now came forward with proposals, and we next read—

1656, October 9th.

Composition. "Att an Assembly &c it was propounded by Mr Moore to the said Assembly, to accept of new securities for Mr Corles's debt, w<sup>ch</sup> proceeded to y<sup>e</sup> votes of this howse, and upon full debate & consideration had of the p<sup>'</sup>sent condicon of the said Mr Corles & his wyffe, and at the instance of the said Mr Moore; It was resolved and voted, that one hundred and sixtie pounds shold bee accepted of, in full paym<sup>t</sup> and satisfaccon of that debt, and that the said Mr Moore, by himselfe, or with good sureties, shold give such securitie as the towne shold approve of, for paym<sup>t</sup> of the said some by Xmas next; and that thereupon, the said Mr Corles shold bee quitt and discharged of all that debt, costs and charges whatsoever, upon y<sup>e</sup> judgment against them of 202<sup>li</sup>, whereupon afterwards three proposals were made concerning securitie, viz<sup>t</sup> by acknowledging a statut Merchant, confessing judgm<sup>t</sup>, or by Bond w<sup>th</sup> suerties, but hee chooseing to the first, a statut Merchant was accordingly entered unto by him, for paym<sup>t</sup> of 160<sup>li</sup> on y<sup>e</sup> 26 x<sup>br</sup> next, and enrolled accordingly."

Statute Merchant.

1656, October 22nd.

“Att an Assembly this day holden, it was resolved that Edward Moore Esq haveing undertaken the paym<sup>t</sup> of Mr Corles’s debt, the w<sup>ch</sup> was his fathers, and for y<sup>e</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> Mr James Southerne was ingudged, consented to enter into a statut Merch<sup>t</sup> for paym<sup>t</sup> of clx<sup>li</sup> due 26<sup>th</sup> x<sup>br</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> was p<sup>r</sup>fected accordingly.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> These pecuniary transactions may account in part for the bitter hostility to Liverpool and its Corporation manifest in every page of the *Rental* of Edward Moore.



## COMMERCE AND COMMERCIAL RESTRICTIONS.

---

The trade during this period (1603-1660) continued to expand, but very slowly, being hampered by the short-sighted restrictions still imposed upon it.

Fish. Fish, especially herrings, were a large article of traffic, being imported from Ireland and the Isle of Man, and then re-exported to the Continent, or sent inland. Thus, in one day (December 19th, 1650), there are eleven entries for herrings, comprising in the whole 692 barrels.

1611, February 18th, there is the following entry:—

Herrings from Wexford. “At an Assembly &c it was concluded and agreed, that the herrings now come from Washeford in Ireland, amountinge to fourscore barrells, shold be bought for a towne's bargaine at the rate of xx<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup> the barrell, and the m'chant to be freed of all towne's customes, w<sup>ch</sup> was effected accordinglie; by w<sup>ch</sup> b'gayne ther was clearlie gotten xl<sup>li</sup> (£40) for that herring came that Lent to a great rate; some barrells sold for xxxiiij<sup>s</sup> iv<sup>d</sup> besides a p'cell of red herrings bought in this b'gayne aft' the rate of ij<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup> the cwt, and sould for iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> afterward.”

1647, August 9th.

Town's Custom. “Whereas Thomas Baxter M'chant hertofore brought into this port xl<sup>li</sup> barrells of herrings, and being a freeman conceived himselfe to be freed of towne customs and composicon for y<sup>e</sup> same, Now forasmuch as it appears that most of y<sup>e</sup> rescue and adventure of the said goods was to bee borne by the M'chant strangers, and were to be delivered at this port; It is therefore ordered that the said Thos. Baxter notwithstanding his freedom, is to pay the towne's custome and composicon, towards w<sup>ch</sup> there was v<sup>li</sup> left in deposite; the iij<sup>li</sup> x<sup>s</sup> shall be taken out of y<sup>e</sup> said v<sup>li</sup> in leu of y<sup>e</sup> same customs and composicon, and y<sup>e</sup> xxx<sup>s</sup> is to be restored him back againe.”



In 1654 there is an entry—

“Comp’ for herrings, item 40 barrells in the Guyst by Mr Picton merch’ to pay xij<sup>s</sup> vi<sup>d</sup>.”

In connexion with the fish, salt was an article in demand, <sup>Salt.</sup> and was obtained from various sources. We read in 1619 of a cargo of salt imported from Spain. Salt was also brought by sea from other British ports. In November, 1611, there is a resolution of the Assembly—

“That the orden’y custome of ev’y Way (weigh) of Salt, conteynyng by measure x barrells, shalbe ev’ heraf’ vi<sup>d</sup>, and hallegd’ iiij<sup>d</sup> . . . . And further, if any Salt shall come to this towne from port to port, being made w<sup>th</sup>in this kingdome & not beinge m’chant strang’s, then the custome shalbe iij<sup>d</sup>, and hallege ij<sup>d</sup> for ev’y Way.”

Cheshire salt was also introduced, but the expense of land <sup>Cheshire Salt.</sup> carriage would render the sea-borne salt cheaper.

1618, July 20th, there is an entry—

“Whereas there is a bargayne of Salt bought from certain marchants of Chester, w<sup>ch</sup> bargaine is intended to bee for the benefitt and p’fitt of the towne of Liv’poole, it is agreed &c, That the Salt now remayninge in the great barne neere the Tower, and to the same belonginge, shalbe sould unto all forrayne p’sons or others that will buy the same, aft’ the rate of xvj<sup>d</sup> the busshell.”

Salt was also manufactured in the town.

1611, December 19th.

“Mocon was made for the comynge of one Atkinson a Salt Maker, to <sup>Salt</sup> this towne, who affirmeth he can make white salt to sell a bushell for xij<sup>d</sup>. <sup>manufacture.</sup> It is agreed he may come, so as he be noe burthen unto this towne.”

1619, October 25th.

“Wee doe agree that Mr Chantrell shall omitt makinge of Salte in the place wherein he nowe doth, betwixt this & Martinmas next, upon paine of his fine.”

The locality is not stated. Probably the smoke had become a nuisance to the neighbourhood. The salt-house is marked on the old maps on the site of the present Salt-house Dock.

Wines.

Wines were an important article of Liverpool commerce in the seventeenth century. On one day, the 26th March, 1616, there are two entries, one of 64 tuns, the other of 167 tuns, but, unfortunately, the country from which it is imported is not stated. Repeated mention is made of French wines, and

Sacke.

“sacke” is entered as imported from Malaga.

1654, June 9th.

Jackalynne.

“For 22 tunnes of Wyne called Jackalynne, ord’red to pay for y<sup>e</sup> butlerage the some of tenn pounds, or 3 full Hh<sup>ds</sup>. Mem. that at an Assemblie holden the 13<sup>th</sup> 8<sup>br</sup>, xl<sup>s</sup> of this was ord’red to be remitted in regard of y<sup>e</sup> badnes of the said Wynes.”

Butlerage.

The charge called “*Butlerage*” for these imports was very heavy. Thus, on July 30th, 1646—

“Mem<sup>d</sup> brought into this port by Captaine Johnson in the Sea Bridge, London, and entered; 65 tunnes of un-ulleged Wynes as appeares by his invoice; whereupon this Assembly being myndfull to use them well, doe agree that there shalbe paide for Buttleradge for y<sup>e</sup> whole bulk, 5 full hogsheads of choyce wyne; and the some of tenn pounds sterling for y<sup>e</sup> composicon money, or towne’s customes, w<sup>ch</sup> the Ballive or other officers are required to collect and take accordingly.”

Iron from Spain.

Repeated entries are made of iron from Spain, principally from Bilbao. The following entry of iron is interesting, as indicating the relation of the ports of London and Liverpool:—

1619, May ix<sup>th</sup>.

Claim for exemption.

“Mem<sup>d</sup> the same daie Peeter Lancaster freeman of London, (as hee saith) beinge questioned concerninge the lycence and custome of certeine tonnes of iron by him broughte into the riv’r and port towne of Liv’poole, deposeth and saith, that the iron bee entred in the King’s custom house of Liv’poole (w<sup>ch</sup> is nowe in question) is the goods of one Mr Balle and others his p’teners, freemen of London, and that hee thinketh there oughte noe duety or custome to bee paide to the towne of Liv’poole, in respect that the goods doe belonge to freemen of London.”

The sequel is rather curious.

“Eodem die the said Peeter Lancaster m’chant did receive the oath of alleagance before Mr Edm. Rose, deputy to Sir Rd Molyneux, Kt and Barronet, Mayor, and Edward Moore Esq<sup>r</sup> one of the King’s Ma<sup>ty</sup> Justices

of peace & quor' and others, the assembly then there; and the reason why it was tendered was, for that hee shewed an acte furth of the Court of highe Commission, w<sup>ch</sup> did beare date very neere two yeeres since hee received the saide oath. And therein was enjoyned to have conference for reformation; but it could not be p'<sup>c</sup>eived that he had any conference lately or reformacon, and often cometh to the towne, and nev' cometh to the church."

1649, July 31st. There is an entry of a

"Composicōn for 1500 measures of Mault brought in from Tewkesburie, <sup>Malt.</sup> & offered to be sold unto the towne; ordred to pay for comp. xxvi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> fyve shillings p<sup>r</sup> measure offered, 21 to y<sup>e</sup> score."

This is a remarkable illustration of the course of trade at the period. The malt must have been put on board a barge at Tewkesbury, brought down the Severn, and so coastwise to Liverpool. No mode of land carriage existed except by means of pack horses.

Many imports of wheat, rye, and barley are found, especially the latter.

Wool, tallow, hemp, flax, beef and pork in barrels, are <sup>Wool &c.</sup> articles of import.

Tobacco, which has become a staple article of Liverpool <sup>Tobacco.</sup> trade, makes its appearance, though to no great extent.

1648, October 13th.

"P<sup>r</sup>ounded concerning xxx<sup>tie</sup> tunnes of Tobacco brought in by James Jenkynsonn in the ship called y<sup>e</sup> 'Frendship,' and bought by Mr Thomas Shepard. Ordred that their shalbe paid for towne's customes and hallage ij<sup>ij</sup>."

Coals were a considerable article of export, and are <sup>Coals.</sup> frequently referred to.

1611, August 16th.

"It is ordered and agreed that ev'y p<sup>r</sup>son whatsoev' not beinge a free <sup>Shipping</sup> burges of this towne, that shall lade henceforth any coales w<sup>th</sup>in this ryver, <sup>Coals to</sup> or the members or creeks thereof, to be transported beyonde the seas, <sup>Ireland.</sup> shall pay to the towne's custom<sup>r</sup> for the tyme beinge for ev'y tonne a penny for the towne's use; and after that rate for their whole ladinge, be it more or less."

"Mr James Travis, Mr Thom<sup>s</sup> Tarleton (and others) have undertaken

to answer the towne's customer the rate of 1<sup>d</sup> for ev'y tonne for all Tredarth men, for all such coales at any tyme as any of them shall lade w<sup>th</sup>in this ryver, to be transported in any of the vessells belonging to Tredarth p<sup>ro</sup>vided that if the said undertakers do come before Mr Maior for the tyme beinge, at any tyme hereafter, and desyre to be discharged of this custome and paym<sup>t</sup> for Tredarth men; that then they shalbe cleared of such dem<sup>and</sup>, and the towne's custom<sup>t</sup> to collect of them of Tredarth as of other p<sup>er</sup>sons; the said undertakers to pay the towne's customer according as his book shall charge any Tredarth men quart<sup>er</sup>lie."

Restrictions.

The arbitrary restrictions and prohibitions noticed in the last chapter were still continued, frequently in a very capricious manner.

Thus, in 1612, June 29th, Herbert Bolton was presented at the Port Moot

"for buying xxvi loads of coales, to lade his barke, contrarie to an ancient order of this towne, not acqynting Mr Maior therew<sup>th</sup>."

Dispute with  
Gyles Brooke.

In 1591, a dispute had arisen with Mr. Gyles Brooke (Mayor in 1592) for buying a cargo of grain without its having been first offered as a "town's bargain," when a stringent resolution was passed,

"that it was not lawfull for anie one to bargain or buy any commodities, without the same being first proffered to the towne to be solde."<sup>1</sup>

In 1610, Mr. Brooke repeated the offence, when he was sharply brought up by the authorities, as stated in the following entry:—

1610, January 16th.

Brooke fined.

"Whereas Mr Gyles Brooke of Liv'poole Alderm' hath comitted a great offence in buyinge a certen barque's ladinge of goods and m<sup>er</sup>chandize heretofore brought hither by one Gilbert Harries a m<sup>er</sup>chant, and thereupon a jury was impanelled by a gen<sup>er</sup>all consent of the Comon Counsell of this towne to inquire upon the same, yet nevertheles in regard that the said Mr Brooke doth acknowledge his offence and doth willingly desire to be censured and judged by the said Maior &c. . . . they doe thinke it fitt and so order, that the said Mr Brooke shall pay for the towne's use the some of xx<sup>ti</sup>e m<sup>er</sup>ks of lawful money when required.

"And it is further agreed that whosoever shall from henceforth comite the like offence shall not onlie be disfranchised & put from his freedome,

<sup>1</sup> See p. 81, *supra*.



but also shall pay such a fyne as by the Mayor and his brethren shall be assessed."

1611, October 21st. John Garnet was prosecuted

Garnet fined.

"for retaylinge tymber by peecemeale w<sup>th</sup>in this towne, w<sup>th</sup>out any fee or satisfacon paid unto the towne."

No freeman was to receive any stranger's goods into his house.

1612, June 29th.

"Wee agree that no furinore or stranger shall come into this towne to take any fraught from the own's of this towne; the shipping of this towne beinge readie to the sea & to transport them, upon payne for ev'y fraught so taken by any forrener or stranger, to pay the some of xx<sup>s</sup> to the towne's use." No stranger to take freight.

1612, October 18th.

"It was fully agreed that John Winstanley now halle keeper shall not from henceforth buy any p'cell of goods or m'chandize that shall come into the said halle above xl<sup>s</sup> value, for his own use, unles he joyne w<sup>th</sup> some freeman to be p'tn<sup>r</sup> with him. And shall from henceforth give notice to such persons as are dealers in such goods, to the number of ten at the least." Winstanley restrained.

1611, August 16th.

"It is ordered and agreed by the consent of the whole house (Mr Remshinge<sup>1</sup> excepted) that the lxx doz of calfe skynnes of Mr Thomas Harvie, now Maier of Chester w<sup>ch</sup> were brought hither by direcc<sup>n</sup> from the said Mr Harvie w<sup>th</sup> intent to have them transported forth of this ryver in the Margaret of Merlington unto Tredarth in Irelande under p'tence of their Chester licence. In regard it was deemed to be very p'judicious to the liberties of this towne; that non of the said skynns shall pass hence by water. It is therefore agreed that the owner of them may carie them away by land at his pleasure." Embargo on Calf Skins.

It reads like a grim joke to enact that goods destined for Ireland shall not be allowed to proceed by water.

1613, January 13th. At an Assembly, &c.

"Consideracon beinge hadd of the p'sentm<sup>t</sup> made by the Jury the ix<sup>th</sup> daie of December last, conc'ninge Richard Birde one of the Councill of Birde expelled

<sup>1</sup> Mr Remchinge was at the time M.P. for the borough.

this towne, his concealinge of forraigner's goods to the hinderance of the towne's custome under culler of his owne goods. It is concluded and agreed, that the saide Richard Byrd shalbee excluded from the Comon Councell of this towne and his freedome."

The carting of goods from the waterside into the town was a monopoly.

1611, December 19th.

Carting  
Goods.

"Item, it is agreed that the foure accustomed cariers shall still carie and non els, taking the ordenarie Rat<sup>s</sup> due and accustomed upon payne of their fynes."

It was found necessary to relax this stringent measure.

1613, January 13th.

"Item, whereas there is an order for the iiij carryers for caryinge of Merchants goods from the waterside into the towne, and for that is informed at this Assemblie that those iv carryers have not performed the same accordinge to the said order, Therefore it is this daie by the Assemblie agreed, that ev'ie freeman may loade and carry goods from the waterside, not takeinge above viij<sup>d</sup> the tune, and for yerne and solt packs they bee already vi<sup>d</sup>. And that in harvest and seeding tyme Mr Maior for the time beeinge shall appointe who shall carry w<sup>th</sup> their teames, if complaint of want of carriage be made to Mr Maior."

Town's  
Bargains.

Repeated mention is made in the records of the "Town's Bargains," or the employment of the public fund in mercantile transactions. The Charter of Henry III. gave power to the burgesses to have a mercatorial gyld, with a *hanse* and other liberties. The *gyld* was not very unlike a modern joint-stock company, in which all the freemen were shareholders. They claimed to have the right of pre-emption of all goods imported. If this was not exercised, they demanded a fine or composition for allowing private traders to buy and sell.

The following entries will show the mode in which this system was worked :—

1624, May 7th.

Town's Stock  
employed.

"Mem<sup>d</sup> At the Assemblie &c. Question being made and proposed by Mr Rd Rose Maior, what course might be thought most fitt and appropriate for the towne for the imployinge of the towne's stocke; it was

ordered and agreed upon by the said Assemblie videl<sup>t</sup> that Edward Nicolson should have thirtie pounds, and should in considera<sup>c</sup>on thereof deliv<sup>r</sup> unto the towne's use thirtie barrells of sound, sweet, and m'chaunta-ble hearings; And that he, the said Nicolson should have the sellinge of the same hearings to the towne's use; and what p<sup>r</sup>fitte shalbe made of the same to be divided equally betweene the said Nicolson and the towne, soe that it be above the some of two shillings  $\frac{1}{2}$  pound for a yeare, or els that the said Nicolson shall pay the money at the sale of the said hearings together w<sup>th</sup> the use accordinge to the statute the tyme that he shall hold it. And that the remaynder and residue of the towne's stock of money, shall be imployed and bestowed upon corne for the towne's benefitt and best p<sup>r</sup>fitte, and that Mr Maior and Bayliffs for the tyme beinge shall have the managinge and bestowinge therof in such mann<sup>r</sup> as in their discrecions shall seem fitt for the towne's benefitt." Buying of Corn.

1646, April 24th, Thomas Blackmore, Mayor.

"At an Assemblie this day held &c. It is agreed that all goods ymported & brought w<sup>th</sup>in this towne & Port shall not bee bought by the space of thirty dayes, by any p<sup>r</sup>ticler p<sup>r</sup>son, foreign<sup>r</sup> nor oth<sup>r</sup>, but that the same shall bee bought by the Maior of this towne for the tyme being, or such as the sayd Mr Maior shall appoynte, & that ev<sup>y</sup> freeman inhabitinge w<sup>th</sup>in this borrough shall have benefitt by the said bargayne, soe hee bringe in his money to the value of five pounds att least, of w<sup>ch</sup> hee shall receive his proportionable p<sup>r</sup>te w<sup>th</sup> the other free burgesses inhabitants there; & if, it chance there bee any losse upon such bargaines ev<sup>y</sup> ma<sup>r</sup> is to beere his share of losse accordingly, & it is ordered that noe p<sup>r</sup>ticler p<sup>r</sup>son shall intermeddle to buy goods ymported w<sup>th</sup>out the consent of this house." Goods bought by Town.

This is signed by the Mayor and twenty-one members of the Common Council, two of whom, Thomas Ayndoe (Mayor in 1655) and Robert Lurting, members of old Liverpool families, not being able to write their names, make their marks!

Not long after this it was found that this system could not be maintained, and on the 7th November, 1652, it was

"Ordered by the Assembly that the Ord<sup>r</sup> made in Mr Blackmoor's Maioraltie concerning the restraint & lymitation for the buying of goods within xiiij<sup>teen</sup> dayes bee utt<sup>r</sup>ly disannulled and made voyde; and voted that hereafter anie freeman may buy goods and m<sup>r</sup>chandize at his will and pleasure; the other ord<sup>r</sup> upon good considera<sup>c</sup>on being found to bee both inconvenient and p<sup>r</sup>judiciall to y<sup>e</sup> towne." Prohibition withdrawn.

This was no doubt a step in the right direction, but the

exclusion of all but freemen from carrying on business in the town was continued long afterwards.

Restrictions.

Restrictions of a very vexatious character were imposed on buying and selling, and a continual struggle was carried on by the endeavours of the freemen to evade the laws themselves, but rigidly to impose them on all others.

Women were to a certain extent admitted to the franchise, for there is an entry of the 28th October, 1624, at the Port Moot :—

“ We p’sent Elizabeth Wynstanley Spinster for using the faculty of a free woman, not beinge free.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Vide supra*, pp. 73, 75, 76.





## STREETS, BUILDINGS, AND SANITARY PROVISIONS.

---

The occasional glimpses of the old topography are very interesting.

The Pool or Lake was the harbour for shipping, afterwards converted into the Old Dock, now the site of the Revenue Buildings and Post Office.

At a Port Moot, 27th October, 1628,

"The Jury agree that the Lyme stones and stones lying in the moreing place of shipping within the Lake shalbee removed at or before Christmas next, for that they are cause of cuttinge divers cables and puttinge the barques to full sea, besides very p'illous to the King's ferry."

We learn thus incidentally where the ferry boats took their departure.

1635, November 23rd.

"It is ordered by the Assemblie That a bridge where the sluices, shalbee made at the Poole, upon the south side of the towne in some convenient place there, as shalbee hereafter appoynted by this Assemblie. That a Key and Harbor may bee made there for the succour of shippinge within this towne."

1636, April 29th.

"It is agreed this day, before Thomas Bicksteth Maior &c. That there shalbee a Key builde at the Poole, accordinge to the discrecon of the Maior and Aldermen of the towne, and fower such Marin's as they or the greater p'te thereof shall appoynte, whereof the said Maior shalbee the first, and that Richard Tarleton and John Chauntrell shalbee ov'seers of laying the foundacon thereof, and shall have such allowance therefor as shalbee allowed by Mr Maior and the Aldermen."

The bridge was constructed near the *embouchure* of the Pool Stream, about the bottom of King Street, following

pretty nearly the line of College Lane. The precise position of the *Key* is unknown. We have, unfortunately, no plan of the town at this period.

The bridge in question was, no doubt, of wood. In 1655 it had fallen into disrepair. On January 23rd of that year,

Bridge  
repaired.

"It is ordered and agreed upon by y<sup>e</sup> Maior, Aldermen, and Comon Councell assembled, y<sup>t</sup> the Poole Bridge w<sup>ch</sup> is in decay, shalbe forthwith repaired and amended at y<sup>e</sup> town's charge, at y<sup>e</sup> sight and discession of Mr Maior and Bailives."

1662, October 30th.

"It is ordred and agreed, that the Poole Bridge shalbe repaired, and the way there amended, and that the inh'tants of Toxteth Park be desired to be assisting with their teames and s'vants at that work."

This indicates the impulse which had been given to increased facilities for the trade of the port.

The main road out of the town eastward crossed the brook at the end of Dale Street. As the tide flowed up the stream, no doubt a bridge must have existed from a very early period. This must have been of wood.

1654, January 8th, the Port Moot Jury

"Order there shall bee a stone bridge made in the Dale Streete at the end of Mr Balive Lurtinge house, and that George Tarleton shall see to the makeinge of the walle that goeth downe Balive Lurtinge backside by the water course, w<sup>th</sup>in 3 months tyme."

1658, January 10th. The Port Moot Court

Dale Street  
Bridge  
repaired.

"order that the bridge at Dale Street end bee well and suffitiently rep'ed, and that a new flagge be laid ov' the watercourse at John Lurting's house end, before the last day of February next."

Town Walls.

The town was put into a state of defence at the outbreak of the civil war; but walls, or earthen ramparts, and gates had existed previously. A *muringer* is mentioned amongst the officers in the reign of Philip and Mary.

1614, April 1st. At an Assembly, &c.,

"it was agreed that first, the money collected and not paid or disbursed,

for the makinge and repayringe of the three gates<sup>1</sup> belonginge to this Gates.  
towne, shalbee broughte in and deliv'ed to Mr Maior and his brethren for  
the same use, and that hereafter the saide three gates shalbee made,  
maintained, and repayed out of the Comon box and charges of this  
townes. And w<sup>th</sup>all, that the arrearages of the layes for that purpose  
heretofore assessed, shalbee collected and deliv'ed as aforesaide."

1655, May 9th. At an Assembly it was

"Ordered that the gates at the Dale Streete end, and all other the street Removal.  
ends about this towne shalbe pulled up, taken away and cleered out and  
the wayes and works levelled and causeyas made as formerly they were."

1659, October 7th.

"Ord'ed that Coll Birch be moved to retorne speedily to London, to  
the exercise of his trust as Burges for the Parliam<sup>t</sup>, and that hee be  
moved to cause the walls of the Castle to be demolished and the trench  
filled up, according to votes and ord<sup>r</sup> of Parliam<sup>t</sup>."

Nearly seventy years, however, elapsed before this was  
carried out.

Liverpool is situated on a stratum of new red sandstone, Quarries.  
which eastwardly rises into eminences. Two of these, the  
Quarry Mount—now St. James's Cemetery—and the Brown  
Low (anciently Brunelagh), now occupied by University  
College, were for many ages used as stone quarries, of which  
various notices appear.

1630, October 25th, Edward Turner is presented at the  
Port Moot

"for getting stones upon Brownlow Hill and sellinge them into the Brownlow.  
ccuntry."

The Old Fall Well was for ages a main source of water Fall Well.  
for the inhabitants. It was situated on the Great Heath,  
near the corner of St. John's Lane and Roe Street.

1635, April 29th. Ordered

"that the Fall Well shalbee amended att the Towne's chardge, att the  
discrecon of the new Ballives, and that noe manner of p'son shall wash  
either yarne or woole there upon paine of three shillings and four pence  
for ev'y offence."

<sup>1</sup> These gates were doubtless at the ends of Dale Street, Tithebarn Street, and Oldhall Street.

Great care was taken to preserve the Commons from encroachment.

1619, July 7th.

Commons  
protected.

"The Assemblie were crediblie informed, that div's p'sons inh'itinge forth of the lib'ties of Liv'poole, vid'let at the Loe (Lowhill) Everton, and other places thereabouts, have digged, and gotten upp turves upon the heath and Comon belonginge to this towne, whereby the Comon is very much decayed, and the be'nefite of the Comon is neere lost unto the inh'tants of Liv'poole. It is therefore this daie ordred, that two sufficient men shalbe appointed (by Mr Deputy to and w<sup>th</sup> the consent of the Aldermen) to cut the turves that are now digged and lye upon the Comon; And the Mosse Reeves to make enquirie what towne's men have any turves digged upon the Comon, and theire turves to bee spared."

Brick Making.

The Commons were also utilised for making bricks.

1615, May 16th.

"It was agreed by the consent of the Maior and Assemblie, that Thomas Douse Brickleyer, shall have free libertie to make bricke and to get clay where hee shall bee appointed by the officers of the towne for that purpose deputed, and this lycence to continue noe longer then untill Michaelmas come twelvemonth, but upon lykeinge.

"And to s'Ve the free burges of the towne for viij<sup>s</sup> the thousand."

1619, October 29th.

"Richard Salmon, brickmaker is allowed to make bricke, and shall allowe and deliv' unto the freemen of this towne and for their burges owne use, bricks at the rate of viij<sup>s</sup> the thousand, allowinge five score and xij bricks to the hundred."

Scavenging and cleansing were still in a very primitive state.

1648, November 17th.

Scavenging.

"Forasmuch as complaint is made by the scavengers of this towne, that they canot p'vaile with the inhabitants for clenseing of y<sup>e</sup> streets, but are abused and much afronted in the execucon of their office, it is therefore ordered by Mr Maior, the Aldermen, Ballives and the greatest p'te of the Comon Councell assembled, that from henceforth the scavengers for the tyme being shall have power to hyer men to clense the streets before everie man's doore where they see cause, and shall have power imediatly to distraine upon such of the inh'tants goods as shalbe faultie herein, and pay for the same, restoreing them the overplus. And if anie shall resist or oppose the p'formance of this ord<sup>r</sup>, they are to be bound to y<sup>e</sup> peace, or punished otherwise, as Mr Maior in his discesion shall think fitt."



1656, January 21st, Thomas Andoe, Mayor.

"It is ord'ed that all the Middingsteeds that are in y<sup>e</sup> compas of the streets of this towne, shalbe removed, and the places paved suytable to y<sup>e</sup> rest of y<sup>e</sup> streets, or els everie owner of such middingsteed is to cause them to be walled out with sufficient mason's work fowre foote high, at y<sup>e</sup> least, at or before y<sup>e</sup> first day of June, on paine of xx<sup>s</sup>, soe as they may not bee a nuisance to anie as formerly the same have beene; to y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> poore and to be levied as above." Middens.

To this document the Mayor signs his mark.

About the middle of the century, the community seem to have been troubled by the great numbers of swine going Swine. at large in the streets, and it took some years of vigorous repression before the nuisance could be abated.

1654, October 18th.

"Att an Assembly holden in the Comon Halle before the Worp<sup>n</sup> Robt Cowell Gent. Maior, and Councel assembled; It is ord'ed, that for as many and great nuseances, greivances, and inconveniences, are and have beene done by reason of swyne goeing abroad in the streetes, which ought to bee kept up in their styres and backsides, soe that the market and other people might not bee p'judiced the eby. That from and after the nynth day of November next all owners of swyne within this towne, shall keep them up upon the Sabbath dayes and Satturdayes, soe as that they may not come into the streetes. And that in default thereof the Heyward for the time being, shall take and impound the said swyne in a Pinfould to bee by him mad and p'vyded for that purpose, and the said Heyward shall keepe cloose and detaine the said swine, untill the owners of them shall pay unto him for his care and service in this p'tculer fower pence a head . . . . And alsoe the above Heyward is required to take and impound everie swyne that shalbee found unrung, trespassing in anie grounds whatsoever about this towne, and them detaine as aforesaid; and all offic<sup>rs</sup> and freemen are required to be ayding and assisting to him in the<sup>n</sup> execucon of this ord<sup>r</sup>, which if hee neglect, hee is to bee displaced and lose his office." Regulations about Swine.

It will be observed that this order only requires the swine to be kept up on Saturdays and Sundays. On the other days of the week they were free to roam as they pleased. The year following (1655) a stricter order was issued:—

"Forasmuch as dyvers orders have beene formerly made . . . . concerning y<sup>e</sup> keeping up of swyne w<sup>ch</sup> are a generall nuisance, w<sup>ch</sup> said orders

are not obs'ed. It is therefore ord'red by the worp<sup>n</sup> Mr Maior, the Aldermen, Bailives, and Councell assembled, that from and after y<sup>e</sup> first day of March next, all the inhabitants of this towne shall take course to keepe up their swyne upon their own backsyds, or in styres to be made for that purpose ; soe as none of their swyne may be found abroad in y<sup>e</sup> streets, or trespassing in other mens grounds or gardens, upon paine for ev'ie owner to forfait to y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> poore of y<sup>s</sup> Corporacon, twelve pence for everie swyne toties quoties, immediately to be levied by distresse and sale of their goods.

Dead Swine. "Ordered that wheareas there is many dead swyne found at the water syde and other carrion and lastalls to y<sup>e</sup> annoyance of the people ; It is ord'red that the now Maior and Baylives shall cause them to be buried, and hereafter if anie one shall offend in not causing the said swyne, dead swyne, and carrion, to be buried at their owne charge, they shall forfait for everie such offence iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> to be levied and disposed as aforesaid."

1659, July 4th.

Swinecote. "Wee ord<sup>r</sup> that the swynecote joyneing unto the Church wall be puled downe and that noe inh'itant keep any swyne loose in y<sup>e</sup> church yeord, nor anie other p'sons whatsoever there, in paine of x<sup>s</sup> a peece."

1653. December 10th. A feeble attempt was made to light the streets in very primitive fashion.

Lighting. "At an Assembly &c it was Ord'red that two lanthorns w<sup>th</sup> twoe candles, burneing ev'ie night in y<sup>e</sup> dark moone be sett out at the High Crosse, and at Whyte Crosse & places p'pared to sett them in, ev'ie night till past 8 of clock by y<sup>e</sup> Sj'ant and water Ballive.

"This to be obs'ed from All Saints to Candlemas."

Plague. The town had been visited by the plague in 1558, when very wise precautions were taken and crowned with success. In the seventeenth century its ravages were more frequent and destructive. In 1639, there is a reminiscence of the previous visitations in dealing with the land in "Sickman's Lane" (now Addison Street), for the purpose of getting marl.

In 1647, Lancashire and Cheshire were again visited.

On June 12th it is

"Ordered that strict watch be kept by y<sup>e</sup> townesmen because of y<sup>e</sup> rumor of y<sup>e</sup> sicknes to be begune in Warrington."

1647, June 29th.

"It was propounded by the Governor, concerning the distraccons

betwixt the armie &c and other p'ticulers at this assembly, whereunto answere was made 'That it is the desire of Mr Maior y<sup>e</sup> Aldermen and Comon Councell that in all things there may be a free & faire compliyan<sup>ce</sup> betwixt the townesmen and y<sup>e</sup> soldiers, and withall dce hold it fit, and ord<sup>r</sup> that the townesmen from tyme to tyme according to Mr Maiors direcc<sup>on</sup> shall joyne w<sup>th</sup> the soldiers in keeping Wach, and that noe Chester nor Warrington people nor their goods during y<sup>e</sup> time of this infecc<sup>on</sup> shallbe admitted to come into this towne.' Watch and Ward.

1647, September 22nd.

"A collec<sup>con</sup> is to be made for raiseing of moneys for y<sup>e</sup> poore of Warrington, who have lately been visited with y<sup>e</sup> sicknes, in regard of an Ord<sup>r</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Justices at y<sup>e</sup> Sheriffe's Board, for contribu<sup>con</sup> through the Hun<sup>r</sup> of Westderbie 24<sup>s</sup> 08<sup>d</sup>." Collection.

1648, February 3rd.

"A certificate of all the moneys receaved and charges disbursed, concerning the late sicknes heere, to be made unto the Gent and Justices at the Assizes, and Mr Ballive Sturzaker ordered to goe to Lanc<sup>r</sup>, to solizit them for the obtaineing of the x<sup>li</sup> allotted to the poore infected of this towne, and to p<sup>cure</sup> the certificate read, w<sup>ch</sup> was donne accordingly, and gave great satisf<sup>accon</sup> and content, at y<sup>e</sup> Sheriffe's Board. And ordred that the 40<sup>li</sup> assessed within 5 myles, shalbe levied and paid accordingly." Charges.

"Ordred by the Comon Councell that those in the Cabbins shalbe sett free."

1648, February 14th.

"It is this day ordred by Mr Maior, the Aldermen and Comon Councell assembled, that the p<sup>sons</sup> shutt up in their howses within this towne, upon the suspition of the sicknes and infecc<sup>on</sup>, may tomorrow be sett at lib<sup>'tie</sup>, and the gards taken offe upon condic<sup>on</sup> they first shew themselfe unto the officers appoynted for p<sup>vyding</sup> for the poore, that they are all in health." Release.

"W<sup>ch</sup> was donne accordingly, praised be God for his m<sup>'cie</sup> in o<sup>r</sup> speedie delivrance."

1648, April 7th.

"Mem<sup>d</sup> that the 3<sup>rd</sup> Portmoote Court w<sup>ch</sup> shold have beene held at after Court Xmas, was deferred and put of by reason of the sicknes and infecc<sup>on</sup> happeing in certaine howses in the Chappell Strete; w<sup>ch</sup> through the blessing of God (great care being taken) and much cost bestowed in buylding of Cabbans and removing the said families forth of the towne into the said Cabins, it ceased in two months tyme, with the death of about 8 or 9 p<sup>sons</sup> of meane qualitie." postponed.

The following year a return was apprehended.

1649, February 9th.

Return of  
Sickness.

“Ordered that in regard the towne is a garrison, and y<sup>e</sup> sicknes dangerously dispersed; the abundance of poore, with the assistance of the Governor and soldiers shalbe kept out.”

1650, April 2nd.

Regulations.

“Whereas it is certainly reported, that the sicknes in Dubline, w<sup>ch</sup> by reason of the entercourse from thence may prove dangerous to this towne; it is therefore ord’red, that all owners and passengers comeing from thence shalbe restrained and debarred from comeing into this towne, unles they cann make oath that they have not beene in anie infected place, nor brought over anie infected goods or passing<sup>ts</sup> from thence, and be allowed of by Mr Maior; and a Warrant to be drawn up for y<sup>e</sup> guard to examine all passing<sup>ts</sup> comeing from thence, until they be sworne & examined, w<sup>ch</sup> was donne accordingly.”

Again, on the 16th June, 1650,

“It is alsoe agreed that the p’sons restrained are to be admitted to come into the towne, and if hereafter anie shal p’sume to goe to Dubline or anie other place infected, they shalbe restrained from comeing on shore.”

1651, October 8th. The infection had returned. At an Assembly, &c.

Suspension.

“It is ordred, that the Ballives shalbe freed from the collecting of the fynes because of the p’sent condicon of the towne in regard of the infeccōn.”

1651, October 25th.

Regulations.

“At an Assembly &c, it was p’pounded concerning the setting at lib’tie of Mrs Chambers and Balive Sturzaker, who have been seaven weekes confyned for suspition of the sicknes. It is ord’red that they may have lib’tie to walk to the water syde, but are to sequester themselves from companie, and at the seacond or third dayes of January to bee free & at lib’tie, if nothing hapen but wel in y<sup>e</sup> meane tyme; also that Ball. Sturzaker may have lib’tie in the night tyme to come up to his shop, and to use what meanes hee pleases for clensing it. And John Lunte to continue in his howse for a fortnight.”

1652, January 14th.

“Ord<sup>d</sup> That the Schoolm<sup>r</sup> shall have his whole q<sup>rs</sup> wages notwithstanding his discontinuance of teaching by reason of the sicknes.”



“Ord<sup>d</sup> That Mr William Williamson shall goe to Wigan, concerning Collections. the ley to be collected for y<sup>e</sup> poore and infected, and to solizit the Justices of Peace for y<sup>e</sup> furtherance of the payment thereof.”

1653, June 9th.

“Mem<sup>d</sup> Ord<sup>d</sup>red that Capt Thomas Croft shall have 3<sup>li</sup> paid him by y<sup>e</sup> Balives forth of y<sup>e</sup> towne's stock, in lew and consideracon of his howse and lands w<sup>ch</sup> was spoyled by y<sup>e</sup> infected p'sons being put there in y<sup>e</sup> time of God's vizitacon of y<sup>e</sup> sicknes in this towne.”



## ECCLESIASTICAL NOTICES.

---

Puritanism. In the early part of the seventeenth century, the puritanical influence was gaining ground in the Church, and disputes about the mode of conducting divine service were frequent.

Independence The Corporation took great interest in Church affairs. Although Liverpool was in the parish of Walton, and its chapel a mere succursal to the mother church, the Liverpool authorities seem to have been quite independent, and exercised supreme authority in Church affairs, appointing and paying the salaries of the incumbents.

Sir T. Wainewright. In 1598, on the resignation of Mr. Bentley, Sir Thomas Wainewright was appointed.<sup>1</sup> He is the last to whom the prefix of "Sir" is applied in the records.

1610, October 25th. Amongst the orders of the Port Moot we find—

Surplice. "Item, we agree that Mr Waynewright shall weare the s'plus ev'y Sabothe and ev'y holiday at the tyme of Dyvine S'vice."  
"Item that he shall weare the S'plus at all tymes that he shall meet any Corps, as well poore as riche."

1612, October 26th. At a Port Moot—

Hair. "We agree y<sup>t</sup> the Clerke of the Church shall weare his Surplus and reade the first chapter in the body of the Churche, and lykewise shall cause his haier to be cut of a comly and seemely length in such decent maner as best befitteth a man in his place."

1616, February 5th. At an Assemblie, &c.

Providing Preacher. "It was consydered by the Maior Alderm' & Assemblie for the p'vydinge of a preacher to lyve w<sup>th</sup>in the towne, and it was then condescended unto, y<sup>t</sup> some honest devyn and good preacher should

be enquired for, & such a one as would both serve the cure and preache, & upon cominge of such preacher, the Assemblie to meet againe, and so to conferre of a competent wage for his maintenance and allowance."

1622, October 20th. A Memorandum of Agreement, by which the Corporation appoint

"James Hyatt, Batchelor of Divinity and preacher of God's word, and <sup>Hyatt appointed.</sup> covenant to provide him a house, and to pay him 'the some of tenn pounds curraunt English money at the feasts of the Annunciacon of o' blessed ladie St Mary the Virgine and St Michell the archaungell, by even porcons. In consideracon whereof, the said James Hyatt doth assume and promise that he will continue preacher and lecturer at Liv'poole soe longe as the Lord Bushoppe of Chester for the time beinge, and John Parker of London Esquier, or his executors, shall not enforce <sup>Parker's consent.</sup> the said James Hyatt to leave his being at Liv'poole. Or els that he the said James Hyatt be not p'ferred unto some p'sonage or vicarage of his owne."

Some difficulty appears to have arisen. Mr. Parker here mentioned was applied to, to give his consent, and sent the following reply. He dates from the Court at Whitehall, but what was his particular influence over Mr. Hyatt does not appear.

1623, January 7th.

"After my most hartie comendacons, I purposed upon the receite of <sup>Letter from Parker.</sup> yo' letter, to have made you an answer accordinge to yo' desyre, but that at the instante I mett with a gentleman of yo' cuntrie who desyred me to let Mr Hyatt remaine in the place where he then was ontill his retorne out of the cuntrie againe, as I then writt both to my lord Bushopp and to Mr Hyatt, who beinge removed as it seemeth, before unto yo' towne, I referre his continuance there unto the care of my lord Bushopp, who better knowes the necessitie of every place than I who am a stranger in the cuntrie. And if he thinketh it fitter for him to remayne w<sup>th</sup> you, than in any other place, both in regard of yo' want and his abilitie to doe good amongst you, I shall be very well pleased, for my part, who have noe other ayne but God's glory, and the good of those who want enstruccon, and have not meanes to come by it to be guided by his Lo<sup>pps</sup> advise. And soe I comitte you to God's holy will and protection. Ever restinge

"Yo' very assured frend

" JOHN PARKER.

"from the cor<sup>t</sup> at Whythall."

Hyatt accepts      Mr Hyatt accepted the invitation and terms.  
1623, March 13th.

Residence.      “At an Assemblie it was concluded and agreed y<sup>t</sup> Mr Hyatt shall enjoy dureing the term of fyve years, that p<sup>t</sup>e of the Old Hall whereof he is now possessed and being the inheritance of Edward Moore Esquier, and the said Maior and Aldermen doe undertake for to discharge the rente thereof yerely, beinge foure pounds thirteene shillings and foure pence. And the said Maior, Aldermen, and Comon Councell, doe undertake for them and their successors, that after the expiracon of the said terme of fyve yeres, they will pay unto the said Mr Hyatt yerely the some of fourteene pounds, for soe long tyme as the said Mr Hyatt shall continue his teachinge and ministrie at Liv’poole. To be paid at such tymes and feasts as the said Mr Hyatt is to be paid x<sup>ii</sup> yerly dureinge the said fyve yeres, w<sup>ch</sup> he is to hold the Old Hall.”

Salary.

The Mayor and Corporation seem at this time to have exercised supreme authority within the borough in ecclesiastical as well as civil matters.

1623, December 16th.

Reading of Lessons.      “At an Assemblie held in the Comon Hall &c it was considered That whereas the place where the first and second Lessons are usually reade in the Chappell of this towne, was thought much more convenient for the readinge of Comon Prayer than the place in the Chancell where it form<sup>ly</sup> hath been reade, in respect the same place is in the midle of the same church, and in full audience and viewe of the whole congregacon, where the other in the chancell is but in viewe & hearing of p<sup>t</sup>e of the auditory. Yt is therefore thought fit, ordered, and decreed, that a pue or quere shalbe forthwith erected & built in the same place where the said first & second Lessons have beene heretofore usually reade, And that as well the Minister as the clarke for the tyme being shall in the same queare publish and reade as well dyvine service and comon prayers, as alsoe both first and second Lessons & such other rites and ceremonies as doth belong or app<sup>ty</sup>ne to the Church of England.”

Pue or Quere.

1621. January 21st.

Mr. Swift Preacher.      “At an assembly in the Common Hall before Ollyver Fairehurst, Maior &c, upon former speches of hyreing<sup>e</sup> Mr Swift to be a preacher here, and to come at the Ann<sup>ci</sup>acon next. It is agreed and concluded upon this day by the said Mr. Maior and whole assemblée, that the said Mr Swift shall have xxx<sup>ii</sup> p<sup>er</sup> ann, to preache here, to be paid quarterly every yere. And the Mayor for the tyme beinge to see the paym<sup>ts</sup> p<sup>er</sup>formed.”

Mr. Swift remained little more than five years.



1626, September 1st. Mr. Edwin Lappage was elected his successor. His appointment took the form of a legal contract as follows.

"James Lord Strange<sup>1</sup> Maior. Att an assembly holden at the Towne Hall before Rich<sup>d</sup> Rose Ald<sup>n</sup> Deputy Maior, and the greatest p'te of the Comon Councell. Yt was ordered and decreed by the whole Assembly, that Edward Lappage clerk, now minister and preacher of God's word in this towne, shall forev' hereafter dureing his life upon the contynueinge and exerciseinge his ministry or preaching w<sup>th</sup> in this towne accordinge as hee now doth, shall have clerely and yerely payd him over and above all fees, chardges, and other p'fitts belonging to the Church or Chappell of Liv'pool, out and from this towne the some of xx<sup>li</sup> at Michælmass, Cristemas, Lady Day, and Midsomer, by equall porcons, the first payment to begin at Michaelmas next, and soe to contynew yerely. And that the said sev'all payments shalbe paied him by the balives of this towne for the tyme beinge. And that the said church duties and other benefitts, the said Maister Lappage shall retaine them himself in kind (to his own use) as they shall grow due.

Lappage  
Preacher.

"And in consideracon theirow, the said Maister Lappage doth hereby assure and promise that hee will continew his ministry and preachinge w<sup>th</sup> in this towne dureinge his life tyme (upon true payment and receivinge the aforesaid allowance) accordinge to his best ability and understandinge as God shall enable him, otherwise he is not bound by this order. And further, yt is concluded that the King's alloweance allowed yerely to this towne towards a minister, shalbe at the next Audit at Warrington clerely paied to the said Mr Lappage to his own use and forev' after to the use of the towne."

Contract.

RICHARD ROSE, Deput' Maior  
EDWARD LAPPAGE, Minister."

There seems to have been a desire to make the minister comfortable, for on October 19th, 1627,

"Yt is ord'ed that the towne shall lend unto Mr Lappage a reasonable Milk Cowe whilst he remaineth a preachinge minis<sup>r</sup> here, and shall have allowed yerely for her keepinge ov' his 20<sup>ly</sup> pounds wages the some of 46<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> and y<sup>t</sup> the same shalbe paid at May Day and at St James's day by equall porcons and that the said cowe shalbe changed at the discrecon of the forty or great' p'te thereof."

Milk Cow for  
Preacher.

A very important condition is attached to this grant.

"That if the said Mr. Lappage shall hereafter publicly murmur or sue for more allowance, then this order to be void."

Preacher not  
to murmur.

<sup>1</sup> Subsequently the 7th Earl of Derby, beheaded at Bolton 15th October, 1651. He was married in June, 1626, to Charlotte de la Tremouille, the celebrated Countess.

1629, August 25th, the following petition was presented:—

“JOHN WALKER Maior

“To the Right Rev<sup>d</sup> father in God, John, Lord Bi<sup>pp</sup> of Chester.

Petition for  
Weekday  
Sermons.

“The humble peticon of the Maior and his brethren of the Corporacon of Liv<sup>poole</sup>.

“Sheweth unto yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>pp</sup> That whereas it is a M<sup>kett</sup> towne and a towne of greate resort, and many papists inhabittinge thereabouts.

“They humbly therefore intreate yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>pp</sup> to graunt them soe much favour as to afford them once a month two sermons uppon some weeke day w<sup>ch</sup> they shall thinke most fitt and convenient and they will dayly pray for yo<sup>r</sup> Lo<sup>pp</sup>.”

“Answer.

Answer.

“I am well content that there bee a lecture monthly at Liv<sup>poole</sup> as is desired, to bee preached by such ministers as are conformeable to the Canons of the Church, and to bee appointed by Mr Turner, Mr Alden, Mr Ray and Mr Broxopp or any of them.

“Signed

“Jo. CESTR.”

This permission was carried out according to the following programme:—

Course of  
Sermons.

“A course p<sup>posed</sup> for the upholdinge and continuance of a monthly Lecture graunted by my lo: B<sup>pp</sup> our Rev<sup>d</sup> ordinary at Liv<sup>poole</sup>.

Kay.

“Mr Kay the Vicar of Walton doth undertake for to p<sup>cure</sup> the same supplied two monthes in the yere viz<sup>t</sup> November and February.

Broxopp.

“Mr Broxopp doth undertake for M<sup>ch</sup> and July.

“The Maior of Liv<sup>poole</sup> w<sup>th</sup> their ordinary preacher are intreated as assistants to take care for the supply of the other monthes. And that they would give notice a month before, if it bee possible to the moderators w<sup>ch</sup> shalbee there.

“That December and January shalbee intermitted.

Turner.

“It is desired that Mr Turner would bee pleased to take care for the supply of one month.

Conditions.

“That the moderato<sup>rs</sup> p<sup>sent</sup> shall take notice whether any preacher there speake or doe any thinge to p<sup>judice</sup> the doctrine or discipline of the Church of England.”

“I undertake at Maior his request for Aprill and August.

Mather.

“Rich<sup>d</sup> Mather.”

This was entirely a Puritan movement, and very significant of the times. No separation had as yet taken place from the Episcopal Church of England, but within the Church there was a strong revulsion against the high-handed

proceedings of Archbishop Laud (then Bishop of London), combined with a tendency towards Presbyterianism. No-<sup>Presbyterianism.</sup> where in the kingdom was this feeling stronger than in Lancashire, where Protestantism was confronted by a powerful Popish influence, a large proportion of the landed gentry being Catholics. In Liverpool and Manchester, the Puritan element prevailed. Bridgman, Bishop of Chester<sup>Bridgman.</sup> at the time of this document, looked with favour on the movement, though a few years subsequently, prompted by Neile, Archbishop of York, he took a hostile position.

Mr. Nevil Kay, whose name heads the list of preachers, Kay. became a Presbyterian during the Commonwealth, and his name is to be found amongst the Lancashire Ministers who in 1649 signed the "Harmonious Consent," which was a document condemning the republicans, with a bitter outbreak of intolerance against all sectaries.

Richard Mather, whose name closes the list, was the<sup>Mather.</sup> minister of the ancient chapel, Toxteth Park. He was ordained by Bishop Bridgman, but afterwards silenced by him in consequence of his Puritanical views. In 1635, he escaped in disguise from Liverpool and found his way to New England, where he became very popular and distinguished. His grandson, Cotton Mather, is well-known as the historian of New England.

"1633, Nov 1<sup>st</sup> Yt is ord'ed that there shalbee morneinge pray<sup>r</sup> as<sup>Morning</sup> form'y hath beene. And that the Clark for the tyme beinge (if it can<sup>Prayers.</sup> bee procured) shalbee made Deacon, and have added to his wages vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> p ann."

"1641, Decr 14<sup>th</sup> It is agreed at this assembly, that from henceforth Mayor to find the Maior of this towne for the tyme being & soe ev'y Maior, shall on his<sup>Preachers.</sup> owne costs fynd the two preach<sup>rs</sup> yt preach ev'y exercise day; togeith<sup>r</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the preach<sup>r</sup> belonging to this towne & that henceforth that charge of keepeing all the ministers shall cease, in regard the same hath bene chargeable on the towne."

"1643, Sept 22<sup>nd</sup> It is this day ordered by an Assemblie that Mr Tompson Tompson shalbe minister here, and shalbe content w<sup>th</sup> such allowance as<sup>appointed.</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Colonells and deputie Leivetenn<sup>s</sup> shall appoynt and allowe to be sett

out for y<sup>e</sup> p'sent maintenaunce of a minister in the Burrough, together w<sup>th</sup> such other dues and duties as shalbe due unto him from y<sup>e</sup> towne" &c.

Military.

The military element now predominated. The Parliament had taken possession, and sent down a commission of officers to sequestrate the tithes and regulate ecclesiastical affairs. In 1643, November 23rd, they issued the following manifesto :—

Commission  
of Colonels.

" Liverpoole—Upon informa<sup>on</sup> that the towne of Liverpoole hath not anie competent maintenance for y<sup>e</sup> Ministrie at their Church or Chapell there ; it being a M<sup>k</sup>et towne and of great resort, a Garrison-towne and the cheefe port of these parts ; the inhabitants manie and well affected. It is therefore thought fit and soe ordered, that twoe able and orthodox ministers be p<sup>r</sup>vyded to officiate there, and shall have out of the sequestra<sup>co</sup>ns of the tithes of Walton, one hundreth pounds a year to be divyded betweene them by the Maior and the Comon Councell of Liverpoole as they shall see cause. And this stypend to be allowed by the Agents for y<sup>e</sup> sequestra<sup>co</sup>ns for that division.

Minister's  
Salary.

" Signed

" The sequestrators are to keepe soe much in their hands of the whole tythes as may make due paym<sup>t</sup> of the some aforesaid quarterly &c."

" T STANLEY<sup>1</sup>

" RAPHE ASHETON

" RICHARD HOLLANDE

" JOHN MOORE

" ROBT HYDE

" THOS BIRCHE."

These gentlemen were all Colonels  
in the Parliamentary Army.

Following up this order, on the 28th January, 1644,

Two  
Ministers.

" Att an assembly held before James Williamson Maior, John Moore Coll. and Governor of the said port, the ald<sup>m</sup>en and comon Councell assembled, it was propounded concerning the elecc<sup>o</sup>n of another minister, it being Ordered by the Dep<sup>ty</sup> Leivten<sup>ts</sup> that the yearly stypend of c<sup>li</sup> p<sup>r</sup> ann shalbe allowed out of the tithes of Walton Parish to 2 orthodox ministers, who are to officiate heere, to be disposed of betwixt them as the said Maior and comon councell shall think fitt. It is now therefore ordered that Mr Joseph Tompson who was first elected minister to serve heere, shall stand and be confirmed in the said place and office of cheefe minister of this towne and shall from tyme to tyme take and receive to his own use all church dues and duties as the same shall respectively become due. And that Mr David Ellison shall stand and bee nominated

Tompson.

Ellison.

<sup>1</sup> Ancestor of the present Earls of Derby.



and appoynted to serve as the other Minister and assistant to the said Mr Tompson according to y<sup>e</sup> said order, and shall have the allowance of fifty pounds  $\text{p}^{\text{r}}$  an. out of the said c<sup>d</sup> for his stypend and wages, quarterly to be paid as afforsaid and the remaine shall accrue to the said Mr Tompson according to the tenor of the said order."

"Tyme is given to Mr. Ellison to consider of this ord<sup>r</sup>."

1644, March 18th. The order of the Commissioners of November, 1643, was confirmed by Parliament as follows:—

"Att the Committee of the House of Comons in Parliam<sup>t</sup> conc<sup>'</sup>ning plundered ministers.

"Whereas Dr. Clare, Rector of the p<sup>'</sup>ish Church of Walton in the county of Lancaster hath wholly disserted his said cure, and betaken himselfe to the forces raised ag<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Parliam<sup>t</sup> It is ordered that the said Rectory shalbe forth<sup>wth</sup> sequestred from the said Dr. Clare, and that all tythes, rents, duties and p<sup>'</sup>fitts of and w<sup>th</sup>in the severall and respective p<sup>'</sup>cincts of Toxteth p<sup>'</sup>ke Lyverpoole Formby and Kirkby w<sup>th</sup>in the said p<sup>'</sup>ish shall stand and be sequestered to the use of such minister and ministers as shall be nominated and apoynted to officiate the cures of and in the severall and respective chapells w<sup>th</sup>in the said sev<sup>'</sup>all p<sup>'</sup>cincts, and that the third p<sup>'</sup> of all tythes rents duties and p<sup>'</sup>fitts of and belonging to y<sup>e</sup> towne of Darby w<sup>th</sup>in the said parish shall stand and be sequestered to the use of such minister and ministers as shall be nominated and appointed to officiate the cure of and w<sup>th</sup>in y<sup>e</sup> Chapel of Darby afforesaid, And that all y<sup>e</sup> rest and residue of all the tythes rents revenews and p<sup>'</sup>fitts of y<sup>e</sup> said Rectory shall stand and be sequestered to y<sup>e</sup> use and behoofe of Will<sup>m</sup> Ward M<sup>r</sup> of Arts, a godly and orthodox divine who is hearby apointed to officiatt the cure of the said p<sup>'</sup>ish Church of Walton and to preach diligently there, the said Mr Ward paying out of the same to each of the said chapells of Liverpoole and Toxteth p<sup>'</sup>ke (for an increase of maintenance unto them) the yearly some of tenne pounds of lawfull monie of England and all other sum and sums of money and allowances wherew<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Vicaridge of Walton is endowed, and with paymen<sup>t</sup> whereof the said Rectory stood charged; And it is further ordered that y<sup>e</sup> said Mr Ward shall have and receve to his owne use all tythes revenews and p<sup>'</sup>fitts of the said Rectory whatsoever, until y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> chapells shall be as afforesaid respectively p<sup>'</sup>vided for of ministers.

GILBT MILLINGTON."

In 1645, Mr. Joseph Tompson was transferred to the Rectory of Sefton, from which he was ejected under the Act of Uniformity, in 1662.

1645, October 20th. Thomas Blackmore, Maior.

"At an Assembly &c Mr Fogg was p<sup>'</sup>pounded to be minister heer and

is approved of by this assemblie and ellected accordingly, and is to have all the allowance of tythes if that will satisfie him or otherwise a competent some is to be raysed by way of tax for his wages for this p'sent yeare."

Fogg's Salary. There was considerable wrangling about Mr. Fogg's salary.

"1647, May 31<sup>st</sup> P'pounded concerning Mr. Fogg, after y<sup>e</sup> draught of an ord<sup>r</sup> red for y<sup>e</sup> towne to pay him 90<sup>li</sup> yearly and in lew thereof the towne to have all y<sup>e</sup> tythes, it was respyted till another full meeting."

"1647, Decr 23<sup>rd</sup> Memorand' that a former order of this house made concerning the paym<sup>t</sup> of seaven pounds unto Mr Fogg by Mr Ballive Cornell is confirmed, yet nevertheles upon his and Mr Blackmore's allegacons it is referred unto Mr Ball' Massam & William Lurting to examine the rates and vallue of corne at that tyme, and to ord<sup>r</sup> and compose the same busines, or to report their oppinnions to this house. Who have since ordred und<sup>r</sup> their hands and reported accordingly, and therefore this Assembly doe thereupon againe ord<sup>r</sup> him to pay 6<sup>li</sup> in full of the 7<sup>li</sup> formerly ordered.

"And afterwards the 17<sup>th</sup> of 8<sup>br</sup> 1648 this house upon a further debate ordred them to pay v<sup>li</sup> in full for y<sup>e</sup> 7<sup>li</sup> & the other xl<sup>s</sup> to be paid by y<sup>e</sup> towne."

Mr. Fogg appears to have looked pretty sharply after his stipend and emoluments.

Adjustment of Accounts. "1650, Octr 31<sup>st</sup> Forasmuch as it is made to appeare unto this house that the some of fiftie pounds, p'te of a yeere's tythes belonging to this towne remains in the hands of Mr Tompson after hee was p'ferred unto Sefton, w<sup>ch</sup> said some Mr Fogg o<sup>r</sup> minister challenged to be due and payable to him, And now having relinquished the same soe that it becomes payable to the Maior and Ballives to be disposed of to the use of such Minister or Ministers as shall happen to officiate hereafter. It is therefore now ord'red that y<sup>e</sup> said Mr Tompson shall pay the said some of 50<sup>li</sup> by ten pounds in hand and xl<sup>li</sup> at the next monethe's end, to be disposed of as above said. Ord'ly without detractcon or diminution in anie wise to such Minister and Ministers as shall suply the place in the tyme of vacansie."

Tompson to pay.

1649. The execution of Charles I., in 1649, sent a great shock through the country, and caused a considerable revulsion of feeling amongst the Presbyterian party, which was increased by the further execution of the Duke of Hamilton and the Earl of Holland. The ministers of the Presbytery of Lanca-

shire, after observing many days of fasting and prayer, issued a pastoral address, in which, whilst carefully avoiding all direct opposition to the existing government, they exhorted their people to adhere stedfastly to their faith, and to prepare for suffering in its defence. Cromwell, however, took prompt measures to suppress any rising discontent. An order was issued requiring all ministers, publicly before their congregations, to take the engagement "to be true and faithful to the government established without king or house of Peers."

Pastoral  
Address.

The  
engagement.

A meeting of the ministers in Lancashire and Cheshire was held, in which opinions were divided, but it was resolved by a majority

Meeting of  
Ministers.

"that 'the engagement' was not lawful, because the Solemn League and Covenant was still binding, and because it was a prejudice to the right heir to the Crown."

League and  
Covenant.

Mr. Fogg was included in this majority, and therefore for a time abandoned his charge. Hence the following proceedings:—

Fogg  
superseded.

"1651 June 30<sup>th</sup> James Williamson Maior.

"Att an Assembly &c. It was propounded by Mr Maior concerning the Ellection of a Minister who (by the auntient custom heere tyme out of mynde used) is to be elected, chosen, and approved of, by the said Assembly. Upon full debate it was ordered and agreed upon that twoe orthodox Ministers shold be elected to officiate heere for the future, in regard there is hopes of better meanes and allowance for their maintenance in this place than formerly; it being the cheefe Port and the only garrison in these parts, and a place of great resort. That Mr Peter Stanynough and Mr Michael Briscowe who are p'pounded and approved of, shall stand and bee elected Ministers joyntly to officiate and serve the cure heere; they divyding the meanes and allowance as it shall falle equally betwixt them, according to the Comittees order.<sup>1</sup> And for p'cedence as they can agree, dureing their good demeano' only and untill further order in this behalfe."

Two Ministers  
appointed.

Stanynough  
and Bristowe.

These appointments were unfortunate. Mr. Stanynough, soon after his election, it is recorded, "resygned and

<sup>1</sup> *Vide supra*, p. 202.

Rigby. relinquished the place.” Mr. James Rigby was nominated in his stead.

Both decline. “1651, Sept. 10<sup>th</sup> Mem<sup>d</sup> that Mr. Briscow hath sent a letter of resignation and refuses to come, being otherwise ingudged (engaged) to the place where hee formerly lived.<sup>1</sup> Mr Rigby discontinues by reason of the sicknes, since w<sup>ch</sup> tyme the towne (being disapoynted) some overture hath beene made concerning Mr Fogg’s retorne, w<sup>ch</sup> may be effected if hee (by subscriybing the ingudgm<sup>t</sup> (engagement) put himsele in a capacitie to officiate in this Garrison, w<sup>ch</sup> the towne is very desireous of and have written to him to that purpose.”

Fogg reappointed. “1652, Jany. 14<sup>th</sup> Att an Assemblie held this day before Thomas Williamson Maior &c it was p’pounded concerning the electing of a minister, whereupon by a generall consent of this house they doe nominate and elect John Fogg clerk to be minister hereafter, p’vyded that hee subscribe the Ingudgem<sup>t</sup>, and declare his consent and submission unto the p’sent governem<sup>t</sup>.

Demands Salary. “W<sup>ch</sup> afterwards hee did accordingly p’forme and is established.” “1653, Jany. 31<sup>st</sup>. Mem<sup>d</sup> at an Assembly &c. It was p’pounded by Mr John Fogg Minister of the Corporacon to have y<sup>e</sup> overplus of a yeare’s p’fitt in his absence to be p<sup>d</sup> him, and of y<sup>e</sup> 50<sup>li</sup> paid in by Mr Joseph Tompson.

Church Dues. “2. To be freed by the Corporacon of all leyes and taxacons w<sup>ch</sup> hee aleadged was p’mised at his comeing to be donne.

“3. To have all y<sup>e</sup> Church dues paid unto him, and to have y<sup>e</sup> towne’s assistance in y<sup>e</sup> collecting of them, and to have y<sup>e</sup> arreres of the x<sup>li</sup> p<sup>er</sup> ann due to y<sup>e</sup> Minister heere to be paid him by Mr Ward, parson of Walton.

“4. To have six moneth warning given him whensoever he is to be removed.

“All w<sup>ch</sup> p’positions being made by y<sup>e</sup> said Mr Fogg w<sup>th</sup> a long apologie; after hee was withdrawen and departed, the said p’ticulers were taken into consideracon, and ord’red and answered as followeth viz<sup>t</sup>.

“To the first, that there is noe ov’plus at all left, the said moneys being wholly bestowed upon such ministers as supplied heere in his absence and in y<sup>e</sup> beginning of y<sup>e</sup> tyme of y<sup>e</sup> visitatacon heere.

Arrangement. “And to y<sup>e</sup> seacond it was ord’red formerly by this Assembly y<sup>t</sup> hee shold pay his proporcon in all leyes and taxacons &c.

“To the third it is readily granted him that all Church dues shalbe paid him, and that y<sup>e</sup> towne’s officers wilbe readie to assist him in y<sup>e</sup> collecting of them if they be denyed, and y<sup>t</sup> if anie bee in arreare it is his owne fault in not calleinge for them.

“To the fourth, they will not be bound to anie other notice but in curtesie.”

“1655 July 11. At an Assemblie &c Mr John Fogg Minister presents

<sup>1</sup> Walmesley, near Manchester.



a petition 'whereby hee desires that the house and backsyde called Cooke's house situate in the Tythe Barne Streete, lately confiscate and fallen into the towne's hands may be allowed and sett appart unto him for a habitation, and soe to continue unto all other Ministers. It is therefore ordered and agreed that the said house shalbee allowed unto him and his successors, Provided they shall inhabite and dwell there, and shall keep the same in repaire. And this guifte to stand and be in lewe and satisfaccon of all moneys and legacies heretofore given and bequeathed unto the Ministers here.'"

Fogg's  
House.

Mr. Fogg continued his ministry until 1662, when he was ejected under the Act of Uniformity, and soon after, through the operation of the Five Mile Act, he had to withdraw from the neighbourhood.

1662.  
Fogg ejected.

During the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries many bequests were made to the Chapel of Liverpool, of which the records make mention.

In 1529 (21st Henry VIII.), Dame Cecilia Halghton, widow of Ewan Halghton, late of Liverpole, bequeathed seven messuages and ninety-seven acres of land in the Manors of West Derby and Wavertree, in order to provide a fit and able chaplain to celebrate divine offices in the Chapel of the blessed Mary and Saint Nicholas the Bishop, in Liverpole, at a certain altar called "Our Lady's Altar."

Bequests by  
Halghton.

Six years afterwards, this, with the other chantries, was suppressed, and the endowment confiscated to the Crown.

In 1635, Thomas Moore bequeathed to the chapel £5.

Moore.

The same year, Judith Ulster left £50, one-half to the chapel, the other half to the school and the poor.

Ulster.

1636. Robert Williamson and his wife Samuell<sup>1</sup> bequeath £5 to the minister, £5 to the school, and £5 to the poor.

Williamson.

In 1653, £20 was bequeathed by Richard Holmes for the purpose of paying 20s a year to the Minister of Liverpool, and the authorities were directed

Holmes.

<sup>1</sup> *Sic* in the records, where it is entered twice in different years. The Christian name Samuell applied to a woman is almost unique.

"to take speedie course and use their utmost endeavo<sup>r</sup> for obtaining of satisfaccon thereof."

Inquiries were made, and a report made as follows :—

"That one Richard Houlmes by his last will nuncupative gave the sum of twentie pounds to be employed for the use of the minister of Liverpoole yearly, if John Houlmes his sonne should happen to dye in his minoritie, and left Thomas Tarleton Ald<sup>r</sup>man, and John Williamson Executo<sup>rs</sup> who as is conceived ought to have paid the same accordingly ; the said John Houlmes being long absent and suposed to be dead. It is therefore Ord<sup>r</sup>ed that a peticon bee drawn up and p<sup>r</sup>ferred to y<sup>e</sup> Comission<sup>rs</sup> for pious uses, and that Mr Washington be solizited to give in his informacon concerning this business at Prescott, w<sup>ch</sup> was done accordingly, but the Com<sup>rs</sup> have declared y<sup>t</sup> it is not within their charge to intermeddle in it, since w<sup>ch</sup> it alsoe appeers that John Houlmes is yet lyveing."

Williamson.

In 1655 there came into possession a bequest made to the Church by John Williamson, described as a "Berebrewer" (Mayor in 1638). The transaction was carried out in rather a peculiar way.

Lands  
bequeathed to  
Minister.

On January 26, 1628, by a deed in Latin, Williamson surrenders two closes or parcels of copyhold land, in West Derby, for the purpose of their being regranted to certain trustees named,

"Ad opus et usum tal' p'sone et p' tali statu et statibus et p' tal' usibus et intencon' et in tali modo' et forma et subt' tal' condicones et p'visiones et limitacones qual' sint menconat', express' et declarat' limitat' et apunctuat' in et p' quosdam Indentur'" &c.

The accompanying indenture is in English, and provides that the trustees, immediately after the death of the testator, shall be seized of the above lands, and that the possessors and occupiers

"shall thereout yearly at the feasts of the Nativitie of o<sup>r</sup> Lord God and St John Baptist by equall porcons or within twentie dayes next ensuing pay for ever unto such p'son as for the time being shalbee an able Preaching Minister and shall constantly everie Sabath, preach the Word of God in the Chappell of Liverpoole, and shalbee approved of and allowed of by the Maior of Liv'poole, and fyve of the frequentest

Communicants which shalbee dwelling within Liverpoole afforesaid, the yearely some of fower pounds of lawful monie of England," &c.

The churchwardens were appointed by the Council, who were the regulators of all matters, ecclesiastical as well as civil. Church-wardens.

There are various presentments for Sabbath offences, Sabbath offences.  
*e.g.*—Keeping company during the hours of divine service; for selling on the Sabbath day; for leading corn on St. Matthew's day; "for tusleinge one upon another at the time of divine service"; for unlawful gaming; for absence from church at evening prayers; for keeping a pyper in his house on the Sabbath day, &c.

1648, October 23rd, Port Moot entry :—

"Wee agree that the Churchwardens for the tyme being shall make their p'sentments to Mr Maior monethly towching breach of y<sup>e</sup> Saboth and monthly faste, according to Ordinance of Parliament." Fast.

"It is also ordered that all such householders or other p'sons as shall neglect the strict observeing of Sundayes and fast dayes and shall not frequent the church, but either loyter, or stay abroad drinkeing, or shalbe disordered and taken in anie misdemeano<sup>r</sup>s shalbe severly punished and shall forfaite for everie offence 40<sup>s</sup>."

In August, 1653, an Act of Parliament was passed requiring a registrar to be appointed of burials, births, and marriages in each parish. The following entry relates thereto :— Registrar.

"1653, Nov<sup>r</sup> 2 At an Assembly &c Whereas a petico<sup>n</sup> was referred the last Sessions by the Register of this Parish against the Maior of this Corpora<sup>n</sup> concerning the deliv'ie of y<sup>e</sup> Reg<sup>r</sup> Book to him, and a l're or ord<sup>r</sup>s thereupon from the Justices. It is ordred that hee may if hee please tak a copie of y<sup>e</sup> book kept by the Church Clark, but y<sup>t</sup> notw<sup>th</sup>standing the Church Clark shall p'ceede to register all burials, births and marriages within the towne as formerly, as being y<sup>e</sup> towne's remembranc<sup>r</sup> and shall have y<sup>e</sup> fees due & accustomed paid him for y<sup>e</sup> said s'vice." Register Book.

This open defiance of the law, however, met with a rebuke.

1654, April 10th, there is entered

"A Copie of an Ord<sup>r</sup> made by the Justices of Peace for the electing of a Parish Regist<sup>r</sup> within this Corpora<sup>n</sup>."

Election of  
Registrar.

“At a Sessions of Peace holden at Ormsk<sup>ke</sup> in the Countie of Lanc<sup>r</sup> on Munday to witt the x<sup>th</sup> day of Aprill 1654. Upon heareing of the difference betwixt William Ellison and y<sup>e</sup> Clerke of Liverpoole concerning the execucon of the office of Parish Regist<sup>r</sup> for registring all births and burialls according to a late Acte of Parlim<sup>t</sup>. It is ord<sup>r</sup>ed by this Cort, that the inhabitants within Liverpoole shall forthwith meete together, elect and choose an able and sufficient man to bee Parish Regist<sup>r</sup> within the Corporacon of Liv<sup>r</sup>poole aforesaid, and cause the said p<sup>r</sup>son soe elected to bee sworne according to the said Acte.”

“Afterward upon publick notice given for the electing of a publick Register for this Corporacon and a full meeteing of the burgesses & free-men in y<sup>e</sup> Church before y<sup>e</sup> worp<sup>l</sup> Edw<sup>d</sup> Williamson Gent, Maior, Robert Seacom was elected and chosen to be Reg<sup>r</sup> for the same Burrow and then publickly sworne according to the tenor of y<sup>e</sup> late Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup>.”

Act repealed.

On the restoration of Charles II. this Act was superseded, and it required nearly two hundred years' further experience before a general register was adopted.

Precedence.

Precedence and order during divine service were strictly enforced.

1628, January 12th. At a Port Moot, John Walker, Mayor :—

Mayor and  
Aldermen.  
Bailiffs.

“Item, wee agree that Mr Maior and the Aldermen shall sit together in the Chancell where Mr Maior usually sitts upon payne of their fyne.”

“Item, wee agree that the Ballives and Ballive's peeres shall sit together in the longe forme next to Mr Maior's, and for want of roome there, wee order that a new benche shalbee made at the backe of that, for the other sort of Ballives Peers that want roome.”

Mayoress, &c.

“Wee agree that Mrs Maioresse and the rest of the Aldermen's wyves shall sit in the two upp<sup>r</sup> formes in the middle rowe in the Church, and y<sup>t</sup> the Ballive's wyves and Ballive's Peeres wyves shall all of them sitt together in the formes next unto these two formes.”

“Item, wee agree that the Ballives peeres shall weare their gownes to the Church ev<sup>y</sup> Sabboth day, upon payne of their fyne.”

Fine.

“1628, Jany 22<sup>nd</sup> Yt is ordered and agreed upon by the wholle Councell that whatsoever p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons shall breake the order sett downe by the last Jury conc<sup>n</sup>inge the placeinge and sittinge in the church shall for ev<sup>r</sup>ie such offence committed upon the Sabboth day, forfeit and lose vj<sup>d</sup> and the same shalbee gath<sup>r</sup>ed w<sup>th</sup>out remittall as the fines for the towne are, and shalbee given to the poore w<sup>th</sup>in this towne, accordinge as Mr Maior and the Churchwardens for the time beinge shall thinke fitt.”

Seats and  
Pews.

1648 Nov 17<sup>th</sup> “Ordered by Mr Maior and the Comon Councell assembled, that in regard the seats in y<sup>e</sup> church where Mr Maior and the Ald<sup>r</sup>men sitt are inconvenient for heareing, and very ill placed; it is therefore agreed and consented, that new seats & pues shalbe made and



placed in such sort and manner as Mr Maior shall think fit and appoynt, and the roome in y<sup>e</sup> chancell where hee hath used to sitt, shall hereafter be reserved for m<sup>r</sup>chants and strangers."

There are several notices during this period about the Church Bells. church bells. It appears that from early times there had been a peal in the church tower, but the number of bells is not recorded.

1628, Octr 18<sup>th</sup> "Jno Walker Maior. At a meeting of the Councell yt is ordered and agreed upon (Raph Seacome and Rich<sup>d</sup> Rose only dissentinge) That all the fines for this yere shalbee collected and payed Fund w<sup>th</sup>out spareinge or forbearinge of any p<sup>'</sup>son w<sup>'</sup>soever, to the towne for provided. and towards a ringe of bells and that for ev<sup>'</sup> hereafter the same shall goe to the towne, and shalbee collected by the ballives for the time beinge, and the towne's customer, and yt sev<sup>'</sup>all p<sup>'</sup>cepts or warrants shalbe made by the towne clarke for the time beinge unto them, and y<sup>'</sup> their shalbe xij<sup>d</sup> for ev<sup>'</sup>y pound allowed them for gatheringe the same. And that in consideracon thereof, the Maior and the Ballives shall have the Toll Corne, and gather it themselves at their owne chardges."

The bells were accordingly ordered, but turned out unsatisfactory.

"1636, Oct<sup>r</sup>. Tho<sup>s</sup> Bicksteth Maior. At an Assembly &c. Whereas Bells ordered. heretofore as app<sup>'</sup>eth by anciente records, there hath beene a Ringe of Bells w<sup>th</sup>in this towne, and some of them have beene taken downe and otherwise converted. And whereas alsoe there hath beene since, to witt in or about seaven yeres laste paste, three other bells intended to be suteable to the said bell, but by negligence of one Robte Ouldfeld a bell Ouldfeld. founder, who caste or made the said three bells of such base mettall that they were altogether disonante or disagreeinge to the said first bell, and altogether dislikeinge to the whole Corporacon, the said Mr Mair w<sup>th</sup> the full assente, consente, and goodlikinge of the Aldermen Ballives and Burgesses of the same Corporacon, agreed and concluded with one Thomas Hancock of Walsall in the County of Stafford, bellfounder, to alter Hancock. and chaunge the said bells for fower other more consonante and tuneable for w<sup>ch</sup> exchange the said Corporacon is to give and allowe unto the said Hancock two pence for ev<sup>'</sup>y pounce and the said bellfounder Hancock to allowe ten pence the pound for ev<sup>'</sup>y pound weighte of the ould bells ov<sup>'</sup> and above the weighte of the said fower new bells. And for the further explanacon hereof, the firste of the new bells weigheth after the rate of Weight of five score and twelve pounds to the hundred five hundreth one quarter Bells. and twenty pounds. The second six hundreth and fourteene pounds. The third eighte hundreth, and the fourth nyne hundreth and three quarters

w<sup>ch</sup> is in the whole two thousand and nyne hundreth thirty and four pounds (29 cwt 0 qr 34 lb). And the ould bells exchanged as aforesaid weigheth three thousand and fifty one pounds."

1649. The bells even yet were not satisfactory, for we find an entry, 1649, Nov. 27th :—

Further order. "Whereas there hath been some conference w<sup>th</sup> the bellfounder of Wigan about the casting of 2 bells, it is ordred that according to Mr Maiors agreem<sup>t</sup> w<sup>th</sup> him, there shalbe 2 more tunable bells cast, at 17<sup>s</sup> 4 cwt, allowance for casting, carriage and all, and hee to see them hung compleate."

Down to 1622 there was no public clock in the town. In that year, on March 1st, we find an entry on the Council proceedings :—

Clock provided.

"M<sup>d</sup> that wheras dyvers mo<sup>con</sup>s have hertofore beene made for haveinge and makeinge a Clocke in the Chappell of Liv'poole, w<sup>ch</sup> at last was (by the earnest entreatie and mo<sup>con</sup> of Thomas Waynwright, Clarke, Minister and Curatt of Liv'poole) concluded and sett upp to the greate benefitte and pleasure of the inh'tants of Liv'poole, whereupon the said Mr Waynewright hath undertaken and promised unto John Walker, Gent. Maior of Liv'poole for and on the behalfe of the whole Corpora<sup>con</sup> of Liv'poole, that he, the said Mr Waynwright will well and duly dureinge the tyme of his ministrie at Liv'poole keep and sett the said Clocke. And if he shall neglect the doeing of the same, that then he is willinge that forth of his wayges from the towne of Liv'poole, soe much money shall be abated and defalked as the tendinge and keepinge of the said clocke shall lye in."

Minister to keep Clock.

1626, October 26th. At a Port Moot Inquisition :—

"Item, wee p'sent Nicholas Lurtinge for not keeping the Clock *agate* in due order."

Sexton to keep Clock.

"1647 Aug 9<sup>th</sup>. It is this day ordered that Richard Poultney sexton shall receive xxvj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> for keepeing of y<sup>e</sup> Church Clock," &c.

The church had to be kept in repair by the Corporation, but they took care that the foreigners frequenting the town should be made to contribute.

Foreign Burgesses taxed to repair Bells.

1611, March 11<sup>th</sup> "Item, it is agreed by the Assembly, that x<sup>ii</sup> shalbe levied of the Burges' & inhabitants of this towne and iij<sup>ii</sup> vi<sup>s</sup> vijii<sup>d</sup> upon the forren Burgesses for the repayinge of the Chappell of St. Nicholas in Liv'poole, both windowes, lead and other rep'a<sup>cons</sup> touchinge the same chappell."

1618, April 30<sup>th</sup>. "M<sup>d</sup> this day John Corker glasier was admitted a free-man, and sworne a free burgesse of this towne, upon this condicon, yt he shall maintayne the Church windowes w<sup>th</sup> sufficient glasinge, wyer and leade, & in recompence thereof he is to have his freedome given him gratis & is to have yearly vj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> for his wages, and this to continue duringe his life. And if he make default hereof, beinge by the Maior or Churchwarden for the time beinge thereto required, then is he to pay (40) xl<sup>s</sup> for his fredome. And the wyndow in Mr Maior's chancell w<sup>ch</sup> is now in decay, Corker is to take the glasse downe and sett it up againe at his owne charges. Daies of paim<sup>t</sup> for his wages, Michaelle and the Annunciation." Glazing Church Windows.

1629, April 13<sup>th</sup>. "Yt is ordered that a Lay or Tax of xx<sup>li</sup> shalbee imposed upon the forraine Burgesses for repaire of the Church and other necessaryes, and those that will not pay the same shall have noe benefitt of their freedome, but shall pay their duties and customes as strang's; this to be layd as afforesaid."

1658, March 12<sup>th</sup>. "Ord'red that the Church shalbe repaired as occasion shall require, the same being in much ruine & decay, and that a Ley shalbe laid, wherein all forayne Burgesses shall contribute." Mayor's Chancel.

Burials took place occasionally within the church.

1639, April 16<sup>th</sup>.

Burials in Church.

"Rec<sup>d</sup> of Mr John Crosse Esquire by Thomas Rattclyffe and John Tompson, Churchwardens of the Chappell of Liverpooll the some of one shilling and eight pence for a burying place for the sonne of the said John Crosse, who lyeth interred in a certaine quire w<sup>th</sup>in the said Chappell on the south side thereof where the tenants that inhabite in Mr Crosse aforesaid his hall situate in Liv'poole abovesaid do sitt."

The private appropriation of seats in the church was prohibited.

1658 Mar 7<sup>th</sup> "Ord'red that noe p'son or p'sons shalbe p'mitted to sett anie locks upon the pues and seats in the Church without leave of this house." Pews to be free.

The subordination of Liverpool as a mere succursal ecclesiastically to the mother church of Walton, three miles distant, was a constant source of annoyance and complaint, and many entries in the records during the seventeenth century indicate the efforts made to shake off the yoke. Opposition to Walton.

"1615, May 16<sup>th</sup>. Rich<sup>d</sup> Mellinge, Gen. Maior. At an Assembly &c Whereas Lawrence Bridge nowe Clearke of Walton did this day at this Assemblie, demaund allowance for his Cleark's wages, due as hee alledged" Clerk of Walton.

unto him as Clarke of the saide P'ish Church of Walton, and for that the saide Lawrence Bridge did for that purpose referre himself to the considera<sup>con</sup> of the whole assemblie, and was willing to accept of what they would give him in liewe of his yeerely wages for the saide towne, It is thereupon consented unto by the saide Mr Maior and the rest of that Assemblie, that in considera<sup>con</sup> the saide was held to bee an honest man and theire neighb<sup>r</sup>, they would give him yeerely so longe as hee carryed himselfe honestly and well in his place, the some of vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>, to be paide him yeerely by the Bayliffs of the towne for the tyme beeing, out of the towne box, to bee paide yeerely ev'ie Tuesdaie in Easter week."

During the civil war the controversy slept, but on the return of peace it was revived.

Refusal to  
contribute.

"1656, Nov<sup>r</sup> 19<sup>th</sup> Gilbert Formby Gent. Maior. Att an Assemblie &c. It was voted and ord<sup>r</sup>ed. That by reason of the losses of the Corpora<sup>con</sup> received in the tyme of y<sup>e</sup> late warr and for that the late Parliam<sup>t</sup> hath settled upon the Minist<sup>r</sup> of this place all the tythes running within the Liberties, it's p<sup>r</sup>sumed that wee (haveing formerly beene a Parish and have alwaies enjoyed all Parochiall priviledges) ought not to contribute to the repara<sup>con</sup> of Walton Church, and that y<sup>e</sup> answe<sup>r</sup> bee retorned to y<sup>e</sup> Churchwardens of Walton, whensoev<sup>r</sup> they shall demande the Leyes. And if anie suyte shalbe comenced and prosecuted for such Leyes & Taxa<sup>cons</sup> upon this deniall, then the towne is to beare the charge thereof."

Suit by  
Walton.

1657, May 14<sup>th</sup>. "P<sup>r</sup>ounded by Mr Maior concerning the suyte comenced ag<sup>t</sup> him by Nich<sup>as</sup> Valentyne on y<sup>e</sup> behalf of y<sup>e</sup> Churchwardens of Walton that the same p<sup>r</sup>ceedings shalbe defended at the towne's charge, and that Mr Winstanley shall solizit and indeavor at his goeing to London and at other tymes as hee shall see occasion to p<sup>r</sup>cure this towne to be sev<sup>d</sup>ed from the Parish of Walton and to be constituted and made a Parish of it selfe."

Petition for  
Parish.

1657, Oct<sup>r</sup>. 16<sup>th</sup>. "Att an Assemblie &c it was propounded concerning the p<sup>r</sup>cureing of this towne to be constituted a Parish of itselfe. Ord<sup>r</sup>ed that Mr John Winstanley, Towne Clerk shalbe solizitor for the Corpora<sup>con</sup>, and shall goe to London this and the next tearme & indeavo<sup>r</sup> to get the same busines effected, or anie other that may bee of concernm<sup>t</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> towne and shall have the allowance of fyve pounds a Quarter for his paines and towards the beareing of his charges, and all such other moneys and disbursem<sup>ts</sup> as shalbe requisit to be disbursed in the dispatching of the towne's occasions."

Church Ley  
refused.

1657, Oct<sup>r</sup>. 23<sup>rd</sup>. "Whereas a Church Ley for Walton of 2<sup>h</sup> 13<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> is demanded by the Churchwarden by warr<sup>t</sup> from Edw. Moore Esq, [for] the Pasto<sup>r</sup> & p<sup>r</sup>sent Vicar of Walton; being o<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>portionable p<sup>r</sup>te of xij<sup>h</sup> charged upon Walton Parish. It is ordered, that the same Ley shalbe denied and not paid, being unduly taxed. And that y<sup>e</sup> plate and



goods of Mr. Gilb<sup>t</sup> Formby w<sup>ch</sup> are distrained shalbe replevied and the suyte thereupon p<sup>s</sup>ecuted & defended at y<sup>e</sup> towne's charge."

1657, Nov<sup>r</sup> 9<sup>th</sup>. "Ord<sup>r</sup>ed, that an acc<sup>o</sup>n shalbe brought in the Burrow Court and p<sup>s</sup>ecuted by the Bailives against James Standish, Gent. for taking a silver Can from Mr Gilb<sup>t</sup> Formby as a distresse for the Church Leyes demanded to be paid to Walton, and the charge of the suyte to be borne by the towne & disbursed by y<sup>e</sup> Balives upon their accompts." Action for Distraint.

1658, Jany 13<sup>th</sup>. "Thos Blackmore Gen. Maior. Att an Assembly &c it was p<sup>s</sup>ounded concerning the makeing of this towne into a Parish of it selfe. And ord<sup>r</sup>ed and agreed that the said busines shall p<sup>s</sup>ceed to be carried on & p<sup>s</sup>ected at the towne's charge. And that the Ord<sup>r</sup> alreadie obtained be p<sup>s</sup>ecuted with effect. And that Mr Winstanley shall goe up to London about it himselfe as solizitor according to form<sup>r</sup> Ord<sup>r</sup> & allowance of charge at 5<sup>th</sup> a quarter to him to be given in lew of all his expences & charges; and all disbursem<sup>t</sup> of fees to be paid him at his retorne upon an accompt to be given in y<sup>e</sup> behalfe. Alsoe it is consented that Mr Fogg y<sup>e</sup> Minist<sup>r</sup> heere, in regard of his owne interest, may goe up about it att his owne charge if hee please, w<sup>ch</sup> is afterwards to be consid<sup>r</sup>ed of by this howse upon his retorne." Proceedings for Parish.

"Aferwards, at an Assembly holden the 21<sup>st</sup> of May 1658 it was voted that Mr Fogg shall have the allowance of the charge of his London jorney in p<sup>s</sup>moting this busines iii<sup>li</sup> iiij<sup>s</sup>."

1658, Jany 27<sup>th</sup>. "P<sup>s</sup>ounded concerning the Church Leys for Walton still demanded by warr<sup>t</sup> & ord<sup>r</sup>ed that Mr Maior and anie three of the ald<sup>m</sup>en shall treat with and allow what they think fitt to the Churchwardens of Walton toward the repaire of that church for y<sup>e</sup> yeares past." Walton Church Leys.

1658, June 18. "Ord<sup>r</sup>ed that Mr Nathaniel Overton shalbe paid his accompt of iiiij<sup>li</sup> vij<sup>s</sup> remaining due to him for moneys disbursed in the p<sup>s</sup>ecting of the Instrum<sup>ts</sup> for dividing this towne from the Parish of Walton and constituting the same to bee an intire Parish of itselfe distinct from y<sup>t</sup> of Walton, w<sup>ch</sup> is donne and p<sup>s</sup>ected accordingly to comence from the decease of Mr Robt Eaton the p<sup>s</sup>ent incumbent & of Mr Finch y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>s</sup>ent Vicar."

1658, Aug 2. "It is ord<sup>r</sup>ed that the suyte be p<sup>s</sup>ecuted ag<sup>t</sup> Mr Standish of Westd<sup>r</sup>by for y<sup>e</sup> takeing of Mr Gilb<sup>t</sup> Formby's silver Cann by way of distresse for Leyes to Walton Church and brought to tryall, w<sup>ch</sup> was donne accordingly. Whereupon the Church Leyes were recovered & the plate by ord<sup>r</sup> of the Court is restored at y<sup>e</sup> towne's charge." Suit for Distraint.

1658, Oct<sup>r</sup> 8<sup>th</sup>. "Concerning Church Leyes to be paid to Walton, that the Justices of the Peace shalbe spok with, and if they signe Warrants for the same to be paid, that then y<sup>e</sup> Balives for y<sup>e</sup> tyme being are to pay y<sup>e</sup> same." Church Leys.

1659, Jany 28, "To advise whether it be requisite to have a confirmacon of the makeing of this towne into a Parish by the Parliam<sup>t</sup>."

From these documents it appears that the Corporation

failed in their attempted resistance to the levies by the churchwardens of Walton ; that Mr. Formby's silver can had to be redeemed at the town's expense ; but that in their application to be constituted a separate parish they were successful. The Restoration, however, prevented this being carried out, and the borough had to wait forty years longer before shaking off its subservience to Walton.



## NATIONAL AND POLITICAL AFFAIRS.

---

There is very little in the records of a distinctly political character, but incidentally they throw considerable light on the operation of public measures in their incidence on local affairs.

During the reign of James I. the subsidies began to be felt Subsidies. as an oppressive grievance.

In 1620, the King having entered upon a disastrous contest on behalf of his son-in-law, the Count Palatine, who had been elected King of Bohemia, summoned a Parliament, to which Liverpool sent as its representatives Thomas May and William Johnson. In response to the King's urgent demands, the Parliament, on February 15th, 1621, granted two subsidies, 1621. each involving an assessment of 4s. in the pound on land, and 2s. 8d. on goods and chattels. Some difficulties arose as to the collection. The landowners wished to throw a portion of their burden on the occupiers and ratepayers. The following entry occurs :—

1621 April 23<sup>rd</sup> “M<sup>d</sup> at an Assemblie Edw<sup>d</sup> Moore Esq Maior of Liv'poole and Sherriffe of Lanc' &c,

“Wheras ther is a subsidye p'sently to be collected for the use of Resolution. King's Ma<sup>tie</sup>. It is concluded & agreed by this Assemblie y<sup>t</sup> if Mr John Crosse Esq, who is assessed to paye after the rate of iiij<sup>th</sup> lands, and Mr Raffe Secome who is lykewyse xl<sup>s</sup> in the subsidye booke for lands, doe not shew sufficient cause why the inh'tants of Liv'poole should be con- Apportionment. tributors w<sup>th</sup> them in the paim<sup>t</sup> of the said somes for their lands upon Friday next; That then the said Mr Crosse and Mr Secome are to answare for their owne lands, accordinge to the p'portion as they are assessed by the comissioners of the subsidye.

“Upon Fryday following beinge the xxvij<sup>th</sup> of this instant Aprill, the said Maior &c assembled in the Comon halle of Liv'poole. Att the

1621. Exemptions. instante request of the abovenamed Mr Crosse and Mr Secome, it was agreed & consented unto by the whole Assemblie y<sup>t</sup> the p<sup>t</sup>e of subsidy upon them imposed for lands shall for this one tyme & for this only subsidy, be collected amongst the inh'tants of Liv'poole as it hath bene form'ly used, and this to be noe p'cedent or matter p'judiciall hereafter unto the said towne. And y<sup>t</sup> if the said Mr Crosse & Mr Secome doe not hereafter shew sufficient cause unto the Maior of Liv'poole & Comon Councell of this towne for the tyme beinge that they are to be assessed for their lands w<sup>th</sup> the towne, and not of themselves; that then they are to pay their subsidy for their lands of themselves & neither of them to give informacon unto the Comissioners of the subsidy hereafter against any the inh'tants of Liv'poole to put them into the subsidy book, otherwise then for easinge themselves of ther paim<sup>ts</sup> for lands."

Assessment.

"A tax of y<sup>e</sup> first paym<sup>t</sup> of the seacond subsidy granted 18<sup>o</sup> Jac. 1621.

|                              |                                     |        |                                    |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------------|--------|------------------------------------|
| " John Crosse gent. in Lands | iiij <sup>li</sup> value,           | payeth | x <sup>s</sup> viij <sup>d</sup>   |
| " Raph Seacom gent in Lands  | xl <sup>s</sup> value               | „      | v <sup>s</sup> iiij <sup>d</sup>   |
| " Edmund Rose in goods       | vj <sup>li</sup> value              | „      | x <sup>s</sup>                     |
| " William Bannester in goods | ii <sup>j</sup> <sup>li</sup> value | „      | v <sup>s</sup>                     |
| " Richard Rose in goods      | ii <sup>j</sup> <sup>li</sup> value | „      | v <sup>s</sup>                     |
| " Thomas Hockenhull in goods | v <sup>li</sup> value               | „      | vij <sup>s</sup> iiij <sup>d</sup> |
| " Richard Melling in goods   | ii <sup>j</sup> <sup>li</sup> value | „      | v <sup>s</sup>                     |

"This is two thirds of one subsidy."

Enforcement. "1621, Sept 24<sup>th</sup> M<sup>d</sup> y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>t</sup> day at an Assemblie before Edward Moore Esq Maior &c, it was then concluded and agreed y<sup>t</sup> the former orders concernynge Mr Jno Crosse and Mr Raffe Secome entred the xxiiij<sup>th</sup> of Aprill last, aboute the subsidie shall stand, and is by this assemblie ratified. So y<sup>t</sup> at this tyme they are to pay their subsidy accordinge to their form' orders. In respect they have shewed no cause to the howse this day wherby they should be freed and not pay w<sup>th</sup> the towne. And this was agreed unto by all the Assemblie, only Mr Secome did dissent therunto."

Some influence appears to have been used to vary this order, for we find an entry:—

1624, July 9<sup>th</sup> "Y<sup>t</sup> is ordered in the Comon hall of Liv'poole before John Williamson Maior, the Ballives (and others) Notwithstandinge an order made in the said Comon hall the 27<sup>th</sup> of Aprill 1621, Edw<sup>d</sup> Moore then Maior of Liv'poole that although John Crosse Esq, Raph Secome (and others) bee named (contributors) as well for lands as goods for ev'y whole subsidy, yet nevertheles y<sup>t</sup> it be ordered that the same shalbee payed by waie of Assessm<sup>t</sup> taxe, and collected by the Corporacon or Borrowe afore-said in such and the same manner as hath beene assessed, taxed and collected, anie thinge in the said ord' menconed or contained in anie wise not-with-standing."

Assessment.



1624, Nov<sup>r</sup> 26<sup>th</sup> "At an Assemblie &c Concerninge a Subsidie presently levied in this towne, it is by the whole consent of the house afore-said, agreed upon, that the said subsidie now to be levied, together with the oxe money, and the money for the house of correction, are to be assessed by the foure Marchant praysters for the tyme beinge."

Merchant  
Praysors.

After the dissolution of King Charles's second Parliament, in 1626, a general loan was attempted to be exacted, and Commissioners were sent round the country to enforce the levy.

1626.  
General Loan.

The following is the return for Liverpool :—

"Loane money to be lent unto his Ma<sup>ty</sup> 17 Apr 3 Car. 1627

|                                  |                    |                                                      |
|----------------------------------|--------------------|------------------------------------------------------|
| "John Crosse Esq in lands        | iiij <sup>li</sup> | iiij <sup>li</sup>                                   |
| "Raph Seacom, Gent in lands      | xl <sup>s</sup>    | xl <sup>s</sup>                                      |
| "Edmund Rose gent in goods       | vj <sup>li</sup>   | iiij <sup>li</sup>                                   |
| "William Bannester gent in goods | v <sup>li</sup>    | iiij <sup>li</sup> vi <sup>s</sup> viij <sup>d</sup> |
| "Richard Rose gent. in goods     | v <sup>li</sup>    | iiij <sup>li</sup> vi <sup>s</sup> viij <sup>d</sup> |
| "John Williamson gent in goods   | iiij <sup>li</sup> | liij <sup>s</sup> iiij <sup>d</sup> ."               |

Other lists are given of a similar character.

In 1629, the last subsidy was granted by Parliament previous to the interval of eleven years before the Long Parliament was summoned. The following entry relates to this :—

1629.  
Last Subsidy.

"1629 April 13<sup>th</sup> Y<sup>t</sup> is ordered and agreed y there shalbee a lay layd Ley. for nyne subsidies nowe past and one subsidy more, w<sup>ch</sup> is hereafter p'sently to bee paid upon the wholle towne, and shalbee taxed upon ev' Inhabitant at the discrecon of the m'chant prais<sup>rs</sup>, and y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> same shalbee gathered accordinge to the Lawe, and ansyent custome of this towne."

In 1634, the memorable levy of ship-money took place. Humphrey Chetham (the founder of the Chetham Hospital and Library) was at this time High Sheriff of Lancashire, to whom the writ for the collection within the county was directed. Some memoranda of his are extant on the writ. He observes :—

1634.  
Ship Money.  
Humphrey  
Chetham.

"If you shall tax & assesse men according (to) their estate, then Liverpoole being poore, and now goes as it were a beginge, must pay very little ; letters patent are now forth for the same towne."

Assessors.

The assessors were, besides the Sheriff, Robt. Williamson, Mayor of Liverpool, and Robert Thompson, Mayor of Lancaster. The whole county was assessed at £475, of which Liverpool was required to pay £15. The greater part of the

Refusals.

inhabitants grumbled and paid, but some refused, and threatened to resist by force of law. The Mayor reported this to the Corporation in Common Hall assembled, as follows :—

Resolution of Council.

“ That whereas, by virtue of his writ for levying of a certain sum of money towards the erecting and furnishing a ship of 400 tons for his majesty's service, the said Mr Mayor with the assent of the aldermen and others of the same town, hath assessed and imposed a competent sum of money for that purpose upon several inhabitants and others within the precinct aforesaid, and for that purpose hath directed several warrants to the bailiffs and other officers of this town for the levying and collecting the several sums upon the several parties assessed upon them, and that several of the parties aforesaid do refuse to pay the moneys imposed upon them, or suffer distress against them, but doth menace the said bailiffs with suit if they levy the same; it is therefore ordered and concluded by the house aforesaid, that if any suit or trouble be brought against the said Mayor or any other officer, by executing his warrant, that defence thereof shall be made at the general cost of the whole town, as well for the fees and charges in suit as other necessary charges in going or riding about.”

From this there were two dissentients, John Moore, Esq., and Edward Nicholson.

In order to stimulate the flagging zeal of his subjects, the following proclamation was issued by the Crown :—

“ After our hartie commendacions by his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Writt herew<sup>th</sup> all sente unto you, you shall p<sup>r</sup>ceive the importance of the service and what is the chardge and truste by his Ma<sup>ty</sup>e comitted unto you therein, w<sup>ch</sup> course as it is grownded and warranted upon p<sup>r</sup>sidents of former kings and the lawes of the realme (his Ma<sup>ty</sup>e in his royall wisdome haveinge in this weighty affaire consulted w<sup>th</sup> both) soe the consequence and good issue thereof being noe lesse than the honno<sup>r</sup> and safty both of the kinge and kingdome, and the serveinge and clearinge of commerce and trade, to the inrichinge and benefitt of the subjecte in generall, his Ma<sup>ty</sup>e doth expecte and require at yo<sup>r</sup> handes yo<sup>r</sup> uttermoste dilligence and endevo<sup>rs</sup> therein; and in p<sup>r</sup>ticular that for the better and more effectual execucon thereof, you forthw<sup>th</sup> conferr w<sup>th</sup> those others nominated in his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s said writt, and by mutuall assente appoynte an indifferente place of meeteinge; and goe

on w<sup>th</sup> the worke accordinge to the tenno<sup>r</sup> of the Writt. And that in the assessmente, you take care to proceede w<sup>th</sup> that expedicon, equality, and indifferencie, as may give life and encouragement to the service. Whereof his Ma<sup>tie</sup> and this Board expecte a good and speedy accompte from you, whereof you may not faile. And soe wee bid you hartily farewell.

“ From Whitehall the last of October 1634.

“ Rec<sup>d</sup> the 23<sup>rd</sup> November 1634.

“ W. CANT.”<sup>1</sup>

A fresh demand and assessment was made in August, 1635, to which the following entry relates :—

1635.

1635, Sept. 18th. “ It is this day agreed upon and ordered by John <sup>Levy by</sup> More<sup>2</sup> Esquire Maior, the Ballives (and others of the Council) That a <sup>Sheriff.</sup> Lay of xxx<sup>li</sup> shalbee laide w<sup>th</sup>in this Corporacon of Liv’poo<sup>l</sup> and p’sently assessed and paide accordinge to an agreement made at Manchester by the High Sheriffe and the reste of the Com<sup>rs</sup>. And that the said Laye shalbee layed and assessed by the Maior, Aldermen & M’chante prays<sup>rs</sup> or the greatest p’t<sup>e</sup> thereof, whereof the said Maior shalbee one and of the Quorum, and hee to have the castinge voyce. And that the same shalbee levied after such assessments by the Ballives of this towne p’porconably, and paid to the said Mr Maior att or before the eighte day of October nexte, to the intente hee may pay it ov<sup>r</sup> to the said high sheriffe accordinge to his Writt.”

The Roundhead party had now acquired the ascendancy, as evidenced by the election of John Moore as Mayor, and <sup>John Moore,</sup> subsequently as member, and there is reason to believe that <sup>Mayor.</sup> little or nothing was paid towards this levy.

There are several entries in the years 1635 and 1636 relating to “ layes and taxacons,” and enacting

“ that if any manner of freeman of this towne, tradinge in this towne, shall refuse to pay all such layes & taxacons, as amongst oth<sup>r</sup> the <sup>Penalty for</sup> burgesses and freemen of this towne, assessed by the m’chant prais<sup>rs</sup> of this towne, (he) shall p’ticularly pay the same upon demand of the Ballives this towne, or either of them for the tyme beinge, upon payne of forfeit for the first offence xl<sup>s</sup>, for the seacond offence fyve pounds, and for the third offence to loose his or their benefitt of his or their freedom.” <sup>non-payment.</sup>

Whether this relates to national or local taxation does not appear. The probability is that it was to the former.

<sup>1</sup> Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury.

<sup>2</sup> Subsequently Col. John Moore, the Regicide.

When the Parliament took the reins of Government at the close of the civil war, they laid a heavy hand on the country for supplies and contributions.

1648.  
Warrants for  
levy.

1648, June 1st. "A Warrant was red for 3000<sup>li</sup> Ley upon the whole Countie, taxed by the Sheriffe and Dep'tie Leiv<sup>ts</sup> and comittees of the Countie, the some of 720<sup>li</sup> upon this hund<sup>r</sup>, Liverpoole p'te being 13<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> required by the high Constable's warr<sup>t</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> Mr Jo. Williamson is required to goe treat with him ab<sup>t</sup> it."

1648, June 21st. "A Warr<sup>t</sup> for 600<sup>li</sup> taxed upon the hundred our p'te being xi<sup>li</sup> odd, (ordered not to be paid) for y<sup>e</sup> saftie of the countie assessed by the high Sheriffe & Comitte.

"Another Warr<sup>t</sup> from the high Constable for l<sup>s</sup> i<sup>d</sup> for the releefe of the poore infected in Ormskirk w<sup>ch</sup> is through the hundred."

1648 Decr 20<sup>th</sup> "Ordered that the xxx<sup>li</sup> Ley formerly ordred to bee assessed and collected bee forthwith assessed upon all p'sons according to ev'ie man's estate, and haveing; and for non paym<sup>t</sup> the Ballives to distraine'

Ley for  
Ireland.

"A Ley of 5<sup>li</sup> 1<sup>s</sup> 11<sup>d</sup> demanded by Warrant for the releefe of Ireland, ordred that it be left to Mr Maior to give answere, and to enquire if it be for the whole six months, or but for one moneth only, and if for all six, then to be paid forth of the xxx<sup>li</sup> tax imposed upon all freemen & forreners to be laid and collected as abovesaid."

1649.  
Petition  
against  
Assessment.

1649 Feby 1<sup>st</sup> "Ordered that one of the Ballives shall goe to Wigan, to p'ferr y<sup>e</sup> town's peti<sup>con</sup> concerning y<sup>e</sup> assessm<sup>t</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> Comission<sup>rs</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> Army, and shall take moneys to pay y<sup>e</sup> some required by Warrant. And afterwards 9<sup>th</sup> Febr. ordred that Mr Maior & such others as hee shall think fit, shall goe to Prescott to attend y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>rs</sup> to peti<sup>con</sup> at Ormskirk for redresse and abatem<sup>t</sup> of those assessm<sup>ts</sup>."

Monthly  
Assessment.  
Toxteth Park.

1649 Feby 9<sup>th</sup> "An Order was p'cured from the Comissioners for raising the monethly assessm<sup>ts</sup> for the Army upon the Peti<sup>con</sup> of this town<sup>e</sup>, that the inhabitants of Toxteth Park shold p'porconably contribute with us in the said assessments, ev'ie one according to their haveing, as by the Ordinance of Parliam<sup>t</sup> is required; w<sup>ch</sup> order was sygned by S<sup>r</sup> Thomas Stanley and Coll. Egerton. In opposition to w<sup>ch</sup> order the Inh'tants of y<sup>e</sup> Park p'cured a 2<sup>nd</sup> Ord<sup>r</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> town<sup>e</sup> to mak good the grounds of their peti<sup>con</sup> & ord<sup>r</sup> by prooffes, and further to satisfie the Com<sup>rs</sup> concerning the same, and to shew cause the 20<sup>th</sup> March instant. Whereupon this Assembly resolved to mak good the said Ord<sup>r</sup> granted at Ormskirk, it being obtained as is conceaved on good grounds. It is therefore ordred that Mr Maior Mr Walker, Mr Winstanley and Rob<sup>t</sup> Lurting, and soe many more of the town<sup>e</sup>'s as shalbe needfull shall goe to Prescott to attend the said Comissioners and to give them satisfacon in whatsoever can be alledged ag<sup>t</sup> it. (Who went to Prescott where the said Ord<sup>r</sup> was ov'rul<sup>d</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>rs</sup>.)"

Disputes.



An attempt at the imposition of an income-tax met with considerable opposition. 1649.  
Income-tax  
objected to.

1649 July 2<sup>nd</sup> "A Warrant from the Com<sup>rs</sup> of the Army being red, requiring a retorne of y<sup>e</sup> yearly vallue of everie man's reall & p'sonall estate within the towne. It is conceaved very p'judiciall & unreasonable, and therefore resolved, that Mr Ballive Storie shall attend y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>rs</sup>, and acquaint them, that the best sort have their estates in shipping, w<sup>ch</sup> is a daily adventure & hazard, the rest are plundered & poore."

1650 Jan'y 30<sup>th</sup> "Assessm<sup>ts</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> Army.

"Upon reading of a Warrant from the high Constables for 3 monethe's Assessm<sup>ts</sup> beginning the 25<sup>th</sup> Decemb<sup>r</sup> 1649, for 1200 pounds p<sup>r</sup> mensem in Derby hundred, Wherof Liverpoole p'porcon to pay 17<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 7<sup>d</sup> p<sup>r</sup> mens. for y<sup>e</sup> Army. It was resolved to, y<sup>e</sup> same shold be forthwith assessed and collected for the purpose aforesaid." 1650.  
Levies for  
Army.

1650 April 2<sup>nd</sup> "Upon readeing of a Warrant from the High Constable for paym<sup>t</sup> of the some of xi<sup>li</sup> xi<sup>s</sup> i<sup>d</sup> charged upon this towne towards the paym<sup>t</sup> of 9000<sup>li</sup> p<sup>r</sup> mensem for maintenance of y<sup>e</sup> Army in England and Ireland, due for 3 monethes assessm<sup>ts</sup> begining the 5 of March 1650. It was ordered by this Assembly that a Ley of 12<sup>li</sup> shalbe laid throughout the towne p'porconably for the satisfieing of the monthly assessm<sup>ts</sup> above menconed."

1651 May 12<sup>th</sup> James Williamson gen. Maior. "This day upon readeing a Warrant from the high Constable for the some of 12,000<sup>li</sup> assessm<sup>t</sup> charged upon England & Walles for the maintenance of the forces raised by authoritie of Parliam<sup>t</sup> for 6 monethes to begin the 25<sup>th</sup> of March last, of w<sup>ch</sup> said some 1600<sup>li</sup> p<sup>r</sup> mensem is charged upon the Countie of Lancaster, of w<sup>ch</sup> last menconed some there is 42<sup>li</sup> 13<sup>s</sup> 7<sup>d</sup> charged upon this towne to be payd at 3 paym<sup>ts</sup> in May, July & September next unto Mr John Sorrocold apoynted Receavo<sup>r</sup> & Tre<sup>r</sup>. It is therefore ord<sup>r</sup>ed that the M<sup>c</sup>chant prayso<sup>r</sup>s of this towne shall forthwith asse<sup>s</sup>se and p'porcon the said some in an equall & p'porconable way, according to the Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup> and the custom of this Borrowe." 1651.

The town might say with justice that in the matter of taxation, if King Charles chastised them with whips, the Parliament chastised them with scorpions. They evidently winced under it, and occasionally remonstrated.

1655 Jan'y 1<sup>st</sup> "It is ord<sup>r</sup>ed that Mr Alex<sup>r</sup> Greene and Mr Winstanley shall goe to Chester to peticon the Major Generall concerning this towne being oppressed and surcharged in the monthly assessm<sup>ts</sup> &c." 1655.  
Petition  
against  
Assessment

No further entry of this kind occurs until the Restoration.

"1662 Octr 28<sup>th</sup> A Warrant for 3 moneths Assessm<sup>t</sup> for the raising of Last Levy. 1662.

932<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> for 233<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup> þ Countie and 4<sup>li</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 5<sup>d</sup> ob in this towne for one month beginning x<sup>th</sup> July 1661."

Incidental notices of public affairs occur in these records. In 1624, reinforcements had to be sent to the English army in Ireland. The troops were sent through Liverpool, and the following requisition was issued by the Crown :—

Requisition  
for transport.

"After o<sup>r</sup> hartie comendacons. Whereas certen leavies of souldiers to the number of 550 are directed to make their rendezvous at the Port of Liv'poole by the xx<sup>th</sup> of March next, and their to be imbarqued and transported to the port of Carekfergus in Ireland.

"Theis are to will and require you by the tyme aforesaid to p'vide a sufficient number of shippes and quantity of victuall for that service at the rate of ii<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup> a man for transportation, and ij<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup> for victualls. And in case the said leavies shall, by contrary wyndes or other accidents be forced to make stay at the said port, you are lykewyse hereby required to victuall them at the rate of 8<sup>d</sup> a man þ diem from the foresaid 20<sup>th</sup> of March dureinge their abode ther. And wheras ther are certen provisions of Armes and Apparell directed to that part to be their by or before the said xx<sup>th</sup> of March, and from thence to be transported for the port of Carekfargues at prices reasonable of such able mariners as may be answerable for the deliv'ie of the said Armes and Apparrell to the port aforesaid, for all which disbursements by you to be made as aforesaid; upon certificate thereof to the Councell of warr you shalbe repaid the same from the trea'ars of the subsidy moneys here. And wee soe bid you hartely farewell.

"From Whyte hall the 18<sup>th</sup> of February 1624

"Yo<sup>r</sup> loving frends

"GEORGE CANT<sup>1</sup>

"JO. LYNOLNE<sup>2</sup>

"LA, WYNTON<sup>3</sup>

"JULIUS CÆSAR

"with others of the

"Privy Council."

Soldiers.

1625, October 10th. A list is given of trained soldiers within the town, with their names. They comprise 10 Muscatieres and 10 Corslets.

1639. On the Scotch rising and the King's march northward, an embargo was laid on all Scotch shipping by the following order :—

<sup>1</sup> George Abbot, Archbishop of Canterbury.

<sup>2</sup> Bishop of Lincoln.

<sup>3</sup> Bishop of Winchester.

“ S<sup>r</sup> James Stanley of the hob<sup>le</sup> order of the Bathe, Knight, Lord Strange Vice admirall of the Counties Pallantyne of Lancaster and Chester, To the Maior, Baylives, Burgesses, Custom<sup>rs</sup> and all other officers of the Burroughe or Heaven of Liverpoole and liberties thereof Greeting. Accordinge to such comand as I have receved from the signification of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> exp<sup>se</sup> pleasure moved by some important reasons of state. These are to will and require you and everie of you and never the lesse to charge and comand you and everie of you that immediatly upon receipte hereof you arest on his Ma<sup>ties</sup> behalf, and cause to bee stayed all Scottch shippinge & vessells of what burthen soever that nowe is or shall happen to come w<sup>th</sup>in or into yo<sup>r</sup> port, heaven, or creeke & liberties thereof, and also all such goods as are in them and everie of them and them safely to keepe until you have certifyed mee, and further untill his Ma<sup>ties</sup> pleasure therein be knowne for their discharge from the Lord Admirall or otherwyse, as I am therein specially directed. 1639. Embargo on Shipping.

“ Faile not herein as you tend<sup>t</sup> his Ma<sup>ties</sup> service and will answer the contrary att yo<sup>r</sup> p<sup>ills</sup>. Requisition.

“ Given under my hand and seale this sixte day of Aprill 1639.

“ J. STRANGE.”

The response is as follows :—

“ 1639 April 8<sup>th</sup> John Williamson gen. Maior

“ According to yo<sup>r</sup> honor’s warrant to us directed, wee have stayed Reply. severall Vessells or Barques w<sup>th</sup>in the porte of Liverpoole belonging to severall Scotchmen, as also dyvers of their goods being in the same barques. The names and s<sup>n</sup>ames of the owners or masters of the s<sup>d</sup> Barques, together w<sup>th</sup> the names of the severall barques, the severall burthens of the same vessells and p<sup>t</sup>icular goods by us stayed by vertue of yo<sup>r</sup> hono<sup>rs</sup> comand and warrant, are at large expressed and sett downe in the schedule indented hereunto annexed.

“ Subscribed w<sup>th</sup> our names all w<sup>ch</sup> wee thought good to signifie unto yo<sup>r</sup> noble honors and so leave the considera<sup>co</sup>n thereof to yo<sup>r</sup> wisdom. And w<sup>th</sup> our humble duties p<sup>se</sup>nted Rest

“ Yo<sup>r</sup> honor still to comand

“ Liverpoole this 8

(Names wanting).

“ of Aprill 1639.”

“ A schedull indented shewing the p<sup>t</sup>icular barques & goods belong- inge to dyvers Scotchmen, stayed by the Maior & other officers w<sup>th</sup>in the porte of Liverpoole in the Countie of Lancaster by virtue of a warrant to us directed from the right hob<sup>le</sup> the Lord Strange, Vice Admirall w<sup>th</sup>in the Counties Palatine of Lanc.’ & Chester, as followeth. Schedule of Ships.

“ One barque called the Robert of Farley in Scotland; Rob<sup>t</sup> Black- borne Own<sup>r</sup> & M<sup>r</sup>; burthen 20 tons; hath aboard 20 tons of coales, 8 quoyles of small rops, 5 sayles, 3 musketts 2 swords. The Robert.

“ The New Yea<sup>r</sup>e’s Guift, of the Larggs in Scotland, Thos Kile own<sup>r</sup> & The New Year’s Guift.

in his absence John Wilson purser, Edmund Mark, Will<sup>m</sup> Mar<sup>r</sup> burd. 40 tonns; had 4 muskets, 2 swords 7 sayles, 2 compasses & in these barques of the goods of Will<sup>m</sup> Birtsh a Scotchman m<sup>c</sup>chant, inhabitinge in Ireland as hee reports; 9 pack or small p<sup>c</sup>ells of yarne, 5 baggs of Wooll, 45 hides and about 2c wal of hemp.

The Gift of  
God.

“The Gifte of God, of Farley in Scotland, burd 20 tonnes, John Crayford own<sup>r</sup> and Mas<sup>r</sup>. Hath 30 tonnes of coales, a mainsaile, a maintopsaile a foresaile, 5 chists, 2 swords and one muskett.

The Blessing.

“The Blessing, of the Larggs in Scotland, burd 20 tonns John Wilson own<sup>r</sup> and mast<sup>r</sup>, w<sup>ch</sup> said barque brought into this porte Irish m<sup>c</sup>chants goods; had aboard her 4 sailes, 2 chests, one pott, one quoyle of ropes, two compasses, one sounding lead & one barrell of meale.

The Content.

“The Content, of Dunnagadee in the kingdome of Irel<sup>nd</sup>e Will<sup>m</sup> Mas<sup>r</sup> John Scott own<sup>r</sup>, who inhabiteth in Ireland as hee saith, but the said barque carrieth Scotch colours; burd. 24 tons; hath aboard the s<sup>d</sup> barque one mainsaile one foresaile one fore top sayle, and one maintopsaile, 3 small chests 3 musketts 2 compasses; the s<sup>d</sup> barque brought hither Englishmen's goods.

The  
Providence.

“The Providence of Strangford in Ireland, John Ore a Scotchman own<sup>r</sup> and mas<sup>r</sup>, who inhabiteth in Ireland as he saith burd. 30 tonns, harth aboard her, 24 tonns coales, 6 chests, 4 sayles, one short sword, one barrell of herrings, one mainsaile xj small quoyles of ropes.

“JOHN WILLIAMSON Maior

“(5 others).”

Order for  
Release.

After the pacification with the Scots at Dunse Law, an order came for the release of the vessels as follows, addressed to Lord Strange:—

“Charles R (Signed)

“Right trustie and right wellbeloved Cosen &c.

“Whereas by vertue of a Warrant directed to you from our High Admirall of England, theare have beene areasted in our port of Liverpoole certaine Scottishe barques, wheareof as wee are informed, the maisters and owners though Scotchmen are our subjects in Ireland or trade for the most parte theire, wee therefore are graciously pleased and doe hereby will and require you to take order that they testifyinge theire fidelitie by takinge the oath of Alleagance and Supremicie, theire said barques, whereof wee send you hearinclosed the list, w<sup>th</sup> theire goods and men be released att libertie, and for so doinge this shalbee yo<sup>r</sup> warrant, anie order to the contrarie notw<sup>th</sup>standinge.

“Given under our Signett at our Mannor at Yorke the 20<sup>th</sup> daye of Aprill in the fifteenth year of our reign 1639.

“This is a true Copie of his Ma<sup>ties</sup>

“letter written to the Lord Strange.

“G. R. WIKERLINE.”



"A Trewe Coppie of the right hon<sup>ble</sup>

"James Lord Strange his l're.

1639.  
Order from  
Lord Strange

"My pleasure is that you repayre to Liverpoole and lett Mr Maior and the officers of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Custome house know I am willing, that the Scotch Barks in that port may bee allowed to bring downe theire barks afloat before the springe tyde bee past; And that they may bee released soe sone as I am satisfied that they are that bee owners of them eyther subjects to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> of Ireland; or such as trade for the most p'te thence. As his Ma<sup>tie</sup> by his le'r<sup>s</sup> declareth that hee is informed, wherein I doubt not but Mr Maior and the officers of the Custome house can give mee satisfaccon whether the informaccon soe given to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> bee true, w<sup>ch</sup> I desire.

"Knowsley 27<sup>th</sup> Apr. 1639.

"To my servant Thomas Morris."

The following also was sent to the Mayor under the same date:—

"You shall also lett the Maior and Officers of the Custome house knowe I am willinge and doe allowe that the own' and m'chants of the said barkes may in the mean tyme make sale of such goods as they have unsould. And when I shall have certificate of the true informacon given to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> I am well pleased the Barks shall be set at libertie forasmuch as I am sertified by you the 6 shippes stayed in yo<sup>r</sup> porte of Liverpoole, the owners of them are eyther dwellinge in Ireland or such as shall usuallie doe traide thence, and have taken the oath of Alleagance and Supremicie, my pleasure is you restore unto them theire furnitures and goods, and suffer them to departe. Permission to sell.

"JAMES STRANGE.

"To the Maior of Liverpoole

"and the Officers of his

"Ma<sup>ties</sup> Customes theare."



## MANNERS AND CUSTOMS.

---

There is comparatively little difference in the general habits, described and inferred, between this period and that indicated in the last chapter. Society was not progressive from the reign of Elizabeth down to the time of the civil war, when a vast change was initiated.

Inmacks.

The continued harbouring of "Inmacks" seems to have been a constant source of annoyance to the worthy burgesses.

Unchaste  
Women.

"1610 Octr 25<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot &c  
"Item, we p'sent Futchet Bold gent. for keepinge an unchaste woman in his house xxvj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>."

1611, October 24<sup>th</sup>. At a Port Moot Inquisition—

"Item, wee p'sent Will'm Scaresbrick for keeping of an Inmate 11<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>."

1612 June 29<sup>th</sup> "Wee p'sent Richard Robinson for keepinge Inmats havinge ben warned to the contrarie, beinge strang's and verie poore people."

"Item Thurstan Woodward for keping Marie Leech an inmate, beinge comanded to the contrarie and she fitt for s<sup>r</sup>vice."

"Item, Thom<sup>s</sup> Stringer for lodging an unchaste woman beinge called Marie Hulme."

1623, Jany 13<sup>th</sup> "We doe agree, That any housekeeper in this towne whosoever, that hath anie strange woman in his house beinge w<sup>th</sup> child, that they shall forthw<sup>th</sup> upon payne of there fyne cleare there howses from them."

Lewd  
persons.

"We doe all lykewyse agree that the reste of the *lewd*<sup>1</sup> p'sons not haveinge there frends in towne, nor that any man knoweth how they are releevd, together w<sup>th</sup> all the rest of the boyes & wenches newly come, shall lykewye avoyd."

1626 Octr 26 "Item wee p'sent the executors or administrators of Elizabeth Ditchfeild deceased, for harboringe of Inmacks in their back-side in their kitchin, contrary to the orders of the towne."

<sup>1</sup> *Lewd* here does not mean licentious, but ignorant, rude. "Lered and lewed," "Clergy and laity," taught and untaught.

1650, June 18<sup>th</sup> "Ordered by the Assembly that on Fryday next Mr Maier & the p'sons und<sup>r</sup> written shall passe throughout the towne accompanied with the Ald<sup>r</sup>men to enquire and take notice of all such Inmakes as are or are lyk to be p<sup>r</sup>judiciall to y<sup>e</sup> towne. 1650.  
Inspectors.

"Edw. Chambers & Roger Jones for the Water Streete

"Thomas Williamson and Thomas Andoe Chappell Streete

"John Chantrell & Richard Williamson Castle Streete

"Edward Alcock for . . . Juglars Streete

"W<sup>ch</sup> was donne accordingly and their names p<sup>r</sup>sented and their landlords fyned."

The "Cuck Stool,"<sup>1</sup> as a punishment for scolds, is several Cuck Stool. times referred to.

"1637, July 3rd. At a Port Moot & Frank Pledge &c

"Item. Wee doe order that a 'Cooke Stoole' shalbe made betwixt this and Michaelmas next."

1657 Nov 2<sup>nd</sup> "Ord<sup>r</sup>ed that a new Cook Stoole be made and erected at the Wattering poole, at the lower end of Mr. Crosse's feilds."<sup>2</sup>

1659 Jan<sup>y</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> "Wee order that a new Cooke Stoole bee made and erected at the Wattering poole at Mr Crosse's feild end, before the last day of Feb<sup>r</sup> next on paine of xx<sup>s</sup> to be paid by the p<sup>r</sup>sent Ballives."

The etiquette and rules of precedence of the ladies was a Rules of  
Precedence. subject of grave consideration and inquiry.

1614, November 7th. An Assembly was held in the Common Hall before Richard Mellinge, gent., Mayor, Edward Moore and Richard Crosse, Esquires, four aldermen, one of the bailiffs, and a number of the free burgesses, whose names are given,

"for decydinge of a Cause in Controv<sup>s</sup>ie betweene Mr Raffe Seacome and Mr Darbie, w<sup>ch</sup> was, Whether of their wyves shuld take place of the other. Whereupon upon the readinge and consyderinge of a form<sup>r</sup> order made at an Assemblie in the said Comon halle the tenth day of Decemb<sup>r</sup> in the thirtie<sup>th</sup> yere of o<sup>r</sup> late Sov<sup>r</sup>eryne lady Queene Elizabeth then set downe and agreed upon, for the placinge and orderinge of the wyves of the Aldermen & Bayliffs of this towne, w<sup>ch</sup> said order was by the whole Assemblie abovesaid confirmed and allowed of to be in force and good, And for y<sup>t</sup> Mr Darbie did then alledge y<sup>t</sup> his wyfe was formerly Seacome and  
Darbie.

<sup>1</sup> This consisted of a long beam poised upon a post in the middle, placed on the margin of a stream. A chair was suspended at one end, in which the culprit was secured, and let down under water three times successively, and then taken out.

<sup>2</sup> This would be about the lower end of Crosshall Street, abutting on Whitechapel, then a running stream.

wyfe unto one Mr Dixon deceased, who was an alderman and had ben Maior of this towne and Auntcyent unto Mr Seacome (w<sup>ch</sup> was well knowne to be true unto this Assemblie) and for y<sup>t</sup> reason y<sup>t</sup> she ought to have the place before Mrs Seacome; Therefore it is this day ordered and agreed by this said Assemblie (only Mr Edward Moore and Mr Richarde Moore dissentinge) y<sup>t</sup> Mrs Darbie shall take her place as wyfe unto Mr Dixon (according to the true intent and meaninge of the said former order, as it is nowe conceived and thought to be good by this Assemblie) who was Auntcyent unto Mr Seacome. And that this order do stand in force, as form<sup>r</sup> orders heretofore made by Assemblies in lyke man<sup>r</sup> have done.

“RICHARD MELLINGE Maior  
“(and others).”

Although Mrs Darbie came off victorious in this conflict of precedency, she had subjected herself to rebuke on a previous occasion.

1612, June 29<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot Jury. “Item, wee p<sup>r</sup>sent Mrs Darbie for refusinge to come before Mr Maior’s deputie, being div<sup>s</sup> tymes sent for by th<sup>r</sup> offic<sup>s</sup>.”

In the margin is the following entry :—

“Note good reader, that this refusall was for that it was the Saboth daye, she came the Monday morninge, but was not respected.”

Etiquette was also enjoined on the dignitaries of the borough.

1630, March 10<sup>th</sup> “John Williamson Maior.

Gowns to be  
worn.

“Whereas y<sup>t</sup> was form<sup>ly</sup> ordered viz the twelfth day of Jany 1628 by a Jury of seaventeene men at a Sessions of the peace held before John Walker gent, then Maior, That the Ballives peeres should weare their gownes to the Church ev<sup>y</sup> Sabbath Day, and w<sup>ch</sup> order was afterwards confirmed by an Assembly. It is this day further confirmed and ordered that the said Ballives peeres shall were their gownes to Church ev<sup>y</sup> Sabbath day both before noone and after, upon payne of such fyne as is form<sup>ly</sup> in the said order menconed to bee inflicted upon such as make default.”

Sunday  
attendance.

1633, Nov 1<sup>st</sup> “Item it is agreed that the Ballive’s peares shall ev<sup>y</sup> Saboth day both forenoone and after attend Mr Maior from his howse to the Church and should home againe in their gownes, upon paine of vj<sup>d</sup> for ev<sup>y</sup> default, to bee levyed to the use of the pore of this towne.”

Fairs.

The time of the fair, St. Martin’s day, November 11<sup>th</sup>, and the week following, was a period of considerable festivity.



Down to the middle of the eighteenth century it was the custom, at the opening of the fair, for the Mayor, Aldermen and Councillors, with their ladies, to walk in procession, with a band of music, from the Town Hall along Dale Street, where they passed round a large stone in the pavement, thence round another similar stone in the middle of Castle Street (still existing), and back to the Town Hall, where they dined.

The payment for this banquet was the cause of some difference between the Mayor and Bailiffs.

1621, Octr 25<sup>th</sup> Oliv<sup>r</sup> Fairhurst gent, Maior. At an Assemblie &c. Banquet at the Fair.  
 "Whereas it is in question this day betweene Mr Maior that nowe is, and Richard Barraclough and John Chauntrell Bayliffs of the towne, concerninge the payinge for of the Bankett in the Towne hall at the faiers; It is this day agreed upon and p'ven y<sup>t</sup> if the Maior for the tyme beinge shall herafter at the two faier tymes, keepe his bankett in the Comon Hall, then the Bayliffs are to beare the one half of it, and soe to contribute betwixt them w<sup>th</sup> Mr Maior."

Slandering the Mayor and Aldermen was severely punished.

1629 Octr 29 Rob<sup>t</sup> Williamson gen. Maior. Sessio pacis.

"Item, wee p'sent Will'm Bryanson for sayinge, it is ordinary to bee Slanderers  
 Maior and Ballives of this towne one yere, and Banckroupts the next yere punished.  
 after."

1630, July 15<sup>th</sup> At an Assembly &c "It was ordered and agreed upon, Nicolson  
 for that it appeared by a p'sentment, that Edw<sup>d</sup> Nicolson had by base fin.  
 speeches abused Mr Maior and all his officers, And for y<sup>t</sup> there was noe  
 ancient order set downe for the fineinge of any for abuseinge the s<sup>d</sup> Mr  
 Maior, It was therefore ordered and agreed upon by the wholle Assembly  
 that for y<sup>t</sup> offence the said Nicolson should pay for his fine five pounds.  
 And that for ev' hereafter whosoever shall offend in the like, viz<sup>t</sup> to abuse  
 or disgrace, any Maior for the time beinge, by any words or deeds, and  
 bee thereof lawfully convicted, shall forfeit and bee fined at v<sup>h</sup> for ev'y  
 offence o'v' and above such imprisonm<sup>t</sup> as the said Maior shall inflict  
 upon any such offender."

1630, Feby 3<sup>rd</sup> John Williamson gen. Maior.

"At an Assembly &c Y<sup>t</sup> was ordered and concluded upon, that Valentine  
 whereas Mr Valentine hath abused Mr Maior now beinge, and the other prosecuted.  
 gent<sup>n</sup> form'ly Maiors of this towne, for w<sup>ch</sup> Mr Maior is resolved to bind  
 him before the Judge of Assizes to answer his contempt; That the  
 wholle towne shalbee att and beare the chardge of p'secutinge the lawe  
 against him, and that the same shalbee taken out of the townstock."

1650 Nov 4<sup>th</sup> James Williamson gen. Maior.

At a Port Moot &c "Wee p'sent John Lurting<sup>1</sup> for abusing Mr Presentments.  
 Thomas Tarleton<sup>2</sup> Ald' in calleing him a cheating rogue."

<sup>1</sup> John Lurting was Bailiff in 1653.

<sup>2</sup> Thomas Tarleton was Mayor in 1647-8.

"Item, wee p'sent Rob't Sympson for abusing Ball' John Higinson, a Bailivee's Peere of this Burrow in saying in open Markett, hee was an idle fellow, and blamed this towne for electing him Baylive—amerced in ij<sup>s</sup>, vj<sup>d</sup>."

Mee. 1651, Mar 31<sup>st</sup> At a Port Moot, &c "Wee p'sent Will<sup>m</sup> Mee of the Lowe, butcher, for that the said Will<sup>m</sup> Mee did utter these words, vid<sup>te</sup> publicklie curse and say, in open Court, 'The Divell goe with you all,' pointing at the Jurie, 'and all your accōns'—amerced in xxxij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>."

"Item, Wee p'sent the said William Mee for saying and curseing in open Court, pointing his finger towards Mr Maior and the Jurie, 'If such men as those can give anie judgment, the Divell goe with you, and all the acts that you have done.' Amerced in v<sup>li</sup>."

Massam. 1639 July 22<sup>nd</sup> Jno Williamson gen. Maior. At a Port Moot Jury. "Item, we present Raph Massam<sup>1</sup> for not attendinge Mr Maior att Midsom' accordinge to the use and custome of this towne, and for refusinge to continewe in his place in Church, accordinge to an order thereof made."

Prescott. "Item of George Presscott for abuseinge Mr Maior the 13<sup>th</sup> day of June last past in wishinge him hanged, and the first or second day of July last for useinge very opprobrious and base speeches sayinge a f—t for Mr Maior, the Aldermen and Baliffes and all the towne."

"Item of the same George Prescott, for the like speeches spoken before Mr Eccleston."<sup>2</sup>

Many of the Port Moot presentations are curious, and appear to be applicable to all sorts of things without restriction.

Port Moot presentments. 1624, Octr 25<sup>th</sup> Richard Rose gen. Maior At a Port Moot Jury &c. Rose. "Wee p'sent Richard Rose now Maior for keepinge his swyne unringed."

Brookbank. "We p'sent Thomas Brookbank<sup>3</sup> for givinge unreverend speeches unto Mester John Will'mson late Maior in the tyme of his Maioraltie."

Gardner. "We p'sent Hugh Gardn' for disclosinge the secretts of the Jurors at the last Cort of Passage, he beinge one of the Jury himselfe."

Houghton. 1629 Decr 2 "Wee p'sent Hugh Houghton for a tusle upon Mr Ballive Chantrell, and Mr Ballive Bixteth."

Ireland. 1638, Octr 22<sup>nd</sup> "Wee p'sent Emline Ireland, Jane Ireland and Elizabeth Ireland for tusling and scolding one uppon another on the Sabboth day."

Kenion. 1642, Jan. 10<sup>th</sup> "Wee p'sent Jane Ireland for beinge druncke, and curseing Henr' Anderton's daught' dyv<sup>ts</sup> markett dayes.

"Wee p' sent Richard Kenion for abuseing Mr Maior and saying, 'the devill raise him.'

Williamson. "Wee p'sent Margerie Williamson for curseing and wishing that Thomas Ayndoe<sup>4</sup> and his wife might have the same end that her husband had.

<sup>1</sup> Mayor in 1652.

<sup>2</sup> Mayor in 1637.

<sup>3</sup> Bailiff in 1626.

<sup>4</sup> Mayor in 1655.

"Wee p'sent Robt Lurting<sup>1</sup> for saying to Mr Baylie Wood 'It was Lurting. basely done of him.'

"Wee p'sent Mr John Mannwarring for abusing Mr Maior and the Mannwarring. Ballives, goeing upon the king's service.

"Wee p'sent the said Mr Mannwarring for abuseing and infringeing the lib'ties & privileges of this towne."

This Manwarring seems to have been a "*mauvais sujet*," for on the 27th of the following June we find his name again introduced.

"Wee p'sent John Manwarring<sup>j</sup> for tusle upon Thomas Sefton, amerced in iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>s</sup>d.

"Item wee p'sent the sd John Manwarring for calleing Ballive Wood rogue, and other opprobrious speeches, and for rescueing the body of Henry Haskaine from y<sup>e</sup> new Ballives when they wold have taken him before y<sup>e</sup> Maior.

"Item we p'sent John Manwarring for abuseing the fast, and saying these words, That if the king had comanded a fast hee wold then have kept it, but because a compane of puritanicall fellowes had appoynted it, hee wold keepe none, nor cared not a f—t for it, w<sup>th</sup> dyv<sup>rs</sup> other revyleing speeches and especially agt the minister.

"Wee p'sent Henry Robinson for disclosing the seacretts of this Robinson. towne."

Workmen, servants and apprentices were dealt with in a very harsh and summary manner. Workmen.  
Servants and  
Apprentices.

1616 Octr 31<sup>st</sup> "Wee doe agree that noe artifisser shall receive any journeyman to work before he make Mr Maior acquainted, if hee bee a stranger."

1611 Octr 21<sup>st</sup> "Wee doe agree that if any man's or woman's s<sup>v</sup>ants, jornemen, or app<sup>r</sup>entize, be taken walkinge abroad or drinkeinge or in any other idle occacon after ix o'clock at night, except it be about his said M<sup>rs</sup>, Mistres, or dame's busines, or of other lawfull occacons, he shall pay xii pence for ev'y such offence, or be imp<sup>'</sup>soned during Mr Maior's pleasure."

1630 Jan'y 11. "Wee p'sent Hugh Houghton for harbouringe mens servants and for keepeinge a suspected bawdy house."

1641 Octr 25<sup>th</sup> "Wee doe order that noe man's s<sup>v</sup>ant or prentice shalbe found walking in the streets aft' nyne of y<sup>e</sup> Clocke at night, unlesse upon his Master's busines."

There are repeated entries enforcing the regular ringing Curfew Bell. of the curfew bell.

<sup>1</sup> Bailiff in 1627.

1624, Octr 25<sup>th</sup> "We agree to have Corfewe runge according to former order."

1638, Octr 22<sup>nd</sup> "We agree that from this time Corphew shalbe rung as formerly."

1641 Octr 25<sup>th</sup> "Wee doe ord<sup>r</sup> that the Sexton shall ring curfew at 8<sup>t</sup> of the clocke at night, and 4<sup>r</sup> of clocke in the morning, from All Saints day till Candlemas next following, and to keepe dogs out of Church."

Bellman.

1629 Octr 25<sup>th</sup> "Wee agree to have a Bellman to goe about the towne at tenn of the clock at night and fouer in the morninge to give warninge to looke to there fires and lockeinge there dores, and acquainte them w<sup>th</sup> the wynd and wether, and that hee shall have the wages ev'y yere, that form'ly the Waite hath done."

Swineherd.

The swineherd was an important public functionary.

1612 Octr 18<sup>th</sup> At an Assembly &c "it was agreed that ther shalbe a comon Sweanheard for the keepinge of the swyne of the said towne."

1646, June 8<sup>th</sup> Thomas Blackmore gen. Maior.

Swine.

At an Assembly &c. "Whereas it is conceived and thought fitt that ther shalbe a Sheppard and a Swynheard be the keepinge of sheepe upon the Comon, and to looke to the swyne all the day long from trespassing about the towne, It is therefore ordred that John Boulton and William Johnson's sonne shall be Swinheards, and shall receave for ev'ie swyne of the owners thereof 4<sup>d</sup> a peece according to the numb<sup>r</sup> they constantly keepe, and to pay halfe their wages in hand. And whosoever shall wilfully or negligently oppose this order in not puting forth their swyne when y<sup>e</sup> horne blowes, shall forfait 4<sup>d</sup> for everie default, to be levied imediatly by the Ballives for the tyme being, to be employed for y<sup>e</sup> towne's uses, and this to continue everie yeare from the tyme of seedeing till the towne feild be inned."

Funerals.

With reference to funerals, the following order was adopted at the Port Moot :—

1617, Octr 30. "Wee doe agree that when it pleaseth God to call any neighbo<sup>r</sup> to his mercie, that ev'ie neighbo<sup>r</sup> dwellinge in the streete where the p'tie deceased did dwell that of ev'ie house one shall goe to accompany the Corpes to the Church, or els to pay vj<sup>d</sup>, to bee collected by the Maiors appointment."

Pastimes.

Mention is occasionally made of the pastimes of the period.

1628, June 30<sup>th</sup> "We p'sent John Wright for playinge at *Cailles* upon the Sabbath day at devine service time."

This seems to have been identical with the modern *quoits*.



Bows and arrows were still kept up as a national weapon. Archery.

1629, Octr 29 "Wee doe order that the Ballives nowe beinge shall cause one paire of Shooting Butts to be made in the most convenient place thought fitt betwixt this and this day fortnight."

1637, April 30<sup>th</sup> "Wee doe order that everie freeman within this towne shall provide bow and arrowes betweene this day and the first of August next."

1637, July 3<sup>rd</sup> "Wee doe order that the Shooteing Butts shalbe Shooting Butts. repayed at or before St James's day next."

We lament at the present day the prevalence of drunken- Alehouses. ness and the large number of public-houses, but the evil seems to have been much greater in the middle of the seventeenth century. From a presentment of 1646, April 20, there is enumerated a list of 65 unlicensed ale-houses, in a population of certainly not more than 3,000.



## CHAPTER IV.

### FROM THE RESTORATION TO THE END OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

---

Mediaeval  
Period.

16th Century.

THE period now entered upon was the turning point in the history of Liverpool. Up to this time the town had slumbered on for many ages, a petty resort of mediæval traffic, far away from the then centres of English manufactures in the eastern and south-western counties. The population of Lancashire was sparse and poor. The wars of the Roses, in the fifteenth century, had inflicted dire disaster on the district, and the troubles and agitation of the sixteenth century had brought the town to the lowest point of depression about the accession of Elizabeth. It must be said, however, that the worthy burgesses never lost heart. The records of the sixteenth century breathe a decidedly cheerful tone. The Corporation were always ready to stand up for their rights with true English courage and pluck. But the town and its population had not increased. The four streets radiating from the High Cross contained nearly all the inhabitants, who, at the beginning of the seventeenth century, could not have exceeded a thousand in number. They had been decimated by the plague several times in the course of the sixteenth century.

Revival.

That some revival took place in the first half of the seventeenth century is pretty certain, though we have no distinct evidence of it in the town's records.

East India  
Trade.

The commencement of trade with the East Indies, though no part of it reached Liverpool, could not but have the effect

of stimulating industry in general. The woollen manufactures began to develop largely in the West Riding. The textile fabrics of Manchester were pushing themselves into notice. Lewis Roberts, in "The Treasure of Traffic," published in 1641, says:—"The town of Manchester, in Lancashire, must be also remembered, and worthily, for their encouragement be commended, who buy the yarn of the Irish in great quantity, and weaving it, return the same again into Ireland to sell. Neither doth their industry rest here, for they buy cotton-wool in London that comes first from Cyprus and Smyrna, and at home work the same, and perfect it into fustians, vermillions, dimities, and other such stuffs, and then return it to London, where the same is vented and sold, and not seldom sent into foreign parts." The Irish portion of this trade, almost of necessity, passed through Liverpool, and no doubt many of the Manchester manufactures were exported through the same channel to France, Spain and Portugal.

Manchester  
Wares.

Irish Yarn.

The Civil War, 1642-9, checked for a time this progressive improvement, but immediately after the Restoration the tide set in with considerable force. The extracts given below sufficiently indicate this advance, which quadrupled the population in less than half a century, and has gone forward in an ever-increasing ratio to the present time.

Check from  
Civil War.

---

## MUNICIPAL AFFAIRS.

---

After the passing of the Test and Corporations Act in 1662, Commissioners were sent down by Government to

1662.  
Commission-  
ers.

enforce its provisions. They lost no time in issuing the following mandate:—

“A Coppy of the Orders and proceedings of the Com<sup>rs</sup> for regulating Corporacon, made touching this Corporacon 10<sup>th</sup> Novembris 1662.

“Com. Lanc, Liverpoole Nov 10<sup>th</sup> 1662.

Proceedings.

“Declared by the Com<sup>rs</sup> in pursuance of the Act of 13<sup>th</sup> Car<sup>oli</sup> 2 intituled an Act for the well governing and regulating of Corporacon for the County Palatine of Lancaster, That Thomas Blackmore, Thomas Williamson, Ralph Massam, Edward Williamson, Gilbert Formby and Richard Percivall<sup>1</sup> who have refused to take and subscribe the Declaracon in the sayd Act, being thereunto required be (ipso facto) removed and displaced of and from the offices and places of Aldermen, and all other their office of Magistracy, or places, or trusts, or other imploy<sup>t</sup> relating to, or concerning the govern<sup>t</sup> of the sayd respective Corporacon, And that the sayd offices, and places of Aldermen and all other their offices of Magistracy, or places, or trusts, or other imploy<sup>ts</sup> relating to, or concerning the govern<sup>t</sup> of the sayd respective Corporacon are herby declared and adjudged to be void to all intents and purposes, as if the sayd respective persons who refused were naturally dead. And be it further ordered, adjudged and declared, That Thomas Weaver, John Chandler, John Sturzaker, Thomas Story, Peter Lurting, Raph Mercer, bee and are herby nominated, constituted, and appointed, to be Aldermen in the places of the p<sup>ersons</sup> above named.”

Removal of Aldermen.

Oaths to be taken.

“Ordered by the Com<sup>rs</sup> aforesayd That all such Officers, Majestrates, Aldermen and Comon Councill men as are now elected, constituted, and appointed, and by reason of their absence cold not now take their oathes, and subscribe the declaracon in the sayd Act menconed, be referred to take the said oathes and subscribe the sayd declaracon, before any three of the Com<sup>rs</sup>, who are desired to take the same w<sup>thin</sup> y<sup>e</sup> tyme limited by the said Act.

“(Signed)

“W STANLEY Maior  
and seven others.”

Councillors removed.

“Declared by the Com<sup>rs</sup> aforesaid, that Thomas Sandiford, Thomas Asbrooke, Edmund Leivesley, John Pemberton, William Blackmore, Evan Marsh, and John Thompson, who have refused to take and subscribe the declaracon in the sayd Act being thereunto required, bee (ipso facto) removed and displaced from the offices and places of Comon Councill men, and all other their office or offices of Magistracy or places or trusts or other imploy<sup>nt</sup> relateing to or concerning the Govern<sup>t</sup> of the sayd respective Corporacon, And that the said offices and places of Comon Councill men, and all other their offices of Magistracy or places or trusts or other imploy<sup>nt</sup>, relating to or concerning the govern<sup>t</sup> of the said respective Corporacon, are herby declared and adjudged to be void, to all

<sup>1</sup> These six gentlemen had all in turn occupied the civic chair during the Commonwealth.



intents and purposes as if the sayd respective p'sons who refused were naturally dead.

"And it is further declared that y<sup>e</sup> p'sons whose names are herupon endorsed, and who have taken y<sup>e</sup> said oathes of obedience & supremacy and y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> other oath, and subscribed y<sup>e</sup> Declaration in y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Act menconed (except John Winstanley who by a p'ticular order is disabled) shall hold and enjoy and be vested in y<sup>e</sup> sayd places and offices of Comon Councill men according to y<sup>e</sup> said Act." Councillors retained.

So far the Commissioners. The Council then, on the same day, took up the subject. The record runs as follows:—

"Liverpoole Nov<sup>r</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> 1662

"According to an Act entitled An Act for the well governing and regulating of Corpora<sup>c</sup>ons, made in the thirteenth yeare of the raigne of King Charles y<sup>e</sup> seacond, wee the Com<sup>rs</sup> hereafter named adm'stred the severall oathes in th' aforesaid Act menconed, and tooke the severall subscriptions to the declara<sup>c</sup>on in the Act conteyned, of the persons whose names hereafter followeth. 1662. Commission-ers.

"I doe declare that I hold there lyes noe obliga<sup>c</sup>on upon mee or any other p'son from the oath comonly called the Solemne League and Covenant. And that the same was in it selfe an unlawfull oath and imposed upon the subjects of this Realme ag<sup>t</sup> the knowne lawes and lib'ties of the kingdome. Declaration.

"W STANLEY, Maior  
"WM KITCHEN } Balyfes  
"WM GARDNER }  
"JOHN ENTWISLE Recorder  
"Eight Aldermen and  
"24 Councillors."

Then follow the signatures of eight Royal Commissioners.

Some of the Aldermen were not so compliant, as appears by the following entry of the same date:—

"Thomas Blackmore, Thomas Williamson, Ralph Massam, Edward Williamson, Gilbert Formby and Ed. Percival ordered to be discharged from their offices as Aldermen of the town for refusing to subscribe to the declaration contained in the Act 13 Charles II., for the well governing of Corporations." 1664.

1664 June 27<sup>th</sup> "These men following viz<sup>t</sup> voted to be of the Councill, Capt<sup>n</sup> Edw<sup>d</sup> Tarleton, Mr Tho. Christian, Tho. Birch, Tho. Bridge, Will<sup>m</sup> Eccleston. All but Mr Christian sworne and subscribed their renun<sup>c</sup>a<sup>c</sup>on of the Covenant.

Robert Fleetwood also then voted to be of the Councill, and afterwards

being summoned to take the oaths by law in such case prescribed, declared his unwillingness to take on him that charge."

Thomas Birch, mentioned above, had no such scruples. He had been colonel in the Parliamentary army, and governor of the town, 1644-5. He represented the borough in Parliament from 1649 to the Restoration, when he settled in Liverpool, and died in 1678.

Thomas Blackmore, who was expelled for refusing to subscribe the declaration, was member for the borough during Cromwell's last Parliament.

Town Clerk removed.

Blundell appointed.

1662 "Ordered by the Com<sup>rs</sup> for the well Governing and regulating of Corpora<sup>ns</sup> in the County Palatine of Lanc. That John Winstanley be removed from being Towne Clerke or Common Councill man. And that William Blundell of Liverpoole be declared Towne Clerke in his place, the Com<sup>rs</sup> unanimously deeming it expedient for y<sup>e</sup> publique safty and encouragm<sup>t</sup> of loyalty.

"Given und<sup>r</sup> our hands and seales  
"the day and yeare above written."

Signed by 6 Commissioners.

This proceeding is singular, as Winstanley, the Town Clerk, had signed the declaration and taken the oath.

Outside Burgesses admitted.

1662, Nov. 24. A list is given of thirty-eight names of persons admitted as burgesses from outside, principally gentlemen of landed estate, amongst whom are—

"Sir ROGER BRADSHAIGH of Haigh Hall,  
"TOWNLEY of Townley,  
"ECCLESTON of Eccleston,  
"LEIGH of Lyne,  
"WOOLFALL of Woolfall,  
"BRETTERGH of Brettergh,  
"GERARD of Bryn,  
"FAZAKERLY of Spellow House,  
"NORRIS of West Derby,  
"TURNER of Preston."

1663.  
Levy.

1663, July 13. At an Assembly, &c.—"It is ordered that y<sup>e</sup> some of twenty pounds shall be forthw<sup>th</sup> taxed and assessed by the marchant apprizers upon y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of this towne and burrough, and collected, levied, and gathered by the baylives of y<sup>e</sup> same, for y<sup>e</sup> necessary use and disbursem<sup>ts</sup> of the s<sup>d</sup> towne."

The following significant notice is entered under the same date :—

“ Upon reading a letter from Mr. John Case, certifying that Writts of Quo Warranto are to be issued forth to all Corporacons. It is ordered that a letter be forthw<sup>th</sup> sent to y<sup>e</sup> said Mr. Case for his further advice, and touching the renuing of the towne's charter.” <sup>Warranto.</sup>

“ 1664, Jany 28<sup>th</sup> Peter Lurting Gen. Maior.

“ At an Assembly &c. Whereas William Blundell of Prescott gent. was by the Com<sup>rs</sup> for regulating Corporacons chosen Towne Clerke, in the room of Mr John Winstanley, who was removed by the said Com<sup>rs</sup>; And whereas the said Wm Blundell now livinge in Prescott, cannot answeare the full service belonginge to the office of Town Clerke in regard of such his remoteness; and hath therefore very freely resigned; now upon proposall of the eleccōn of another Clerke in the roome of the said Wm Blundell, Itt is upon good & mature delib'acon this day ordered concluded and agreed upon by the wor'll Mr Maior, the Aldermen, Baylives & the rest of the Comon Counsell now here in the Town Hall assembled, that Samuel Fazakerley of this towne gent. shall be Town Clerke in the room & stead of the said Wm Blundell; and the said Mr Maior, Aldermen, Balives & Comon Councel men, doe constitute elect and choose the said Samuell Fazakerley Town Clerke in the room & place of the said Wm Blundell, to doe, execute and p'forme the said office, & to receive & take the fees due and belonginge to the said office. Hee the said Samuel Fazakerley paying yearly for the said office the sūme of five Pounds, soe long as he shall continue in the said office, or untill furth<sup>r</sup> ord<sup>r</sup>.” <sup>Blundell resigns. Fazakerly appointed.</sup>

In 1663, a bill was introduced into Parliament for the improvement of the navigation of the Mersey and the Weaver. This bill met with the most strenuous opposition on the part of the Liverpool Corporation, and was for the time defeated. Thirty years afterwards, mainly through the efforts of Mr. Thomas Patten, of Bank Hall, Warrington, the improvement of the upper course of the Mersey was effected. That of the Weaver was postponed until the next century. <sup>Navigation Bill opposed.</sup>

The following entry relates to this subject :—

1664 Feby 25<sup>th</sup> Att an Assembly &c. “ It is ordered and thought meet, that Mr Maior w<sup>th</sup> some others as he shall think fitt, shall treat w<sup>th</sup> Capt. John Case touching his demand of costs expended by him in defending against the Bill brought in for making navigable the rivers of Mersey and Weaver; and to allow him what Mr Maior and his said assistants shall think meet.” <sup>1664. Costs.</sup>

Lighthouses  
opposed.

The erection of lighthouses on the coast met with similar opposition. In 1664 a bill was brought into Parliament for building a lighthouse somewhere near the mouth of the Mersey. This was sent down to the Council by Sir Gilbert Ireland, one of the Members, whereon the following entry was passed :—

1664 June 27<sup>th</sup> Att an Assemblie &c “It is ordered that a Peticon be framed in the name of the Merchants, Owners of Shippes, and Seamen of this burrough, to oppose a Bill intended to be exhibited in the next P<sup>l</sup>iam<sup>t</sup>, a draught or copie whereof is sent to us by o<sup>r</sup> worthie and hono<sup>r</sup>ble Member and burges in P<sup>l</sup>iam<sup>t</sup> for this Corporacon, S<sup>r</sup> Gilb<sup>t</sup> Ireland, & now read unto us, being for the p<sup>t</sup>ended erecting & setting up of light-houses w<sup>th</sup>in the range of the redd Channell, to testify our utter dislike thereof, and disowninge anie of oure consent thereunto, as in the same draught is pretended untruely.”

Port defined.

The port of Liverpool was held from its origin to include both shores of the Mersey. This was frequently disputed by the citizens of Chester, but on all occasions stoutly maintained by the Corporation of Liverpool.<sup>1</sup>

Wirral side  
claimed.

1664 Feby 18 “It is ordered that upon landing of anie cattle or other goods on Worrall Side ov<sup>r</sup> against & within the lib<sup>t</sup>ies of this port, the Water Baylive for the tyme being shall distreyne anie the said goodes, cattells or merchandizes for the usuall customes due to this towne, and for such distresse shall be indemnified.”

Boundaries of  
Borough.

In 1671 a record is entered of the boundaries of the borough, which appear identical with a similar entry in 1541.

“The perambulacon is from the Water Street end to Beeton guttar on the north of Liverpoole; hence to the Grove and the Meyre stone in Mr Moore’s meadow, thence to Kirkdall lane to the Meyre stone there over against the Beakon; thence to a Meyre stone in Syres ditch adjoining the Breck; thence through the several fields to Liverpoole Comon, and soe after the Comon side to the Meyre stone at Johnson’s field end on the east side of the towne, and soe up the guttar or valley to the Moss lake to a place called Hollin hedge, and thence straight to the Park wall, and all along the Park wall and through two crofts to Booth’s Mill, and soe to the sea side, and all along the sea side over the Poole, and thence along the sea side to Water street end.”

<sup>1</sup> *Vide supra*, pp. 153.



" Our liberty at sea to arrest within the flood mark is on both sides the river of Mersey, as far upward as the same flowes, with custome or toll on either side the river, with other usuall priviledges of the river." Flood mark.

The records of the Liverpool Corporation during the reigns of Charles II. and James II. are so full of interesting matter illustrative of the Corporate constitution, and of the relations between the Crown and the Municipalities, that they are worth extracting at some length.

The charter of Charles I. was liberal in its constitution, vesting all power in the burgesses at large. The Council had become gradually self-elected, and usurped the entire control over the town's affairs. This naturally created considerable discontent, which was increased when the Test and Corporation Act was passed in 1661, and six of the aldermen were excluded from office for refusing to take the oaths. The party in power, therefore, lost no time in the endeavour to get a renewal of the charter, which should change the constitution, and legalise their usurped power. Constitution of Council.

1664, May 10th. At a meeting of the Mayor, Aldermen, and Council. " It is ordered and thought fitt, that our Charter be renewed w<sup>th</sup> what possible speed may bee, and likewise that all endeavor shall bee made that may bee, to make this an absolute free port. It is also ordered that a lye of foure score pounds shall be forthw<sup>th</sup> taxed and assessed w<sup>thin</sup> this Burrough towards the defrayeing of the charge of the p<sup>'</sup>secuting thereof." Renewal of Charter.

Some hesitation, however, took place, for on the 6th October following, the execution of this order was suspended till further notice, and the matter slept for three years.

In 1666, Charles Earl of Derby was elected Mayor, and on the 20th June, 1667, the following resolution was passed :— 1667.

" Itt is thought fitt and ordered, That if it please God to grant us peace and settlement in this kingdom, that in returne of the right hono<sup>ble</sup> the Earle of Derby, his gracious offers of favo<sup>r</sup> to this towne, applica<sup>con</sup> shall be made to his Lo<sup>pp</sup> by the Aldermen of this towne, to acquaint his hono<sup>r</sup> of the freedome of this Assembly to have theire Charter renewed in his Lo<sup>pps</sup> Proceedings.

Maioralty, if it please God wee shall have peace in this kingdome. And such of this burrough as his Lo<sup>pp</sup> shall direct, may make applicacon to Counsell in ord<sup>r</sup> thereunto, if it to his Lo<sup>pp</sup> may seeme meet."

### 1667 On the 10th of the following October

Earl of Derby. "It is ordered by the Assembly That upon considera<sup>n</sup> of the right hono<sup>ble</sup> the Earle of Darby our most noble Maior his gracious late favo<sup>rs</sup> & encouragem<sup>t</sup> to us members of this burrough Corporate, we are unanimously resolved & doe make it our desire That all suitable & convenient prepara<sup>n</sup> shall be forthw<sup>th</sup> made, in order to renuinge of our Charter of Liv<sup>'</sup>poole. And the rather that some p<sup>'</sup>ceeding as the short tyme may p<sup>'</sup>mitt, may be done in his Lo<sup>pps</sup> Maioralty. And that his Lo<sup>pp</sup> shall be recorded in our great Booke of Records, as the principall promoter thereof."

Nothing, however, came of this.

Sir Gilbert  
Ireland.

1667 Nov<sup>r</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> At an Assembly &c. "It is ordered that S<sup>r</sup> Gilbert Ireland, one of the Burgesses in P<sup>'</sup>liam<sup>t</sup> for this towne, and John Entwisle Esq Recorder of the same, be w<sup>th</sup> as much speed as may be, consulted w<sup>th</sup>, in ord<sup>r</sup> to renuinge of our Charter & adviseinge us in the method & prepara<sup>n</sup> thereunto."

It is also ordered at the same Assembly

"That Mr James Jerrom shall be entrusted as principall Agent to solicit and undertake the renuinge of our Charter, w<sup>th</sup> what convenient expedico<sup>n</sup> may be, And from tyme to tyme to receive & observe our advice and direcco<sup>n</sup> in reference thereunto, And what he shall dispend therein, to be paid out of the Treasurie of this towne."

Whilst this was going forward, complaints were made that the Test Act had not been carried out with sufficient rigour, and the following proclamation was issued:—

1668.  
Proclamation  
as to Test Act.

1668 "Thomas Lord Colchester,<sup>1</sup> Maior

"Copie of a l<sup>re</sup> from the Lords of

"His Ma<sup>ty</sup> Privie Counsell

"After our hearty commenda<sup>n</sup>s, His Ma<sup>ty</sup> havinge received frequent informa<sup>n</sup> from severall parts of this kingdome That divers persons formerly displased by y<sup>e</sup> Com<sup>rs</sup> authorised for regulatinge Corpora<sup>n</sup>s, in pursuance of an Acte of Parliam<sup>t</sup>, and others, doe without takinge y<sup>e</sup> oath and declara<sup>n</sup> appointed by the statute of the 13<sup>th</sup> of his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s Raigne, endeavour to be ellected and readmitted into the sev<sup>'</sup>all offices of Mayors,

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Lord Colchester was the eldest son of Earl Rivers, and married to a daughter of the Earl of Derby.

Bayliffs, Sherriffs, Aldermen, Towne Clearks, and other offices, in the respective Cytyes and Boroughs of this Kingdome, with dessire as may be justly apprehended, to disturb the peace and happines of his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Governm<sup>t</sup>. His Ma<sup>ty</sup> thereupon hath comanded us to pray and require you to signifie his pleasure unto the Mayor, Bayliffe and Aldermen and other officers of all and every Citty and town Corporate within y<sup>e</sup> County Pallatine of Lancaster; That they doe not henceforward admitt any p<sup>er</sup>son or p<sup>er</sup>sons into any office w<sup>h</sup>soever in any of theire Corporacon<sup>s</sup> but accordinge to the rules p<sup>re</sup>scribed by the Acte of Parliam<sup>t</sup>. And soe not doubtinge of yo<sup>r</sup> care herein wee bid you heartily farewell;

“ From y<sup>e</sup> Court of Whitehall y<sup>e</sup> 22<sup>nd</sup> day of September 1668

“ Yo<sup>r</sup> ever lovinge Freinds

“ GILBERT CANT (Archbishop of Canterbury)

“ CRAVEN (Earl)

“ ORMOND (Duke)

“ BATH (Marquis)

“ HUMPH. LONDON. (Bishop)

“ LAUDERDAILL (Earl)

“ MIDLETON (Lord)

“ ARLINGTON (Lord)

“ and others.”

In 1669, the election of Mr. Thomas Bicksteth as Mayor was objected to on information to the Privy Council. His name is not found amongst those who took the test in 1662. 1669.  
Mayor's  
election  
disputed.

The following entry appears under date November 30th, 1669:—

“ Att an Assembly &c. Whereas we have rec<sup>d</sup> l<sup>re</sup>s from our Burgesses and Col. John Birch a member of Parliam<sup>t</sup> & others, of compl<sup>te</sup> ag<sup>t</sup> us to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> & Counsell concerninge our late election of Mr Thomas Bicksteth our Maior, it is ordered that it shall be lawfull to & for the s<sup>d</sup> Mr Bicksteth o<sup>r</sup> Maior at all tymes hereafter during the tyme of his Maioralty for quieting of the s<sup>d</sup> compl<sup>te</sup> in reference to the s<sup>d</sup> election or any other concerne of this towne, to ymploy & order Solicitors as he shall see meet in defence of the said matters, or any other matt<sup>t</sup> now stirred up, or hereafter to be stirred up in reference to the said election or other concerne of this towne, & all charges therein expended by order of the Mr Maior shall be paid out of the towne's treasury. And whereas letters are frequent to Mr Maior from our burgesses & Mr Birch & others in reference to the towne's concerne, w<sup>ch</sup> to answer and make returne to, wee doe further ord<sup>r</sup> that the said Mr Maior may answer the same as he shall from tyme to tyme think meet, taking to his assistance some such of the Counsell as he shall think fitt, being foure at the least w<sup>th</sup>out calling a full assembly. And wee doe hereby ratify & allow what they shall act in reference thereto.”

Signed by THOMAS BICKESTETH  
and 23 others.

The oaths continued to present considerable difficulty.

1671.

1671, November 7th.

Recusants  
fined.

“Whereas at the last court of elecon of Maior and other officers in this Corporacon viz<sup>t</sup> upon St Luke’s day last, a fine of thirty pounds was imposed by Mr Thomas Johnson then Maior, and the Aldermen then present, upon Peter Atherton a member of the same Corporacon for refusing to take upon him the office of Baylive of the same, and to take the oaths and make the subcrippcon as by the lawes in that case is appointed; upon his the said Peter Atherton’s submission to the now Maior & Aldermen, and his promise willingly hereafter to take upon him that office when he shall bee next lawfully elected, twenty pounds, part of the said fine is hereby remitted.”<sup>1</sup>

Party spirit ran very high, and severe measures were occasionally adopted.

Remon-  
strances  
suppressed.

“1672 Octr 28<sup>th</sup> At an Assembly before Silvester Richmond Esq Maior. It is ordered that if any member of this Assembly have contrived, consented or shall consent to, or subscribe a pap<sup>r</sup> or libell now brought into this Councell & read publicly, pretending itselfe to be a remonstrance ag<sup>t</sup> some pretended grievances, the same pap<sup>r</sup> being of itselfe very scandalous & of bad consequence, imposing an unjust ympeachm<sup>t</sup> upon the late Magistrates & Govern<sup>rs</sup> of this towne; It is ordered that every or any such member of this Assembly that shall be found to have bin consenting, privie or subscribing to the same libell, such member shall be from henceforth deposed & degraded from his trust or place of a Comon Councell man. And likewise if any member of this Councell shall at any tyme hereafter be convict, or found by strong presumption & direct or circumstantial prooffe, to discover or disclose any part of the acts or things here done in Counsell, till a due publication shall be thereof made, such member so discloseing any of the secretts of this Councell to any who are not of this Assembly, shall after such prooffe made ag<sup>t</sup> him shall likewise from thenceforth be deposed & degraded from having any vote or place in this Assembly, and be subject to such fine or penaltie as shall be ymposed upon him for such default. And the fine is now imposed, viz<sup>t</sup> forty pounds upon every Alderman & twenty pounds upon every other member of this Assembly disclosing unduly any secretts of this Councell.

“(Signed) S RICHMOND Maior  
“& 29 others.”

At the election of Mayor on St. Luke’s day, 1673, a rather serious *émeute* took place. It is thus recorded:—

1673.  
Election Riot.

1673 Oct<sup>r</sup> 18<sup>th</sup> “Whereas on Saturday the eighteenth day of this

<sup>1</sup> Peter Atherton was elected Bailiff the following year.



instant October in the Comon Hall of the Burrough & Corporation of Liverpoole, the Maior, Baylives and Burgesses of the said burrough were assembled together to make an election of a Maior for the succeeding yeare according to the charter & custome of the said Corporacon, and Mr James Jerrom was then & there duely elected & chosen Maior of the said Corporacon for the ensuing yeare, and declared publickly in open Court by Mr Silvester Richmond present Maior to be soe according to custome of the said burrough; whereupon the said Court was adjourned & all p'sons there assembled discharg'd by proclamation from any further attendance; Nevertheles Richard Lurting, Thomas Stockley, Joshua Cubban & Edward Litherland w<sup>th</sup> sev'all others unknowne, in disturbance of the publick peace & contrary to their respective oathes and duties of freemen of the said Corporacon, in affront to the authority of the said Mr Richmond then Maior for the tyme being, did riotously unite & assemble themselves in the said Comon Hall; And refused to suffer the said Maior, having comanded the Serjeant w<sup>th</sup> his Mace to goe before him, to passe out of the said hall three severall tymes, and constrayned him so often to returne to his place, not w<sup>th</sup>out some violence offered to his p'son; and kept him under their restraint by the space of two houres, and untill he was inforced to call for ayd of some of his officers w<sup>th</sup>out, w<sup>th</sup> their halberds to inlarge and secure his person, & severall other of the Aldermen, the Baylives & other of the Comon Councell men then present w<sup>th</sup> him in the said Comon hall, and the said Richard Lurting and the other parties being duely sumoned to appeare before us, have shewed no reasonable cause why they have soe done. It is therefore ordered by the said Maior & Comon Councell that the said parties shall hereby bee from henceforth disfranchized of & from their freedoms & liberties of the said Corporacon and burrough, and are hereby declared to be disabled to exercise the facultie of freemen w<sup>th</sup>in the said burrough and Corporacon. And that warrants of good behaviour be yssued forth by the said Mr Maior against the p'sons whose names are indorsed on the present folio for the misdemeano<sup>rs</sup> & offences comitted by them the same day upon the said election. Witness our hands put the aforesaid twentieth day of October 1673

Mayor in  
durance.

Rioters  
disfranchised.

“S. RICHMOND, Maior  
“and 30 others.”

Twenty-six persons were included in this indictment.

Whilst the two parties were struggling for ascendancy, freemen were sometimes admitted irregularly.

1676, Octr 23<sup>rd</sup> Robert Williamson, Mariner, Mayor.

At a Portmoot. “Resolved upon the question That by the ancient custome and usage of this Corporation, the Maior for the tyme being without his Baylives, major part of the Aldermen and Town Clark being present ought not to administer the oath of a freeman to any person to

1676.

Illegal  
Freemen.

the intent to admitt a freeman of this Corporation without special order of the Counsell for that purpose."

Repudiated.

1676 Novr 1<sup>st</sup> "Resolved upon the Question That all those who within three dayes before the election of the present Maior were irregularly brought in to be sworne freemen of this Corporation, there not being any order of Councell to enable the doing thereof, shall not be deemed freemen duely elected of this Corporation, nor shall be enrolled by the Town Clark in the roll of freemen."

Aldermen rebuked.

"Resolved upon the question That Ald<sup>r</sup> Thomas Andoe Ald<sup>r</sup> Peter Lurting, and Ald<sup>r</sup> Thomas Johnson who introduced and promoted the aforesaid persons to bee irregularly admitted to take the oaths of freemen of this Corporation, are guilty of a breach of trust, and have acted contrary to their duty expressed in the oaths of a freeman for preservation of the ancient custome of this Corporation."

During these dissensions the records of the Corporation had been tampered with, as appears from the following resolution of the same date (November 1<sup>st</sup>, 1676):—

Records mutilated.

"Resolved upon the question, That the rending, cutting or pulling out, of leavs and pages out of the ancient books of records of this towne, where any interest of some perticular persons who have formerly bin Maiors of this towne are touched or concerned, gives this Corporation a caution not to give the power of it to any of their heys or assignes to doe the like, and that it will not be safe for this Corporation to lodg the ancient books of record in the hands of those which clayme under such person."

Objections to Elections.

"Resolved upon the question. That any person who hath bin declared incapable to serve the Kings Mat<sup>y</sup> in the office of Justice of Peace for the County of Lancaster ought not to be admitted or exercise the office of Chiefe Magistrate or other publick office of trust of or for this Corporation."

New Charter.

The new charter was at length obtained, bearing date July 8<sup>th</sup>, 1677. In the subsequent charter of 1695, this is referred to as obtained by

Changes.

"a few of the burgesses by a combination among themselves without the assent of the greater part of the burgesses, and without a surrender of the previous charter or any judgment of Quo Warranto or otherwise given against the same, in which sundry changes were designed to be made in the government of the said town, which said alterations have caused many differences and doubts concerning the liberties, franchises and customs of the said town."

Considerable dissatisfaction was manifested in carrying into effect the terms of the charter.

"1677 Octr 31<sup>st</sup> William Richard George, Earl of Derby Mayor. 1677.  
At an Assembly &c

"Alderman Peter Lurting being required to take the oath of a Comon Councillman, according to the new charter, late granted by his Maj<sup>ty</sup>, desires to be excused in regard of his age. Refusals to take oath.  
Lurting.

"Alderman Thomas Johnson being alsoe required to take the oath, answers, he'el take noe more oaths unles to be elected to some new office, and denies to take the oath of a Comon Councillman pursuant to the said new charter. Johnson.

"Mr Thomas Preeson one of the Comon Councill, and one nominated in the new charter, being an aged and infirm person, and publickly haveing declared in Councill his inability to attend that office, and prayed thereof to be discharged, is therefore from henceforth now discharged. Preeson.

"Alderman Thomas Andoe one of the Comon Councill members nominated in the last charter granted to this Corporation, this day publickly and voluntarily declares that tho' he was sumoned, hee himselfe not concern'd in the Councill, and denies to take any the oaths appointed by Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup> by persons of publick office or trust, and more p'ticularly the oath of a Comon Councill man. And therefore it is conceived by this Assembly that the said Mr Andoe hath voluntarily discharged himselfe from the office of a Comon Councill man, and is hereby declared to be discharged from the same." Andoe.  
Discharges.

On St. Luke's day, 1679, Mr. Thomas Bicksteth overcame all his scruples. It is recorded under this date— Bicksteth subscribes.

"Thomas Bicksteth eldest alderman tooke all the oathes by lawe required, and made subscription & sworne Justice of y<sup>e</sup> peace for y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon."

The Government were not satisfied with the perfunctory manner in which the test oaths were administered, and in 1680 the following mandate was issued:—

"The Coppie of a L<sup>re</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> Privie Councill rec<sup>d</sup> the 18<sup>th</sup> day of Aprill 1680. 1680.  
Mandate from  
Privy Council.

"After our heartie comendacons, Whereas by an Act made in y<sup>e</sup> 13<sup>th</sup> yeare of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Reigne intituled an Act for y<sup>e</sup> well governinge & regulatunge of Corporacons' it is amongst other things enacted; Thatt all persons who upon y<sup>e</sup> 24<sup>th</sup> day of Decemb<sup>r</sup> 1661 should bee Mayors, Aldermen, Recorders, Bailiffs, Towne Clerkes, Comon Councill men and other persons then bearinge any office of Magistracie or places of trust or other employm<sup>t</sup> relatinge to or concerninge the government of the respective Citties, Corporations and Burroughs and Cinque Ports and their members, and other port townes w<sup>thin</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Kingdom of England, dominion of Wales,



Oaths.

Sacrament to  
be taken.Administra-  
tion of Oaths.Entries to be  
made.Report to be  
made.

and towne of Berwick upon Tweed, shall take the oathe of Allegiance and Supremacie, and likewise an oath declaring & believinge it unlawfull upon any p'tence whatsoever, to take Armes against the Kinge, and shall also publicly subscribe a declaracon against the Solemn League and Covenant (the former of w<sup>ch</sup> s<sup>d</sup> last mentioned oath and declaration are conteyned in the bodie of the said Act,) And whereas it is therein further enacted That noe person or persons shall for ever be placed or chosen in or to any of y<sup>e</sup> offices aforesaid that shall not within one yeare next before such election & choice have taken the Sacrament accordinge to the rites of y<sup>e</sup> Church of England, & shall likewise take the aforesaid three oathes, and subscribe y<sup>e</sup> said Declaration at y<sup>e</sup> same time that the oath for the due execution of the said places and offices respectivelie shalbee administered (It being provided by the said Act that everie person who shall be placed in any Corporation shall upon his admission take the oathes usuallye taken by members of such Corporacon). And in default thereof everie such placeing or election is thereby enacted and declared to bee void. And whereas it is further enacted by the s<sup>d</sup> statute That the s<sup>d</sup> three oathes and declaracon shalbee from time to time administred and tendred to such person and persons who by y<sup>e</sup> true meaninge of y<sup>e</sup> said Act, or any clause therein conteyned are to take the same by such person or persons respectivelie, who by the charters or usages of y<sup>e</sup> respective Citties, burroughs & Corporacons &c ought to administer the oath for the due executinge the said places or offices ; or in default of such by two Justices of the peace of the said Citties, burroughs Corporacons &c if any such there bee, or otherwise by two Justices of the peace of the respective Counties where the s<sup>d</sup> Citties, Corporacons & burroughs are. And whereas it is further enacted by the aforesaid statute y<sup>t</sup> the persons thereby authorized to administer the s<sup>d</sup> oathes and tender the s<sup>d</sup> declaration shall cause Memorandums & entries to bee made of all oathes taken before them and subscriptions made as aforesaid, and deliver the same once a yeare to the respective Towne Clerkes or other Register or Clerke of the s<sup>d</sup> respective Citties, Corporacons, & burroughs &c, who shal cause the same to bee fairelee entred into the bookes and registers belonging to y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> respective Citties &c. Wherefore his Ma<sup>tie</sup> at this Board havinge taken into consideracon of what great importance it is to y<sup>e</sup> publicke peace of the Kingdome in generall, as well as to the orderlye and quiet government of each Cittie &c in particular, Wee doe in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> name hereby require you w<sup>th</sup> all convenient speed to give an account to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> at this Board, whether the said Act hath beene duelye putt in execution from time to time within your burrough of Liverpoole. And whether memorandums or entries have been kept of the same, as by the s<sup>d</sup> Act is directed ; And further, that you take effectuall care that all matters contained in the said Act bee strictlye put in execution for the future in relation to the takinge of the Sacrament, and the oathes thereby required to bee taken & y<sup>e</sup> subscription of the Declaration, and the keeping of entries of the same ; of w<sup>ch</sup> we expect a punctuall account and observance from you. And you



are also carefullie to examine whether all such as have beene already chosen into any place or office of Magistracie, or trust, or other employment relatinge to or concerninge the government of your said burrough of Liverpoole have taken the Sacrament and the said oathes, and subscribed y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Declaracon as by the said Act is required and directed, And that if you find any who have failed therein, that you forthwith cause everie such person or persons to bee removed, accordinge to the direction of the said statute, whereby the election of any person not takinge the Sacrament and oathes as aforesaid, & subscribinge the declaracon is enacted and declared to be void. And you are likewise to returne y<sup>e</sup> names of all such p'sons who havinge accepted of any elections to y<sup>e</sup> places afores<sup>d</sup> & have not taken y<sup>e</sup> Sacrament & oathes & subscribed y<sup>e</sup> declaracon afores<sup>d</sup> have yet p'sumed to sitt or act in any of the s<sup>d</sup> places. And of all your p'ceedinges herein you are to give a just & true account to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> at this Board from time to time. And soe wee bidd you heartily farewell

Defaulters to be removed.

Names to be returned.

" From the Court at Whitehall y<sup>e</sup> 26<sup>th</sup> daye of March 1680

|                |             |                |
|----------------|-------------|----------------|
| " S GODOLPHIN  | BRIDGEWATER | FINC C         |
| " THOS DOLEMAN | BATHE       | ANGLESEY T P S |
|                | HYDE        | ALBEMARLE      |
|                | ERNLE       | WORCESTER."    |
|                | JENKINS     |                |

directed " To our loveinge friends y<sup>e</sup> Maior and Ald<sup>m</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> towne of Liverpoole."

1681 Aug 3<sup>rd</sup> At an Assembly it was ordered,

" That an Adresse bee drawn upp and presented to his Majestie givinge him thanckes for his late gracious declaration, and that the said Adresse bee drawne upp by Mr Bicksteth, Mr Marsden, Mr Chorley, and read to the Councill on Monday next."

1681.  
Address to the King.

" The eight daye of August 1681

" Att an especiall Councill then held The Adresse underwritten was read, and upon mature debate was unanimously agreed unto by Mr Maior, the Aldermen, and farre greatest part of the Councill; it should be fairlie well writt and subscribed by them; and in a few daies after it was sent by Alderman Robert Williamson, and by him (through the favour of the Lord Arlington) p'sented to his Sacred Majestie, who heard it read and graciously accepted of it.

" TO THE KINGE'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTIE

" The humble Adresse of the Maior, Aldermen, and Common Councill of the Seaport and Burrough of Liverpoole in the Countie of Lancaster.

" Wee your Maties most loyal subjects, hold it our duetie most solemnlye & publiclye to acknowledge to your Majestie the great blessings which God hath pleased to vouchsafe us in your Majesties stedfast adherence to the true Protestant religion duringe the time of your unhappie exile, notwithstandinge your manie and great temptations to the contrarie—in your mercifull indulgence to your subjects att your miraculous Restora-

Blessings conferred.

Religion and Liberty. tion. In your havinge maineteyned our said religion with our civill libertie and propertie by lawe established. And lastlye in assuringe us by your late gracious Declaration that your Majestie will make the excellent lawes of the land the rule of your government both in Church and State, and endeavor the extirpation of Poperie.

Lives and Fortunes. "In testimonie of our thankfullnesse to God and your Ma<sup>tie</sup> for theise great blessinges and favours, wee most humblye and cordiallye engage ourselves with the hazard of our lives and fortunes (as both by our naturall and sworne allegiance we are bound) to defend and mainetaine your Ma<sup>ties</sup> royall person, heires, and lawfull successors, crowne and dignitie, against all Popish contrivances & other devices whatsoever.

"Prayinge for your Ma<sup>ties</sup> longe and peaceable reigne and everlastinge happinesse hereafter."

Reluctance to Oaths. Notwithstanding this effusive expression of loyalty, there was considerable reluctance to take the qualifying oaths.

1682. On the 7th September, 1682,

"Att a Councell then assembled, it was ordered by Mr Maior (Thos. Clayton) and greatest pt of the Councell, that by reason of y<sup>e</sup> want of Common Councell men y<sup>e</sup> Corporations were delayed," certain persons then named were elected, "who took all the oaths and subscribed as by lawe required."

Mollineux discharged. "Mr John Mollineux, refusinge to take the oathes of allegiance and supremacie, and the other oath, and sayinge that hee would not take them untill he were elected to an office in this Corporacon, and then departinge the Councell without leave from Mr Maior; hee was discharged by the Councell & is hereby discharged."

Bishop of Kildare. Occasionally this was counterbalanced by an excess of ostentatious loyalty. Here is an instance. Dr. William Moreton, Bishop of Kildare, was admitted freeman in 1682. It is recorded that

"hee was admitted free gratis and tooke the oathes of Allegiance and Supremacie *upon his knees*, and was sworne freeman the two and twentieth day of May 1682."

1683.  
Rye-house Plot.

1683, July 12th. After the discovery of the Rye-house Plot, and the Execution of Sidney and Russell, the Corporation of Liverpool, or rather the party which had illegally usurped its functions, presented a loyal address to the King, as follows :—

“The humble address of the Mayor, Aldermen and Common Councill Address.  
of your Majesties ancient borrough & port of Liverpoole in the  
countie of Lancaster.

“Dread soveraigne. Altho’ wee live in one of those remote counties  
w<sup>ch</sup> enjoye not the happinesse of your Ma<sup>ties</sup> presence, yet are wee not  
deprived of the benigne influence of that gentle and auspicious govern-  
ment, w<sup>ch</sup> at once shows your Ma<sup>tie</sup> to bee the best of princes, and of men. The King the best of Princes.  
And therefore wee cannot but expresse our early and just abhorrence of  
those trayterous and unparalleled designes w<sup>ch</sup> were intended at the same  
time to destroy your Ma<sup>ties</sup> royal person, and your dearest brother, and  
carried on by a factious and restless sort of men who cannot endure Factions.  
prerogative, because it secures the propertie of your Ma<sup>ties</sup> good subjects,  
over whom they would tyrannize as formerly they have done. A sort of  
men whose infectious anti-monarchical principles are enough to empoysen  
all that are not sufficiently prepared w<sup>th</sup> the infallible antidote of loyaltie.  
But wee hope that this repeated instance of God’s signal providence will  
convince us all that your Ma<sup>tie</sup> is reserved to bee the scourge of rebels  
& traytors, & that the Councills of your faithful Hushais shall ever Hushais and Absoloms.  
prevail ag<sup>st</sup> the united force of all aspiring Absoloms, & the desperate  
advise of all pestilent Achitophells. And now, great Sir, what more  
remains but that wee render our unfeigned thanckes to Almighty God for  
his gracious and wonderfull deliverance of your Ma<sup>ties</sup> sacred person &  
your royall brother from the sonnes of violence. And to assure your  
Ma<sup>tie</sup> that wee shall bee alwaies readie to defend your Ma<sup>ties</sup> royal person,  
your heires, and successors in the right line, the present established  
government, both in church & state with the utmost of our fortunes and  
the extremitie of our lives against all plots, associations and conspiracies  
whatsoever.

EDWARD TARLETON, Mayor.”

12th July 1683.

“The above Adresse was fairlie transcribed and by S<sup>r</sup> Thomas  
Chichley, Chancelor of the Duchie p<sup>s</sup>ented to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> and by him  
graciously received & approved of, the eighteenth day of July 1683.”

The allusions in this address are noticeable. Dryden’s  
poem of “Absolom and Achitophel” had been recently  
published, and was very popular. The phrase, “united force of  
aspiring Absoloms,” is levelled at the Duke of Monmouth,  
who was commencing the fatal course which led to his ruin.

1683 Nov<sup>r</sup> 7<sup>th</sup> At a Council &c “upon debate whether Alderman  
Thomas Johnson should be admitted one of the Common Councill, It was  
ordered, that the said Mr Johnson should not be admitted into the said Johnson refused.  
Councill, for that hee hadd publicquely declared ‘That hee would not act  
by vertue of the new Charter; and voluntarily gave evidence against the  
Corporation in the tryall w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Edward Moore’ ”

Whilst these disputes were going on in Liverpool, the Government were taking steps to further manipulate the charters of the cities and boroughs, in order to carry out the royal behests.

1684. "1684, August 19<sup>th</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> Seacome Mayor.  
 Judge: "Att a Common Councill then held, it was declared by Mr Mayor,  
 Jefferies demands Charter. that hee hadd latelie beene w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> George Jefferies, Lord Chiefe Justice of England, who demanded from him the Charter of this Corporation by speciall direction from his Ma<sup>ty</sup>, & expects to have y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Charter to bee delivered to him at Bewsie\* tomorrow, or on Thursday morning; or for default therein, a Quo Warranto to bee sent for it; upon full debate thereof, it was ordered by the whole Councill nemine contradicente. That the said Charter shalbee delivered upp to the s<sup>d</sup> L<sup>d</sup> Cheife Justice on Thursday morning next. And that Mr Mayor, Ald<sup>n</sup> Clayton, Ald<sup>n</sup> Williamson, Ald<sup>n</sup> Windall, y<sup>e</sup> present baylives, towne clerke, the S<sup>r</sup>jeant at Mace & tenne more of y<sup>e</sup> Councill should attend the s<sup>d</sup> L<sup>d</sup> Cheife Justice & bee p<sup>r</sup>sent at y<sup>e</sup> deliverie of the s<sup>d</sup> Charter. And it was further ordered by y<sup>e</sup> said Councill, That if there must bee a resignation und<sup>r</sup> the Comon Seale of the s<sup>d</sup> burrough, that in such case James Lightbourne Esq<sup>re</sup> bee entrusted to enter the same on record in anie of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Courts at Westminster."
- Attendance at Bewsey.
- Resignation under Seal. "1684 Aug<sup>t</sup> 21<sup>st</sup> Mr Mayor with the persons above men<sup>o</sup>ed waited on the Lord Cheife Justice at Bewsey, and delivered the said Charter for his Ma<sup>ties</sup> use. And immediatlye after the resignation was accepted, the said Charter was returned to the Mayor."
- Charter surrendered.
- New Charter. "1684, Oct<sup>r</sup> 27<sup>th</sup> At a Councill then held, it was ordered by Mr Deputie Mayor the Ald<sup>m</sup> and major part of the Councill that Ald<sup>n</sup> Rob<sup>t</sup> Seacome shall goe to London to sollicite the speedie obteyninge of a New Charter for this Burrough. It was also resolved that the nomination of a solicitor in London there to attend to this Corporation's concernes, should bee referred to Mr Mayor, to ord<sup>r</sup> whom his Wor<sup>sh</sup> should thincke meete to mannage y<sup>e</sup> said concernes; for that it would bee farre more chargeable to send one from hence & maintaine him there, not knowing how long time would be spent before wee could bee assured what priviledges would bee confirmed to us."

Dissatisfaction This movement was not unanimous. Meetings were held to protest against this action of the Council.

"1684 Nov<sup>r</sup> 18<sup>th</sup> Sir Rich<sup>d</sup> Atherton Kn Maior. At a Councill then

\*Bewsey Hall, Warrington, was the seat of Sir Richard Atherton, a staunch adherent of the Court party, who had been recently knighted. He was elected Mayor in October, 1684, and Member in 1685.



held, it was ordered by Mr Deputie Maior y<sup>e</sup> Aldermen & Councill, That Mr James Jerrome (Mayor in 1673) bee henceforth discharged from anie further attendance in Councill for refusing to promise that hee would attend no unlawfull meetings." Jerome discharged.

"1684 Nov<sup>r</sup> 22<sup>nd</sup>. It was ordered that the sume of fiftie pounds should bee taken upp at interest for sixe months time in the Corporation's account towards the procuring of the New Charter. The draught of the New Charter rec<sup>d</sup> from Mr Entwisle was read in Councill & approved of." Costs.

"1684 The 26<sup>th</sup> day of November afores<sup>d</sup> the said draught w<sup>th</sup> King Henrie's Charter & King Charles the first and second's Charters were sent from Bewsie, directed to Mr Pope in London."

Before this transaction could be completed, any further proceedings were stopped by the decease of the King. Decease of Charles II.

We find recorded—

"Memorandum. That on the sixth day of Februarie Anno Domini 1685, King Charles the second died at Whitehall; and on the eleaventh day of the s<sup>d</sup> month of Februarie King James the second was proclaimed in this burrough in foure severall streetes w<sup>th</sup> the acclamations of y<sup>e</sup> people, and all solemnities used on such occasions."

1685 April 8<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Rich<sup>d</sup> Atherton Knight Maior.

"Memorandum That on the eight day of Aprill, Anno Domini 1685, Thomas Clayton Esquire, Deputie Mayor, attended w<sup>th</sup> manie freemen, inhabitants of this Burrough of Leverpoole, did goe to Bewsie, where they mett with the New Charter, granted by our gracious Sovereigne, King James the second, now of England &c, where they were kindly receaved & noblie enterteyned by S<sup>r</sup> Richard Atherton, Knight, our present Maior, who was pleased thence to accompanie the s<sup>d</sup> Charter to this towne, and caused the s<sup>d</sup> Charter to bee read in the Exchange. And afterwards hee tooke y<sup>e</sup> oathes of Allegiance & Supremacie & the other oath, and subscribed as by law required & took y<sup>e</sup> oath of Maioraltie &c. Alsoe John Entwisle Esq our Recorder, Silvester Richmond, Rob<sup>t</sup> Seacome, John Chorley, Thomas Clayton, R<sup>d</sup> Windall and Edw<sup>d</sup> Tarleton, Aldermen, and thirty Councillors tooke the oathes as above." 1685. New Charter received. Oaths taken.

The penal laws against the Roman Catholics were at this time in full force, but the King lost no time in endeavouring to relax their severity, as appears by the following entry under date March 15<sup>th</sup>, 1687. Penal Laws relaxed.

Mr. Richard Lathom, a Roman Catholic, was a surgeon in the town, and a boarding school was kept by his wife. It was a penal offence for a school to be openly kept by a Roman Catholic. Mrs. Lathom was threatened with prosecution by Lathom.

the local authority, whereupon the following mandate was issued under the sign manual of the King:—

“James Rex

Mandate in  
his favour.

“Whereas wee are informed that Richard Lathom of Leverpoole in our Countie of Lancaster, chirurgeon and Judeth his wife, who keeps alsoe a boarding schoole for the education of youth at Leverpoole afore-said, have latelie beene molested or p’sented, or threatened to be soe, for, or in respect of their exercising the s<sup>d</sup> severall vocations without licence, or by reason of their religion (being Roman Catholicks). Now wee, being assured of the loialtie of the said Richard Lathom & Judith his wife, & of their abilitie to exercise their respective vocations; Wee doe hereby authorize & licence them to use and exercise the same respectively. And our pleasure is, and wee doe hereby direct you and everie of you respectively to supersead and forbear all prosecution against the said Richard Lathom and Judith his wife for or by reason of his exercising the art of chirurgerie or of his or theire keepinge a boarding schoole or sojourning, teaching, or educating youth, and if any sentence is, or hath beene given or pronounced, or penaltie recovered against, or fine sett upon him or her for or touching the premises, Our pleasure is that the same bee discharged, and that you permitt & suffer y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Richard Lathom and Judith his wife, and each of them, quietlie to exercise the said severall vocations, without anie molestation or disturbance whatsoever, and for soe doing this, or the entrie or inolment thereof w<sup>th</sup> or before you respectively, shalbec unto you and everie of you respectivelie a sufficient warrant.

Fine to be  
remitted.

“Given att our Court at Whitehall y<sup>e</sup> fifteenth day of March, in the second yeare of our Raigne

“By his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Command

“SUNDERLAND.

“To all Archbisshops, & Bisshops & to their Chancelo<sup>rs</sup> & Comissaries & to all other p’sons exercizinge ecclesiasticall jurisdiction, & to all y<sup>e</sup> Custos Rotulorum, Judges of Assize & Gaole deliverie, Justices of the Peace for our Countie of Lancast<sup>r</sup> & to all other officers & p’sons whom it may concerne.”

Objections to  
Charter.

The new charter was very distasteful to the Council. In the first place it restored all the privileges of the burgesses which had been handed over to the self-elected Council by the charter of Charles II, and in the second place it made all the Corporate officers removable at the will and pleasure of the Crown. The Council took no steps to put the new charter in force, and, so far as they were concerned, it remained a dead letter.

The Crown, however, did not allow it to slumber, but proceeded very soon to exercise the power.

1687, August 14th "Att the Court at Windsor.

"The Kings most excellent Majestie present in Councill. Whereas by the Charter granted to the towne of Liverpoole, a power is reserved to his Majestie by his Order in Councill to remove from their employments anie officers in the said towne. And his Ma<sup>tie</sup> havinge received information of the misbehaviour of Oliver Lyme, Deputie Maior of Liverpoole and Silvester Richmond, a Justice of the Peace there; hath thought fitt this day in Councill to declare his pleasure. And doth accordingly Order, That the said Oliver Lyme and Silvester Richmond be, and they are herebie, removed and displaced from their respective offices in the said towne of Liverpoole.

1687.  
Mandate.  
Lyme and  
Richmond  
ejected.

"PHIL. MUSGRAVE"

This missive being sent down to Liverpool, the following entry occurs:—

1687 Sept 12<sup>th</sup> "Att a full Councill then held,

"In obedience to his Ma<sup>ties</sup> order, Wee doe declare, that Oliver Lyme and Silvester Richmond bee and are removed and displaced from their respective offices in this towne of Liverpoole. And it is declared by this Councill (none gainesayinge) that Mr Alderman John Chorley is the senior Alderman of this Corporation; and that Mr Alderman Robert Seacome is the Junior Alderman of this Corporation."

1687, October 21st. "Ordered that strict enquirie bee made where the three Charters are w<sup>ch</sup> were sent to Lond<sup>n</sup> by S<sup>r</sup> Richard Atherton, and care taken to have them returned to this Corporation."

Inquiry about  
Charters.

Soon after this, with a view to calling a Parliament, which, however, was not carried out, the King issued the following order to the Lord-Lieutenant of the County Palatine:—

1687, November 2nd. "A true Coppie of his Majestie's Order.

"That the Lord Lievetenant of the Countie of Lancaster call before him, all deputie Lievetenants and Justices of the Peace within his Lievetenancie either joyntlie or seperatlie as hee shall thincke fitt; and ask them one by one the following questions.

Order to Lord-  
Lieutenant.  
Inquiry.

"1. If in case hee shalbee chosen knight of the shire, or burgesse of a towne (when the King shall thincke fitt to call a Parliament) whether hee wilbee for taking off the penall lawes and the tests.

"2. Whether he will assist and contribute to the election of such members as shalbee for taking off the penal lawes and test.

"3. Whether hee will support the King's declaration for libertie of conscience, by living freindlie with those of all perswasions as subjects of the same Prince, and good Christians ought to doe.

"That as hee shall aske these questions of all deputie Lievetenants and Justices of the peace, soe he shall particularlie write downe what everie one's answer is; whether hee consents, refuseth or is doubtfull.

Report to be made. "That hee likewise doe bring the King as good account as hee can of all the severall Corporations within his Lievetenancie; what persons (of such as are willing to complie with theise measures) have credit enough of their owne to be chosen Parliament men; or may be chosen, if assisted by their freinds.

Catholics and Dissenters. "And lastlie what Catholicks and what dissenters are fitt to bee added either to the list of Deputie Lievetenants or to the Comission of the Peace throughout the said Lievetenancie."

These inquiries were forwarded to Liverpool and to the other boroughs. The record proceeds:—

Mayor's reply. "Mr Maior's answer to the second question (w<sup>ch</sup> was onely insisted on) was

"That what is required by his Majestie is (as hee humblie conceive) a verie weightie and new thing; and that he was not provided to give anie other answer but this:

"When it shall please the King to call a Parliament, hee purposed to vote for such persons as hee hoped would serve the just interests both of his Majestie and the nation."

A more guarded and prudent answer could hardly have been given.

Some further attempts were made to tamper with the Corporation of Liverpool, for we read as follows a few weeks before the landing of King William in Torbay:—

Mayor to keep Muniments. 1688, September 12th. "Att a Comon Councell then assembled It was ordered nemine contradicente with all submission and humble deference to the power of removing anie officer in this Corporation. That James Prescott Esquire, Maior for the time being shall safelye keepe the Wand, Mace & Sword with all other the reall and personall estate of this Corporaçon and all that concernes y<sup>e</sup> same for the defence of its rights wherewith hee is now entrusted untill a successor bee legallye elected and sworne according to our p'sent Charter & the auncient Custome of this Corporaçon."

1688.  
Convention  
Parliament.

1688, December 29th, the Circular of the Prince of Orange was received by the Corporation, requiring them to send two members to the Convention Parliament, summoned to meet at Westminster on January 22nd, 1689,

"the election to be made by such persons onely as according to the auncient laws and customes of right, ought to choose members for parliament."



The old Jacobite members were rejected, and Richard Lord Colchester, with Thomas Norris of Speke, were returned. Members elected.

1690, June 10th. King William arrived at Chester *en route* for Ireland. It had been expected that he would pass through Liverpool, and the following minute has reference to this probability :— King William's arrival.

“Ordered, that if the King comes to this town, Mr Maior to appoint ten of the Counsel and w<sup>th</sup> other persons he thinks meet to prepare conveniences for his Majest<sup>s</sup> reception and entertainment at y<sup>e</sup> towns charge.”

This, however, was not to be. William went direct from Chester to Hoylake, whence his army encamped on the Leasowe, embarked, and landed at Carrickfergus on the 14th June, four weeks previous to the battle of the Boyne. King William's embarkation.

1690 January 25th “It is order<sup>d</sup> by the Councel, that the Barnes at the lower end of Dale Street be fitted by y<sup>e</sup> Corporation immediately in order to entertain the sick Seamen and Sould<sup>rs</sup> with convenient lodging ; y<sup>e</sup> Corporation to lay downe y<sup>e</sup> money in y<sup>e</sup> meantime, till it can be got from above.” Provision for Sick.

1691, June 3rd. A levy was made of men and horses to recruit the army in Ireland, when the following proclamation was issued in Liverpool. It should be explained that William, the ninth Earl of Derby, had been dismissed from office as Lord-Lieutenant of Lancashire in 1687, and Lord Molyneux appointed in his place. After the Revolution, the latter was in his turn dismissed both from the Lord-Lieutenancy and from the Constablenesship of the Castle of Liverpool, which had been hereditary in the Molyneux family for many generations. To these offices, passing over Lord Derby, the Government appointed Lord Gerard of Brandon, son to the Earl of Macclesfield, whom he soon after succeeded. 1691. Proclamation. Lord-Lieutenancy.

“Liverpolle in Count Lanc<sup>re</sup>.”

“By command of the Right Honourable Charles Lord Brandon Gerard, Lord Lieu<sup>t</sup> of the said County. We require you to warn all the persons

Provision of  
Horses and  
Men.

mentioned in a list hereunto annexed to appear with a very strong Man and Horse of about thirteen pounds price, with a good case of pistols (all other things being provided for them) at Ormskirk the fifteenth day of this instant June, at eleaven of the clocke the same day. And every of them is to bring fower days pay and a proportion of amm<sup>c</sup>on as the law directs; and you the said Constable are to be then and there present to make appear what you have done in execucion hereof. No person concerned herein is to faile at his p<sup>r</sup>ill.

“Given under our hands and seales the third day of June Anno Regni Gulielmi et Mariæ Angl. Rex et Regina (*sic*) tertio ann<sup>o</sup>que Domini 1691.”

Lyme and  
Richmond  
restored.

One of the first acts of the Council, after the accession of William III., was to restore Oliver Lyme and Silvester Richmond to the offices from which they had been illegally dismissed in 1687.

Charters.

The question of the Charters was now revived with considerably acrimony. The charter of Charles II., which constituted the Council an exclusive self-elected body, had been a source of discontent from the time of its surreptitious

Controversy.

grant; that of James II. had been cast aside by common consent. The Jacobites, who were as far as possible supported by Lord Molyneux, naturally upheld the existing charter, whilst the majority of the burgesses were anxious to obtain a new one on broader and more liberal principles. Hence the town became divided into two parties, the Old Charter and New Charter men.<sup>1</sup> The first trial of strength

Election.

took place in 1694, upon the election of a member to succeed Lord Colchester, who had been called to the Upper House by the decease of his father, Earl Rivers. There were two candidates—Jasper Maudit, on the Whig or New Charter interest, and Thomas Bretherton, on the Jacobite or Old Charter side.

1694.  
Maudit and  
Bretherton.

The election came off on December 4th, 1694, when Maudit polled 400 votes and Bretherton 15. The Mayor,

<sup>1</sup> The Norris Papers, published by the Chetham Society in 1846, contain some very interesting correspondence on this subject.

Alexander Norris, nevertheless returned Bretherton as duly elected, who took his seat accordingly. Maudit petitioned against the return, and was heard at the bar of the House on January 11th, 1695, when it was unanimously resolved that Bretherton's election was null and void, and Maudit was voted in his place. The account in the Record is as follows :—

“ 1695 Alex<sup>r</sup> Norris arm. Maior

“ Upon the death of the late Earl Rivers about Aug<sup>t</sup> in the year 1694 y<sup>e</sup> L<sup>d</sup> Colchester his son, being one of the Burgesses to sit in Parliam<sup>t</sup> for this Corpora<sup>o</sup>n, hee was called up to the House of Lords in the room of his father, by which a vacancy was then here in the said Burgesship. Thereupon a new writ issued out from the Clerke of y<sup>e</sup> Crown to elect another member to sit in Parliam<sup>t</sup> in his room, and upon the 4th of December 1694 Jasper Maudit Esq was duly elected and chosen by about four hundred freemen. But Alexander Norris y<sup>e</sup> then Mai<sup>r</sup> to gratifie some persons, return'd one Thomas Bretherton, who had but about fifteen votes, upon which y<sup>e</sup> said Mr Maudit petico<sup>n</sup>ed the House of Comons, and the eleaventh of January following was appointed by y<sup>e</sup> House to hear the same ; when the said Mr Bretherton was turned out of the House of Commons, and Mr Maudit was by y<sup>e</sup> whole House (nemine contradicente) voted in. And the said Alexand<sup>r</sup> Norris for his false returne, was by the Parliam<sup>t</sup> comitted to the custody of y<sup>e</sup> Sargeant at Armes, where hee lay about seaven weeks, and afterwards upon y<sup>e</sup> intercession of many friends to the House, hee was brought to y<sup>e</sup> Barr of y<sup>e</sup> said House, where upon his knees, hee confessing his falt and begging pardon, hee was severely reprimanded, and order<sup>d</sup> to be discharg<sup>d</sup>, paying his fees ; and a New Charter being obtain<sup>d</sup> the said Alexander Norris was turned out of his Maioralty, and Thomas Johnson Sen<sup>r</sup> was nominated by his Majestie to be Mai<sup>r</sup> in his room, and upon the third day of Octob<sup>r</sup> 1695, hee was sworne by Thomas Norris and Jasper Maudit Esq<sup>s</sup> and took the office upon him accordingly, as also was Richard Norris and Levinus Henstoun, Merchants, his two Bayliffs.”

Norris  
summoned.

Bretherton  
rejected.

Norris  
punished.

Johnson  
Mayor.

The application for a new charter was vigorously pressed, though violently opposed by the exclusive party in the Council, whose tactics were vexatious delays. During the interval, whilst the subject was in litigation, the following entry occurs in the Council proceedings :—

New Charter.

“ 1695 March 29<sup>th</sup> Alex<sup>r</sup> Norris Arm<sup>r</sup> Maior

“ At a Comon Councell then present

“ The Maior

“ Rev<sup>d</sup> Rich<sup>d</sup> Richmond, Rector of Walton

“ the 2 Baylives, Town Clerk, 7 Aldermen

“ and 23 others

Defence of  
Old Charter.

“ Whereas there are endeavours used to take away from this Corporacon or to make voyd one Charter granted by his late Majesty King Charles the second of blessed memory, and exemplified in the third year of the reign of King William and Queen Mary to the said Corporacon, and whereby is given to the same Corporacon many great priviledges, advantages and immunities; It is this day therefore order<sup>d</sup> by us in Councell whose names are subscribed, that the Mai<sup>r</sup> and Baylives of this Corporacon shall by such lawful means and wayes as they shall be advised to use their utmost endeavours to p<sup>r</sup>serve the said Charter. And that the said Maior and Baylives of this burrough & Corporacon and all such persons as they shall employ to that purpose, shall be indemnified and sav<sup>d</sup> harmlesse by this Corporacon and at the charg thereof, for what they or any of them shall act or do in order to the p<sup>r</sup>misses. And that such summe or summs of money as they or any of them shall lay out or expend to the end afores<sup>d</sup> shall be reimburs<sup>d</sup> them and every of them out of the Publick Stock of this Corporacon.

Costs of  
defence.

“ Signed by the Mayor and 31 Councillors.”

1695.  
Provisions of  
New Charter.

The charter of 1695 was intended to restore the liberties and authority of the burgesses at large, which had been usurped by the self-elected Council, but in reality it settled nothing. The members of the Council were to remain in office during good behaviour, unless removed for a reasonable cause by the Mayor, Bailiffs and Common Council. When any vacancy occurred, it was to be filled up

“ by such persons in such manner, time and form as in that particular was used and accustomed before the making of a certain Charter . . . of the late King Charles the second.”

The complaint had been that the Council had usurped the rights of the burgesses by filling up the vacancies in their own body, and it was expected that under the New Charter the elections would revert to the general body. The Council, on the other hand, contended that inasmuch as the practice of self-election had been the rule with few exceptions from the

Self-election.



reign of Elizabeth, this was really the mode of election sanctioned by the charter. Attempts were made at several periods to change the system in the popular direction, more especially in 1735, during the Mayoralty of James Earl of Derby, who took a warm interest on the popular side, but the project was frustrated by his death during his term of office ; again in 1753 and 1791 similar attempts were made, but although victorious in the Courts, the appellants were worn out, and obliged to withdraw through want of funds.

Efforts at Reform.

“ 1695 Oct<sup>r</sup> 4<sup>th</sup> Att a Councell &c. Thos Johnson Sen<sup>r</sup> Maior.

“ Mr Thomas Alanson, Mr Richard Jones and Mr John Crowther, refusing to take y<sup>e</sup> oathes of Comon Councell men, being nominated (amongst others) in y<sup>e</sup> New Charter to be so (they duly qualifying themselves) are discharged and by y<sup>e</sup> gen<sup>l</sup> vote of y<sup>e</sup> Councell (nemine contradicente) Mr James Benn, Mr Edmund Lievsay, and Mr Peter Eaton, are chosen Comon Councell men in their room and were accordingly sworne. Mr Rob<sup>t</sup> Seacome also afterwards refused.”

Refusal and changes.

Some of the Councillors were not so scrupulous. Out of the twenty-three who signed the resolution in defence of the charter of Charles II. on the 29th of March, seven, on the 9th October following, signed an equally strong manifesto on behalf of the new charter. It was as follows :—

1695 Oct<sup>r</sup> 9<sup>th</sup> Att a Councell &c. Thos Johnson Sen<sup>r</sup> Maior.

“ Whereas several p<sup>rs</sup>ons within this burrough have layd out several summs of money in order to recover the former Charter of King Charles the first, and so to restore our auncient priviledges ; which hath been by great charg and industry effected. It is order<sup>d</sup> that all persons who do make it evidently appear that they have laid out money on that occasion shall be repaid out of the town stock, now due or accrewing due, proporconally to their advances as to time & money so advanced or may be further advanc<sup>d</sup> for the defence of the same.” Signed by the Mayor and 24 Councillors.

Payment expenses.

1695, November 6th. Further secessions took place.

“ Alderman Richard Windall and Ald<sup>m</sup> Thomas Tyrer being this day sent for and required to continue Aldermen, and to be of the Councell, refusing the same, they are hereby discharged from being Aldermen or being of the Councell according to the intent and meaning of this pr<sup>s</sup>t Charter.

Secessions.

“Mr John Thomas, having been frequently sent for, and making frivolous excuses not to appear to take the oathes, and act as Comon Councill man of this burrough, hee is hereby discharged from being a Councill man of the same.”

A considerable amount of litigation arose out of this question of the Charter. Alexander Norris, the rejected Mayor, retained in his hands the plate and books of the Corporation, and refused to deliver them up; whereupon the following resolution was passed:—

Norris retains  
Plate.

Proceedings.

1695 October 28th. “It is this day ordered in Councill, That if Mr Alexand<sup>r</sup> Norris do not deliver up the Plate, books and all other things belonging to the Corporation on Fryday next Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> be requested to take such speedy legal methods for the recovery of them as Counsell learn<sup>d</sup> in the law shall advise him to, and to be at the Town’s charg<sup>e</sup>.”

Reference and  
Negotiations.

“1696 June 29<sup>th</sup> Att a Councell &c Thos Johnson Jun<sup>r</sup> Mayor.  
“Itt is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell. That whereas there is a suit depending betweene the Corpora<sup>c</sup>on and Mr Alex<sup>r</sup> Norris late Mai<sup>r</sup> about y<sup>e</sup> town’s Plate &c deliv<sup>d</sup> unto y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Norris, the s<sup>d</sup> difference shall be refr<sup>d</sup> to Mr Mai<sup>r</sup>, Alderm<sup>n</sup> Thomas Johnson Jr, Mr Richard Norris, and Mr Levinus Heuston, Baylives, Mr Wm Preeson, Mr Thomas Luretinge, Mr James Benn, to treat with y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Alexander Norris, hee y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Alex<sup>r</sup> Norris first deliv<sup>r</sup>ing into y<sup>e</sup> hands of Mr Maior all y<sup>e</sup> town’s Plate, and all other things that belong to y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>c</sup>on, now in y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Alexander Norris’s possession (or any other by his appointm<sup>t</sup>) Then y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Alexand<sup>r</sup> Norris shall have his choice either to leave y<sup>e</sup> charges att law in defence of the late Charter to the above named persons, or to y<sup>e</sup> whole Councell.”

Disputes with  
Cheese-  
mongers.

The Council, in this matter of the charter, had not only to contend with the internal division; their old enemies the cheesemongers of London, who had long smarted under what they considered the exactions of Liverpool, had then a suit pending against the Corporation. They now petitioned the Lords Justices against the new charter, praying to be relieved from the port and town dues of 4d. and 12d. per ton for all cheese shipped in the Mersey. In this petition the cheesemongers allege that when the Lord Mayor wrote to inquire about the authority to levy these dues, the reply of the Liverpool Corporation was—

Petition.

“‘They have a thousand pounds to spend, and the Cheesemongers may take their course at law.’ They say further that ‘it was long before process could be served on the Corporation by reason of the menaces to any that should serve them with it; and being at length served on them by an attorney of the town, they caused him to be suspended of his practice in their town, and forced him to send for a mandamus to be restored.’”

This petition was presented in July, 1695, and on the 2nd September occurs the following entry:—

“Whereas a suit is now depending betweene y<sup>e</sup> Cheesemongers of Application London and this Corpora<sup>con</sup>, and by reason of the alteration of y<sup>e</sup> Coyn, <sup>for Loan.</sup> the Corpora<sup>con</sup> cannot get in their money due on int<sup>st</sup> and a considerable sume of money is or will be necessary for y<sup>r</sup> right to be vindicated; Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> and Baylives are desired & authorized to take such methods as they shall think proper and convenient for to take, for y<sup>e</sup> advancement of money to carry on the said suit, and the expence thereof to be at the charg of y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>con</sup> and Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> and the p<sup>st</sup> Baylives to be indemnified.

“Signed THOS JOHNSON Jun<sup>r</sup> Mayor  
“ & 26 others.”

The cheesemongers did not succeed in their opposition, <sup>Dues</sup> but there must have been some illegality in the proceedings of <sup>refunded.</sup> the Corporation, as an action was entered against them, which was protracted until the year 1700, when ultimately they had to refund £68 5s. 6d. for dues overpaid, with taxed costs, £176 10s.

The proceedings at the Council Meetings were conducted with considerable formality.

1673, Decr 3<sup>d</sup> James Jerrom Maior.

At an Assembly &c “It is ordered that for the more due order in Council proposing matters in Councell, the Maior proposeing any matter there, due <sup>Council Meetings.</sup> audience and observance shall bee given thereunto by the rest of the Councell without interrup<sup>con</sup>. And then or at any during the tyme <sup>Respect to the Mayor.</sup> that matters shall be in propounding these, any of the Councell shall not intermix in discourse in their own or other business, save only the p<sup>sent</sup> <sup>Talking not allowed.</sup> matter in hand, upon payne of three shillings and foure pence a peece upon every default. And that after the Maior hath made his proposes every Alderman in his course, and after, all the rest in their places shall have liberty to speake to the matter then in hand without interruption of <sup>Liberty of</sup> any of the Councell out of their places, upon payne of three shillings & <sup>speech.</sup> four pence upon every default.”

1685, Nov 18<sup>th</sup> Oliver Lyme Esquire Maior.

Council  
debates.  
Notice in  
writing.

"It is resolved and ordered, for the avoiding of disorder in debating matters in Councill; That all matters w<sup>ch</sup> shalbee proposed and debated in Councill, shall by way of petition bee drawne in writing by the towne clerke & presented to Mr Maior att least two daies before the Councill sitt, by w<sup>ch</sup> meanes the persons concerned & the matter in hand may bee more perfectlie knowne.

Freedom of  
debate.

"Ordered, That everie person in Councill shall have free and full libertie to speake orderlie unto what shallbee debated and give his reasons for or against, without interruption, & passe his vote when required.

No  
interruption.

"Ordered, That everie person in Councill shall diligentlie attend to such matters as shalbee proposed & debated. And shall not enter into other discourse than the matter in hand till all the votes be passed.

Voting.

"Ordered, That when Mr Maior hath given his vote, the towne clerke shall call the next person in order, & soe proceed from person to person till the whole Councill have passed their votes, and shall then take the number of votes exactlie, and draw up an ord<sup>r</sup> accordinglie, w<sup>ch</sup> shalbee read in Councill, that each person may take notice of it.

Fines.

"Ordered, That everie person in Councill who shall not observe y<sup>e</sup> above orders or shall interrupt another person in his orderlie speaking to Mr Maior, shall forfeite the sume of five shillings for everie such offence."

This was not allowed to be a dead letter. We read—

"1686 March 3<sup>d</sup> At a Councill &c it was ordered by Mr Maior y<sup>e</sup> Aldermen & rest of the Councill, that Thomas Warmingham be fined in y<sup>e</sup> sume of five shillings for interrupting Ald<sup>r</sup> Richmond in his orderlie speakinge to the matter in debate in Councill.—A warrant issued out."

Expulsion.

Absence from the Council Meetings was punished by fine, and if continued, by expulsion.

Fines for  
Absence.

"1678 Mar 6<sup>th</sup> At an Assembly &c John Chorley Gent Maior, Ordered, that Edward Greene, John Lurting and Thomas Galloway shall paye sixe shillings & eight pence ~~þ~~ peece for this daies absence from the Councill; for w<sup>ch</sup> a warrant to be signed by Mr Maior and delivered to the Bailives."

Expulsion for  
Neglect.

"1680, Octr 18. Thomas Clayton, Merchant, Maior.  
"Att a Councill then held. It was ordered by Mr Maior, Aldermen & Councill; That Alderman Thomas Chapman for his wilfull and constant neglect to appeare in Councill bee from henceforward discharged from y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Councill & is hereby discharged."

1685, January 11<sup>th</sup>. "Wee p'sent Mr David Poole, one of y<sup>e</sup> Baylives of this burrough for absenting himselfe from Mr Maior & not p'forming his duetie on sixe Saturdaies & seaven Court daies w<sup>thout</sup> Mr Maior's licence 20<sup>li</sup>."

Poole  
presented.

On the 12<sup>th</sup> April following, occurs the following entry:—

"Wee p'sent Mr David Poole p'sent Baylive, for defrauding the poore



of three large peeces of Irish beefe w<sup>ch</sup> hee seized & tooke on the 23<sup>rd</sup> day of Januarie last & converted to his own use.

"Wee also p'sent the said Mr Poole for neglect of his office and duetie from the eight day of Februarie to the twentieth day of March last who was sixe weekes in towne & in all that time never but once came to be advised by Mr Maior, what was by him to bee done for the Corporation slighting Mr Maior and neglectinge y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>co</sup>ns concernes. As alsoe for raising a false, scandalous and base report against Mr Maior, S<sup>r</sup> Hugh Middleton, Lievet<sup>nt</sup> Fortescue, Mr Richmond and Ald<sup>n</sup> Tarleton, viz<sup>t</sup> That they were at Mrs Moorcrofts house on Sunday in the evening, & there quarrelled & hadd swords drawne & afterwards sent for musick & fiddlers."

The meetings of the Council from time immemorial have been held, with the exception of a very short period in 1677-8, on the first Wednesday in every month, and are still so continued. Days of Meeting.

1672 Sept 4<sup>th</sup> Lawr. Brownlow Merch<sup>t</sup> Maior.

"Ordered, that the first Wednesday in every month the Councell are to meet in the townhall about one of the clock in the afternoone to make freemen, upon penalty on every one that hath notice and absents w<sup>th</sup>out reasonable excuse to forfeit six shillings and eight pence, and all that desire to be free may attend. Ordered further

"That upon the same day from henceforth the Townhall bell shall toll to give notice to the Maior & Councell. And upon such notice such of the Councell as shall make default without reasonable excuse or lycence from Mr Maior & not appeare to attend the Maior in decent manner in cloakes or coats shall forfeit as aforesaid." Bell to toll.

This wearing of gowns is continually set forth, and various successive enactments are made insisting on and enforcing the custom. This may appear in modern eyes puerile and absurd, but there is good reason underlying the practice. The ordinary garb of tradesmen and small merchants, who constituted the Council, was but of a rough and coarse description, and if an air of decency and respectability was to be maintained, some provision of this kind was absolutely necessary. A gown was easily slipped on, and imparted something of dignity and formality. That such was the object is evident from the fact that in some of the orders given cloaks might be substituted for gowns. Gowns and Cloaks.

1672.  
Gowns of  
Officials.

"1672 Nov 6<sup>th</sup> Silvester Richmond Maior.

"Att an Assembly &c. It is ordered in pursuance of former orders that the Maior of this Corporacon, the Aldermen, Baylives and Baylive's peeres, Town clerk and Serjeant at Mace shall have and provide gownes fitt and convenient in decent manner to attend the Maior at festivall & usuall days. And that every of the same p'sons w<sup>ch</sup> beare or have borne such offices as aforesaid and are not legally devested, that shall not provide & fitt themselves or himselfe w<sup>th</sup> gownes as aforesaid att or before Christmas day next, shall each of them making defalt herein forfeit the sume of five pounds. And it is also ordered that the p'sons aforesaid shall for decency and distinction in this ancient Corporacon weare theire respective gownes every Sabbath day upon payne of six shillings and eight pence for every Alderman's defalt and iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> for every other officer making defalt."

### At the same Assembly

Serjeant at  
Mace.

"It is ordered that the Serjeant at Mace shall give notice in writing to every one of the Comon Councell of theire day and tyme of attending the Maior in Councell. And upon such due notice given, every one of the Councell making defalt & not attending the Maior at the houre in such sumons in writing appointed, or precisely w<sup>th</sup>in halfe an houre after, shall forfeit three shillings and foure pence."

Presentment  
for lack of  
Gowns.

"1672 Jany 27 At a Portmoot

"Wee present Alderman Tho. Andoe for want of a gowne according to a former order 5<sup>li</sup>.

"Item John Lurting for comeing to Church without his gowne accord- to the same order 3<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>."

"1674 Feby 8<sup>th</sup> Portmoot

"Wee present William Gardner for not wearing his gowne upon the Lord's day viz<sup>t</sup> 31<sup>st</sup> January."

Many items of a similar kind occur in subsequent years.

Penalties for  
Wearing  
Gowns.

"1685 Jany 6<sup>th</sup> At a Councell &c Oliver Lyme Esq Maior.

"Ordered That noe persons by law disabled for government or place of trust shall hereafter p'sume to weare gownes (as if they were in office) and that notice shalbee given them of this ord<sup>r</sup> to avoid the penaltie w<sup>ch</sup> may bee inflicted on them for the breach hereof."

The officials of the Corporation were to be similarly decorated.

Cloaks and  
Coats.

1676, May 3<sup>rd</sup>. "Ordered that the Serjeant and Water Baylive shall have either (each) a cloak, the Bellman coat & capp, and the Porter of the Exchang a coat att the charge of the towne, the last not to exceed xx<sup>s</sup> in value, dureing pleasure of the Maior."

1691, Novèmber 7<sup>th</sup>. "It is ordered that y<sup>e</sup> Water Baylive shall have

a coat dureing his office at the town's charg, and a silver oar, w<sup>ch</sup> shall annually be return<sup>d</sup> as y<sup>e</sup> town's plate."

The Mayor was allowed his guard of honour.

"1672, Octr 28<sup>th</sup> Ordered that Evan Gerrard, Edmund Whalley, Halberdiers. Edward Ricroft and William Galley, shall be Halbeerters to attend Mr Maior upon all occasions and that two of them shall be ready to waite on the said Maior every day by theire turnes; the said Maior and Aldermen to allow the said Halbeerters what they think fitt for theire paines."

1696, December 3rd. "Rich<sup>d</sup> Mercer and John Parry, Musitians peticon for each of them a cloak at y<sup>e</sup> Corporations charg' (they being Waits thereunto) it is granted."

Frequent references are made to the plate belonging to Plate. the Corporation.

1667. Charles, Earl of Darbie, Maior.

"Memorand' this xxx<sup>th</sup> day of Septemb', By the consent of the Alder- 1667. Gilt Bowl. men viz' Mr Henry Corleyes, Mr. Chandler, Mr Lurting and Mr Sturzaker did deliver into the hands of Thomas Norbury now Churchwarden of the Church or Chappell of Liv'poole one great gilded Bowle with a cover, one lesser gilded bowle, being unserviceable, by consent and assent afores<sup>d</sup>; to be made into twoe convenient silver bowles for the Church use; and one Plate. little privat mace for the towne's use; the same bowles so delivered being in weight 2<sup>h</sup> 10 oz, 2 drames & a halfe, neither of w<sup>ch</sup> said bowles or boxe had any inscripcon, manifesting them to be the gift of any p'ticular p'son."

1668, January 1st. Charles, Earl of Darbie, Maior.

"Memorandū that upon this day, The right hono<sup>ble</sup> Charles Earl of 1668. Mace given. Darby &c our noble Lord and late Maior of this burrough of Liverpoole, presented and gave to this towne a most noble guift viz' A great large Mace of Silver most richly guilt & engraven w<sup>th</sup> his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s Armes and the Armes of this towne viz' the Leaver, with his owne name inscribed there-upon in two places thereof specifyeing it to be his free guift."

The plate seems somewhat to have diminished within this period. The last inventory is dated 22nd October, 1675.

"A list of Plate & Books belonging to the towne delivered by the late List. Maior to the p'sent Maior."

"2 Silver Flagons, Gift of S<sup>r</sup> William Bucknall.

"2 Tankards, instead of bottome of great Salte, cover of gilded Cupp.

"Cann given by Mr Secome.

"2 Silver Bekers } changed for other plate viz' 2 Silver

"1 Caudle Cupp & Cover } Tankards & 2 belly Cupps w<sup>th</sup> handles.

"1 great gilded Cupp.

“ 1 Wine bowl gilded.

“ 1 Boule, gift of Mr Edwards.

“ 12 Silver Spoones.

“ 2 Silver Wine Cupps.

1690. Tobacco Box. “ 1690, Octr 24 Tho<sup>s</sup> Brookbank Maior.

“ It is this day Ord<sup>d</sup> in Councel, that the two bellied Silver Cupps (referred to above) are order<sup>d</sup> to be mad a tobacco box and stopper for y<sup>e</sup> towne's use and soe to goe from Maior to Maior, which two Cupps are to be struck out of y<sup>e</sup> Catalogue of y<sup>e</sup> towne's plate now deliver'd to Mr Maior.”

Snuff Box.

This box, now used as a snuff-box at the Mayor's table, bears the following inscription :—“ The Corporation of Liverpoole's Box, 1690.” It is, with the exception of the Regalia, the only piece of plate which has been handed down to the present time.

Great care was taken of the Common Seal.

Common Seal.

“ 1680, Sept 1<sup>st</sup>. Will. Williamson Esq Maior.

“ Att an Assembly &c It was ordered, That the Common Seale of this burrough and Corporation bee kept secure in the Ironbound chest under five lockes; and the trustees appointed to keep the keyes thereof are, the Maior for the time beinge; the eldest Alderman for the time beinge, the youngest Alderman for the time beinge; Alderman Silvester Richmond & Alderman Robert Williamson.”

The Corporation have always been very jealous of any infringement of their jurisdiction, or want of acknowledgment of their authority.

Fines for Non-homage.

“ 1691 Octr 26 At a Port Moot

“ Wee p'sent for not paying Homadg to y<sup>e</sup> Grand Port Moote and Octob<sup>r</sup> Quarter Sessions of this burrough, they being free thereof.

“ Jno Birchley and 39 others 12<sup>d</sup> a peece £2.”

The increasing importance of the town led to the erection of the old Town Hall in 1673, which is thus referred to :—

Erection of Town Hall.

“ 1673 Jany 7<sup>th</sup> Jacobus Jerrom Maior.

“ Ordered that a handsome building for a Townhall & Exchange shall bee built at the high Cross in Leverpoole and the same sett upon pillars and forthwith sett out as Mr Maior shall think meete.”

Blome's description.

Richard Blome, who visited Liverpool the same year, thus refers to this building in his *Magna Britannia* :—

“ Here is now erecting at the publick charge of the Mayor Aldermen



&c a famous town house, placed on pillars and arches of hewn stone, and underneath is the publick exchange for the merchants."

"1679 Nov 26<sup>th</sup> Att an Assembly &c.

"Ordered that a guard house bee builte att the south end of the Exchange, with a roome over it, att publicke charge."

"1686 Sept 1<sup>st</sup> Ordered "that by reason of y<sup>e</sup> severall abuses done by Regulations. such as sell routes att the Exchange by stopping upp the streetes & passages to shopps; the former order for double toll for all routes sould att the Exchange from henceforth to be null and void. And that all sorts of routes w<sup>ch</sup> come to bee sould in this burrough shall be brought to the fish house or as neere thereunto as convenientlie they may, there to be disposed of."

"1700 Sept 20. Cuth Sharples Esq Maior.

"Ald<sup>m</sup> Thomas Sweeting in consideracon of one hundred & twenty Shops let to pounds sterl. is to have y<sup>e</sup> shops under y<sup>e</sup> Exchange and y<sup>e</sup> town ware- Sweeting. house (near y<sup>e</sup> prison) w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> accustomed priviledges belonging thereunto; y<sup>e</sup> first at 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup>, y<sup>e</sup> other at 3<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> p<sup>er</sup> ann. for three lives."

The commerce of Liverpool was now bursting through the Commerce. petty limits within which it had hitherto been restricted, and the names of eminent merchants begin to appear. Amongst these the Claytons and Cleveland were distinguished. The Claytons came from Fullwood, near Preston.

"1680, Octr 6<sup>th</sup> Ordered, that Mr. Thomas Clayton Merchant bee Clayton admitted free, paieing twentie pounds fine. And upon the eighteenth day Mayor. of the s<sup>d</sup> month hee tooke the oathes of Allegiance and Supremacie & the oath of a freeman and of a Common Councill Man."

On the 18th of the same month he was elected Mayor. His brother, William Clayton, filled the civic chair in 1689, and represented the borough in six parliaments, from 1698 to 1708.

The Cleveland, who came from Leicestershire, settled about the same time. In 1680, September 1st, and in January, 1681:—

"At a Portmoot Wee present Mr Richard Cleaveland for usinge the Cleveland facultie of a freeman (in buying and sellinge sugars) hee not being free." presented.

He applied for a writ of *certiorari*, but afterwards withdrew it. The nascent West India trade was too important to be stifled by such narrow-minded restrictions, and the Cleveland

Cleveland  
Mayor.

were admitted into the Corporation. John Cleveland was Bailiff in 1691, Mayor in 1703, and Member from 1710 to 1713. William Cleveland represented the borough at the time of his death, in 1722. Clayton and Cleveland Squares preserve the names of these early mercantile magnates.

Sir Cloudesley  
Shovel

Amongst the persons of rank admitted to the freedom from time to time, we find, in 1690, the name of the naval hero, Admiral Sir Cloudesley Shovel.



## CORPORATE ESTATE AND REVENUES.

---

Within a few years after the Restoration the landed estate of the Corporation began to acquire importance. It has been noticed in the last chapter, that in 1650 an order was made for enclosing and utilising a portion of the Common lands lying between Park Lane and the seaside, to the extent of about twenty-five acres. Bricks were made, and it is to be presumed that buildings were erected.

In the year 1668 a dispute arose, the result of which has had an important bearing on the Corporate estate down to the present time. The sagacity, shrewdness, and pertinacity displayed by the local authorities of the period reflects great credit upon them, and entitles them to grateful remembrance.

The lands originally belonging to the Corporation included a large town field at the north end, and various detached plots east and south of the pool and brook. In 1309, Edmund Earl of Lancaster presented to the burgesses six large acres of moss, afterwards called Mosslake Fields, the present site of Abercromby and Falkner Squares, &c. The Great Heath, which extended from Whitechapel eastward to Crown Street, was always claimed by the burgesses. It was the site of the shooting butts, and the place of gathering for the military and public demonstrations.

The differences with the Molyneux family were of long standing. Their respective interests seemed to come into collision on a variety of points. Besides claims arising out of disputed territory, the Molyneuxs were the fee-farm lessees under the Crown of the royal revenues, which were a fruitful

Claims.

source of dispute and litigation. In 1617 an attempt was made by Sir Richard Molyneux to establish a claim to the Common, which was successfully resisted, as appears from the following document :—

Claim to Heath.

“ 1617 July 11<sup>th</sup> At an Assemblie holden in the Comon halle before Richard Moore gent Maior &c.

“ It was agreed as followeth ; that whereas it was then credibly informed that S<sup>r</sup> Richard Mollineux, Knight and Baronett, w<sup>th</sup> the Copihoulders of West derbie would the same daie enter w<sup>th</sup>in the liberties of our towne and heath, belonginge thereto, and chalendge p<sup>te</sup> of the same as belonginge to West darbie aforesaid, that the said Maior and King's Bailiffe for the towne shall meete the said S<sup>r</sup> Richard Mollineux and West darbie men at their first entrance w<sup>th</sup>in the towne's liberties, and there make knowne unto them that tyme out of mind the liberties w<sup>ch</sup> wee clayme have belonged to ou<sup>r</sup> towne, and that wee have evydence to maintaine the same w<sup>ch</sup> wee will shewe to them that it shall concerne when occacon shall s<sup>ve</sup>.”

Alderman Rose rebuked.

“ It is likewise the same daie ordered y<sup>t</sup> in regard of a denyall made by Mr Edm. Rose Alderm. to the said Maior to goe a message to the heath to certifie some measures and Darbie men that then were measuring the same, that if any Alderman hereafter doe deny to goe in the towne's behalf any reasonable journey havinge his lawfull charges allowed him as hee shalbee by the said Maior appointed, that hee shall forfeite for ev<sup>'ie</sup> such offence x<sup>li</sup> to the towne's use.”

Prysage resisted.

Sir Richard Molyneux, as lessee of the Crown, claimed a duty called “ Prysage ”<sup>1</sup> on all wines imported, in which Liverpool at that time had a considerable trade. This was resisted, whether by the Corporation or the importers does not appear, whereupon the following missive from the Chancery of the Duchy was despatched to the Mayor :—

Mandate from Chancellor of Duchy.

“ 1622 Jany 27<sup>th</sup>

“ Mr Maior

“ Upon the complainte of S<sup>r</sup> Richard Molyneux who is the King's servaunt for the prysage of wyne at his port of Liv'poole where I understand that there is certen French men have brought in wyne of w<sup>ch</sup> they denye unto the officers of the said S<sup>r</sup> Richard prysage for those wyne, And for that I conceive theire course of freedome in other pts of this kingdome may by them be an imboldeninge to make their freedome

<sup>1</sup> *Prisage* (of Wines), a custom for the King to challenge two tuns of wine at his own rate (which is 20s. per tun) out of every ship loaded with wine. It was also called *Butlerage*, and receivable by the King's Chief Butler.—*Bailey*.



soe gen'all as the priviledges of the County Palantyne of Lancaster may be much impeached thereby.—

"Therefore for the p'servacon of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> rights in those Ports within the said county Pallantyne, let me wish you (if the officers of the said S<sup>r</sup> Richard on the behalfe of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> for the said prysage be not satisfied and fully contented) to certifie unto me the names of the owners, bringers, factors servaunts, sellers and buyers of the said shippe and wyne w<sup>th</sup> as much convenient speed as you may, to th' end proces and other p'ceedings may be had against the offenders therein as the law will in such cases, for the sp'ciall maynten'nce of the priviledges of that County.

"This, w<sup>th</sup> my most hartie saluts I rest

"Yo<sup>r</sup> very lovinge frend

"EDWARD MOSLEY."

Charles I., in 1628, sold the Crown rights in the town and lordship of Liverpool, which were afterwards purchased by Lord Molyneux. The setting forth of the parcels is somewhat vague, and does not describe these lands in terms, but Lord Molyneux considered the Commons as part and parcel of his purchase. He was possessed of lands within the borough west of the pool brook, through which he was making a street, (Lord Street, originally Lord Molyneux Street). This street he wished to carry over the stream by a bridge, and so thence over the Common by the line of the present Church Street, and took measures accordingly. The Council took the alarm, and on the 23rd March, 1669, adopted the following resolution :—

Sale of Crown rights to Lord Molyneux.

Lord Street.

"Will' Stanley Lord Strange, Maior.

Council resist.

"Att an Assembly &c. It is ordered that whereas informacon is given to this Assembly that the Lord Molyneux is intending to erect, or cause to be erected a new bridge over some part of the poole or current from the Poole bridge upon the wast or Comon of Liverpoole, w<sup>thout</sup> the lycence & consent of the Maior & burgesses of this town; they and theire predecessors havinge bin tyme out of memory reputed and taken to have the rightful signiory of the same Comon or Wast under his sacred Ma<sup>ty</sup>. And accordingly have enjoyed the same and the royalties and priviledges thereof inviolat to this tyme; and for that such making of a bridge upon the towne's wast w<sup>thout</sup> lycence of, or composicon w<sup>th</sup> the Maior of this towne for the tyme being, may seeme to invade and break in upon the ancient priviledges of this towne; it is hereby ordered by the said Assembly unanimously, that if any attempt shall hereafter be made to lay any foundation or to build any part of the same bridge, the same shall be

Obstruction  
to be removed

forthw<sup>th</sup> obstructed, pulled downe, & layed wast, by such p'son or p'sons as the Maior of this towne or his deputy shall thinck meet & appoint for that purpose; And if any suit or suites shall arise, by the said Lord Mollineux against the said Maior or his deputy for or touchinge the pulling downe of the same bridge or any part thereof, or for obstructing the building thereof; it is hereby ordered that the said Maior or his deputy & all such p'son or p'sons as aforesaid shall be defended and indemnified att the costs and charges of this towne.

“Signed JOHN STURZAKER dep<sup>t</sup> Maior  
“and 29 others.”

1669.  
Proposal for  
treaty.

“1669 April 5<sup>th</sup> Att an Assembly &c It is ordered that whereas Mr John Tatlock, one of the Lord Mollineux his com<sup>rs</sup> hath on the behalfe of his Lo<sup>pp</sup> moved the said Mr John Sturzaker deputy Maior for a treaty betweene this towne and his Lo<sup>pp</sup> in this towne upon Tuesday in the Easter weeke, concerninge the building of a bridge w<sup>ch</sup> his Lo<sup>pp</sup> would build (or hath so given it out) upon the heath or wast of Liverpoole, it is therefore ordered that Mr Alderman Sturzaker deputy Maior, shall w<sup>th</sup> the Aldermen and such of the charterers of this towne as he shall think meet for his assistants, treat with the said Lord Mollineux in the Town Hall or other convenient place to take his p'posalls.”

Works  
commenced.

Nothing came of this interview, and Lord Molyneux commenced his operations by laying down seventy yards of planking, which were removed by James Whitfield and Edward Marsh on behalf of the Corporation. Action was then taken by his Lordship, and thereupon the following resolution was passed:—

Resistance.

“1669 Octr 15<sup>th</sup> Att a Meeting before John Sturzaker dep<sup>t</sup> Maior &c. Itt is ordered, whereas lately James Whitfield and Edward Marsh have lately bin arested by warrant *sur quo minus* out of his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Co<sup>rt</sup> of Excheq<sup>r</sup> at Westminster return' *tres Mich'*is at suite of Mr John Tatlock and the said Mr John Sturzaker, togeth<sup>r</sup> w<sup>th</sup> Edward Moore Esq hath given bond for the appearance of the said James Whitfield & Edward Marsh; that the said Mr John Sturzaker his exec<sup>rs</sup> & adm<sup>rs</sup> shall for ever hereafter be saved harmles, lossles, & indemnified from any suit, cost or trouble w<sup>ch</sup> may at any tyme hereafter happen, ag<sup>t</sup> the s<sup>d</sup> Mr Sturzaker, his Ex<sup>rs</sup> adm<sup>rs</sup> or assignes for, by reason or occasion of the said bond or any suit or suites thereupon'comenced. And that the said suite comenced by the said Mr Tatlock shall be defended at the charge of this burrough, viz<sup>t</sup> of the freemen & burgesses thereof inhabitinge out of the same, as well as those w<sup>ch</sup> inhabit w<sup>thin</sup>.”

Suit to be  
defended.

“1670, Jany 18 Thos Bicksteth, Maior. It is ordered that Mr Arthur Borrow, and Samuell Fazakerley our towne clerk, shall be ymployed as Solicito<sup>rs</sup> for this towne in the suits betweene Mr Jno Tatlock on behalfe of the Lord Mollyneux. agt James Whitfield & Edw<sup>d</sup> Marsh. . . . And

what upon account they disburse w<sup>th</sup> their reasonable fees shall be paid out of the towne's treasury."

" 1670, April 12, Thos Johnson Maior.

" Att an Assembly &c. Whereas at last Assizes the Lord Mollyneux by Mr John Tatlock his trustee had a tryall against Edward Marsh and James Whitfield def<sup>s</sup> on behalfe of the Corporacon w<sup>ch</sup> after full evidence was nonsuited, And whereas Mr Maior was advised by counsell to pull downe the bridg or platt made upon the wast of Liverpoole by ord<sup>r</sup> of the Lo: Mollyneux & to make clayme to the stones & bricke w<sup>ch</sup> have been digged up and made on the same wast w<sup>thout</sup> leave of the said Maior: it is hereby ordered and agreed, that the said act of the said Maior as to pulling downe of the said bridge or platt & making clayme to stone & bricke, shall be & is adjudged to be an act done for the good of the Corporation; And doe further agree and order, that what further act or acts the said Maior w<sup>th</sup> the assistance of the Aldermen shall doe or cause to be done in reference to the premisses shall be allowed by this Assembly; and all p<sup>son</sup> or p<sup>sons</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> have or shall act in the p<sup>misses</sup> by order of the said Maior shall be indemnified & saved harmless at the charge of this Corporation."

Resistance  
sanctioned by  
Council.

" 1671 Jany 16<sup>th</sup> It is ordered that whereas there are now sev<sup>all</sup> suites and differences now depending between the Lord Mollyneux and the Corporation of Liverpoole both in law and equity, and also a contest before the Lords Com<sup>rs</sup> for sale of some of his Ma<sup>s</sup> fee farme rents, the all or some of w<sup>ch</sup> some proceed<sup>r</sup> is expected to be made this ensuinge Hillary terme next; It is now ordered that Thomas Carter late servant to the towne clerke, Mr Sam<sup>l</sup> Fazakerley who hath the last terme bin ymployed at London in the concerns of this towne, & especially concerning the preemption of the Burgage & Chantry rents, in regard of the neare approach of the said terme shall be w<sup>thall</sup> expedition possible sent up to London to attend S<sup>r</sup> Will<sup>m</sup> Bucknall our burges in Parliam<sup>t</sup>."

1671.  
Proceedings  
in London.

Agents.

The Corporation now prepared themselves for every contingency, and were resolved to contest the matter to the bitter end.

" 1671, March 18<sup>th</sup> Thos Johnson gen. Maior.

" At an Assembly &c. Whereas severall suites have bin moved & are now depending betweene John Tatlock pl<sup>t</sup>, James Marsh & Edward Whitfield, on the behalfe of the Lord Mollyneux & also by Henry Parr as lessee of the said John Tatlocke against Samuel Fazakerley in Ejectm<sup>t</sup>. All w<sup>ch</sup> suites concerne the interest & tytle of the Corporation of Liverpoole as to their clayme in the waste grounds of Liverpoole; And also other suites are threatened agt the said Maior for w<sup>th</sup>holding the tolles & other duties & customes of this towne, by the Lo: Mollyneux or some on his behalfe; And whereas also it is agreed by this Assembly, that in case a verdict should passe against the said def<sup>s</sup> or any of them at the next Assizes, that a Writt or Writts of Error shall be sued out & recognizances given for prosecuting thereof according to the statute. It is now ordered,

Suit  
continued.

Writ of Error.



Arbitration  
sanctioned.

that the said Maior, & the said Samuel Fazakerley shall be indemnified at the charge of this Corporation from any costs or charges they shall be exposed unto by reason of the said suites. . . . And also that in case of any overture of peace or finall agreem<sup>t</sup> in or concerninge the said suites att the next Assizes, it shall be in the power of the said Maior on behalfe of the said Corporation to elect & name one or more Arbitrators & to agree to an Umpyre if it shall seeme to him convenient; and the Corporation shall be bound by the Order or Umpirage of such Arbitrators or Umpyre," &c.

Proposal to  
treat.

1671, May 1st. "It is ordered the same day That the said Maior and Mr Corleyes may treat on the behalfe of the Corpora<sup>c</sup>on w<sup>th</sup> Mr Nicholas Fazakerley and Mr John Tatlock on behalfe of the Lord Mollyneux, in ord<sup>r</sup> to composinge or ending of the suites & differences betweene this Corpora<sup>c</sup>on & the Lord Mollyneux or upon theire behalves. And what the said Maior and Mr Corleyes shall agree unto or conclude shall be as bynding as if done by the privity and consent of the whole Assembly. The aforesaid Treaty to be in this towne to-morrow att the howse of Mrs Margery Formby."

The negotiation went forward for some months.

Negotiations.

1671, September 27th. "It is ordered that Mr Maior shall take to his assistance Alderman Thomas Bickesteth to treat w<sup>th</sup> Mr Nicholas Fazakerley and one such other as he shall bring w<sup>th</sup> him to treat in reference to an accommodation or agreement of the differences between this Corporation and the Lord Mollyneux. And whatsoever the said Mr Maior and Mr Bickesteth shall act or doe therein on the behalfe of this Corporation shall be as bynding & as if done w<sup>th</sup> the consent of this whole Assembly."

Agreement  
and terms.

An agreement was ultimately adopted on the following terms. Lord Molyneux was allowed to proceed with his bridge on payment of a nominal rent of twopence per annum. The Corporation to take the Lordship, with all dues and customs, on a lease for 1,000 years, at the annual rent of £30. The burgage rents and ferry were not included. Both parties were satisfied with their bargain, though some disputes arose subsequently. Lord Molyneux obtained the privilege of the bridge, and of a road across the Common (now Church Street), and got a fair return for his outlay in the purchase of the Manor. To the Corporation it was emancipation from a galling yoke, and inquisitorial interference. To neither party was vouchsafed a vision of the splendid future. The tolls and



dues, leased in 1672 for £30 per annum, were sold in 1856 <sup>Value of Dues.</sup> under Parliamentary sanction for £1,500,000, and produced in 1881 a revenue of £260,698.

The confirmation by the Corporation was as follows :—

“ 1672, May 15. Law<sup>r</sup> Brownlow Mayor.

Appointment  
of Trustees.

“ Att an Assembly &c. It is ordered that in a deed or grant from the Lord Mollyneux and Mr John Tatlocke to the use of the Corpora<sup>con</sup> of all the Lord Mollyneux his rights in Liverpoole (the Boats & Ferry only excepted) the p<sup>s</sup>ons hereafter named be nominated trustees.

“ LAWRENCE BROWNLOW Merch<sup>t</sup>  
 “ THOMAS ANDOE Mariner  
 “ HENRY CORLES  
 “ JO<sup>r</sup> CHANDLER  
 “ PETER LURTING  
 “ JO<sup>r</sup> STURZAKER  
 “ THOMAS JOHNSON  
 “ THOMAS BICKESTETH  
 “ JAMES JERROM  
 “ ROBERT SECOME—gent  
 “ SILVESTER RICHMOND  
 “ ROBERT WILLIAMSON  
 “ EDWARD TARLETON.”

These names are worth recording, as being those of the *Patres Conscripti* of the modern port and borough of Liverpool.

So much importance was attached to this document that the following order was passed :—

“ That at the Port Moot Court next after Elecc<sup>on</sup> of a Maior of this Order to be Burrough yearely, this Ord<sup>r</sup> shall be read publickly in the Moot hall, to <sup>read.</sup> the end it may knowne how many are then living.”

The deed was executed, but considerable time elapsed in arranging the details.

1687, January 18th. “ Ordered (nemine contradicente) that James Prescott Esq p<sup>s</sup>ent Maior doe take y<sup>e</sup> Lord Mollineux & Mr Tatlock's deed into his custodie & cause it bee enrolled in the Chancerie of England at this Corpora<sup>con</sup>'s charge.” <sup>Enrollment.</sup>

Disputes arose concerning the conditions and nature of the obligations contained in the deed, which it is not easy now to explain, but the Corporation considered themselves <sup>Disputes about terms.</sup>

warranted in withholding the rent of £30 until these conditions were fulfilled by Lord Molyneux.

Rent refused. "1690 Sept 3. Will. Clayton Esq<sup>r</sup> Maior.

"At a Councell &c It is order<sup>d</sup> y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>sent Baylives do not pay y<sup>e</sup> Lord Molyneux rent, till a deed be p<sup>r</sup>fect<sup>d</sup> according to a former condition, which deed y<sup>e</sup> present Baylives are to enquire for, and take along w<sup>th</sup> them, and y<sup>e</sup> money (y<sup>e</sup> Town Clerk accompanying them) & pay y<sup>e</sup> money on signing y<sup>e</sup> deed."

Town Clerk  
and Recorder  
consulted.

1690, September 19th. "It is then order<sup>d</sup> that Mr Baylive Johnson and the Town Clerk do go to the Recorder on Munday next, to take advice concerning y<sup>e</sup> Lord Mullineux's deed and take y<sup>e</sup> deed and articls along with them, and pursue his directions in the matter, and that y<sup>e</sup> Baylives, Town Clerk, Mr Thomas Brookbank, Mr Richard Houghton, Mr John Hodgson and Mr John Amery do tomorrow look over y<sup>e</sup> papers to see if they can find y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Ld Mullinex's bond."

Indemnity.

1690, October 24th, "It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councel y<sup>e</sup> Alderman William Clayton late Maior, Mr Thomas Johnson, and Mr Edward Crane, late Baylives of this town, shall be indemnified by y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon for their not paying y<sup>e</sup> Ld Molyneux's rent at Michalms last."

"1691, Nov 4<sup>th</sup> Richard Houghton Esq Maior.

Payment of  
arrears  
refused.

"At a Councel &c. Whereas Caryl Lord Viscount Molyneux demanded the arrear of rent from Thomas Brookbanke, late Maior of Liverpoole by Richard Sandford, gentleman, in y<sup>e</sup> Mayoralty of y<sup>e</sup> said Thomas Brookbanke, and also John Tatlocke, gentleman demanded (in right of himself) the further arreares from Richard Houghton Esq prs<sup>t</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup> of Liverpoole on y<sup>e</sup> thirty first day of y<sup>e</sup> last month (severall of y<sup>e</sup> Aldermen then prs<sup>t</sup>) and y<sup>e</sup> said Thomas Brookbanke, Alderman, and Richard Houghton Esq prs<sup>t</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup> of this burrough (with y<sup>e</sup> consent and approbacon of several of y<sup>e</sup> Aldermen) denyed paym<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> same, unlesse y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Caryl Lord Molyneux and his heir, and John Tatlocke gen. sign<sup>d</sup> a deed to y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon pursuant to articles obliging them thereunto; it is this day resolv<sup>d</sup> in Council that y<sup>e</sup> said Richard Houghton Esq prs<sup>t</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup> of Liverpoole and Thomas Brookbanke, Alderman and their Baylives and their success<sup>rs</sup> Mai<sup>rs</sup> and Baylives be indemnified therein, and that if a suit be comēced thereupon, it shall be defended at y<sup>e</sup> town's charg, the arrear of rent being two years at Michl̄m last at thirtie pounds  $\text{p}^{\text{r}}$  ann<sup>m</sup>."

Justification.

1692, October 14th. Lord Molyneux having threatened a suit for the recovery of his arrears of rent against the only surviving trustees, Aldermen Johnson and Seacome, a resolution was passed "denying y<sup>e</sup> paym<sup>t</sup> thereof because y<sup>e</sup> Lord Molyneux hath not p<sup>r</sup>form<sup>d</sup> his p<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> contract, and the said Aldermen Johnson & Seacome shall likewise (if any suit be comēced against them) be defended at y<sup>e</sup> town's charg."

New Deed.

"1692, Nov<sup>r</sup> 2<sup>nd</sup> Joshua Fisher gent Maior.

"It is this day concluded in Councell that a new deed be drawne betweene y<sup>e</sup> towne and Caryl Ld Viscount Molyneux for y<sup>e</sup> said Lord,

William Molyneux Esq and John Tatlocke to sign, and that it be drawn according to y<sup>e</sup> forme of the old one, and the trustees to be nominated in y<sup>e</sup> said deed are to be y<sup>e</sup> persons following viz<sup>t</sup>

- " Ald<sup>n</sup> THOMAS JOHNSON Sen<sup>r</sup> (Mayor in 1670)
- " THOMAS JOHNSON Jun<sup>r</sup> (Mayor in 1695,  
M.P. for Liverpool 1701-22)
- " PETER ATHERTON (Bailiff 1673)
- " DAVID POOLE (Bailiff 1685)
- " JOHN CHORLEY (Mayor 1678)
- " RICHARD HOUGHTON (Mayor 1691)
- " WILLIAM WILLIAMSON (Mayor 1679)
- " WILLIAM CLAYTON (Mayor 1689, M.P. 1701-8)
- " RICHARD WINDALL (Mayor 1681)
- " ROBERT SEACOME (Mayor 1683)
- " JAMES PRESCOTT (Mayor 1687)
- " THOMAS TYRER (Mayor 1688)
- " THOMAS BROOKBANKE (Mayor 1690)."

After being in litigation for thirty years, the matters in dispute were ultimately arranged in the year 1700. The decease of the stalwart old cavalier, Caryl Lord Molyneux, in 1699, no doubt paved the way for this settlement.

The final record is as follows :—

" 1700 Sept 20<sup>th</sup> Cuth. Sharples Esq Maior.

Final

" As to any supposed or real difference between y<sup>e</sup> Hon<sup>ble</sup> Lord Viscount William Molyneux & this Corporacon, it is order<sup>d</sup> in Councell that Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> & whom hee pleased to take to his assistance be desir<sup>d</sup> to attend s<sup>d</sup> Ld Viscount W<sup>m</sup> Molyneux & give fourtie, fiftie or sixtie guineas to putt an end to all differences between that family and this Corporacon and to confirme deeds accordingly."

Final payment.

With the revival of trade and the demand for buildings, the utmost vigilance was required to prevent encroachments on the town lands.

" 1668, William Lord Strange Maior.

1668. "

" March 3<sup>rd</sup> Memorand<sup>d</sup> that Wm Halsall (and others) did breake downe an encroachm<sup>t</sup> or inclosur lately made by Thomas Duke, and also did breake downe some p<sup>t</sup> of a barne lately erected upon the Waste of this towne; and this was so by them done on the behalfe & by speciall order of Mr Maior Aldermen & Baylives & Burgesses of this towne in preservacon of theire clayme & right to the said Waste or Comons according to ancient custome there used &c ag<sup>t</sup> all incroaches."

Encroachments resisted.

Of the two noble families intimately connected with Molyneuxs and Stanleys.

Liverpool, the Molyneuxs, as the records show, were at continual feud with the Corporation. The Stanleys, on the other hand, were usually on the most friendly terms, filling the civic chair, and interchanging courtesies from time to time. William, Lord Strange, was Mayor in 1668. The following year a circumstance took place which shows that the Corporation were always prompt in action to assert their rights, whether against friend or foe.

1669. "1669, Nov 15<sup>th</sup> Thomas Bickesteth gen. Maior.

"Att an Assembly &c It is ordered that whereas a servant of the right hono<sup>ble</sup> the Earle of Darby upon the nynth day of November instant came to Mr Bicksteth Maior of this burrough w<sup>th</sup> a pap<sup>r</sup> in these words viz'

Claim by  
Lord Derby.

"That I have sent to Liverpoole to let them know I would not take the advantage when either I myself or myne were in possession of that part of Liverpoole which is now in possesion of theire towne. I have ordered you to demand of them w<sup>ch</sup> in justice they cannot deny, w<sup>ch</sup> is that they cause quyet possession to be deliv'ed to you on my behalfe of those houses lately erected betwixt my house called the Tower & the Sea,<sup>1</sup> & to this I cannot but expect a ready compliyanse from them.

" C DERBY.

"Lathom 9 Nov '69."

"And demanded an answer of the possession of the houses above menconed to be deliv'ed to him.

"It is ordered att the same Assembly, Mr Baylive Windall & Mr Sam<sup>l</sup> Fazakerley or some other appointed by Mr Maior shall attend his hono<sup>r</sup> w<sup>th</sup> a pap<sup>r</sup> in writing in these words following; what you are to say as followeth. (This afterwards putt off & onely verball answ<sup>r</sup> sent or returned to Mr Jones.)

Corporation's  
reply.

"That the ground whereupon the sev'all houses are built is the rights of the Corporacon, and that they are seized thereof in fee, and that they cannot deliver the possession w<sup>th</sup>out betrayinge the rights of the Corporacon."

No further record relates to this transaction. The Corporation retained possession of this property down to 1883, when it was removed to widen the street.

This was not the only occasion on which the Corporation had to resist the claims of Lord Derby.

<sup>1</sup> This comprised the premises formerly lying between Prison Wient and George's Dock, at the foot of Water Street, which must have cut off his Lordship's residence from a view of the river.



"1698, March 10<sup>th</sup> Thos Sweeting Esq Maior.

1698.

"Att a Councell &c It is this day determined in Councell, that whereas Mr Robert Roper did on the fourth day of this ins<sup>t</sup> March speak to Mr Maior concerning the improvem<sup>ts</sup> on y<sup>e</sup> Comon asserting that the Lord of Derby is a *Charterer*<sup>1</sup> (amongst others) and expected a proporcon of the same; Now this Councell doth order, that a verbal answer be return<sup>d</sup> to the Lord of Derby viz<sup>t</sup> That the Corpora<sup>co</sup>n are sufficiently satisfied that they are Lords of all the Wast & Comon within y<sup>e</sup> liberties of Liverpoole, & will support the justice of their cause, and will be at the charg of defending the title; and Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> is requested to take due advice for y<sup>e</sup> defence of the Corporations title, and y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup> shall be indemnified for any thing he does therein for y<sup>e</sup> advantage of y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>co</sup>n & shall be reimbursed any charg that hee shall expend therein."

Lord Derby's claim of allotment.

Declined.

Edward Moore, of the Old Hall, Oldhall Street, and of Bank Hall, Kirkdale, created Baronet in 1675, was the owner of considerable property in the town, which came into collision at various points with the Corporation. He has left on record, in the *Moore Rental*, his opinion of the characters of the leading men of the borough, which is very unfavourable, embittered, doubtless, by his own unpopularity, and his continual disputes with the Corporation, many of which are entered on the records.

Moore property.

"1672, June 5<sup>th</sup> Laur. Brownlowe, Merch<sup>t</sup> Maior.

Moore's encroachment resisted.

"At an Assembly &c. It is this day ordered by the Maior, Aldermen, Baylives & Councel. That Edward Moore Esq<sup>r</sup> and his servants and workmen shall be forthwith interrupted in the building of the stone wall alreadie begun at the sea side upon the Wasts of Liverpoole (west of the feilds in holding of Thomas Andoe, Alderman & another feild called Lancelots feild) in such manner as the said Mr Maior shall think meet. And that the said Maior and all and everie p<sup>er</sup>son and p<sup>er</sup>sons by him comanded or appointed, to give such interrup<sup>co</sup>n or disturbance to the said Edward Moore or his servants in the building thereof shall be defended and saved harmless at the publick charge of this towne."

A memorandum follows that—

"Mr Robert Moore at first discented & gave his reason of dissent, that he would not subscribe ag<sup>t</sup> his nephew Moore. Nev<sup>er</sup>theless he afterwards subscribed his name the last of all the Councell."

<sup>1</sup> "Charterer," in the vernacular of the district, signified a Freeholder.

1672.  
Obstruction  
resisted.

"1672, June 10<sup>th</sup> By order of the Maior, William Mulliney Serjeant at Mace, and William Galley Sub-customer, about seven in the morninge, disturbed Mr Moore's workmen in building a wall at the seaside and gave them warninge in the said Maior's name to desist working then of the same wall as they would answer. And then and there the said Serjeant and William Galley putt downe one stone at either end of the said wall and one stone in the middle."

At the Port Moot immediately succeeding, it is entered—

Further  
disputes.

"Wee present Edw<sup>d</sup> Moore Esq for building a wall along the Sea Brow upon the Wasts of Liverpoole iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>."

"1673 Sept. 3<sup>rd</sup> Silvester Richmond ar. Maior.

"Att an Assembly &c It is ordered that it be referred to Mr Maior and Mr Robert Roper, to treat w<sup>th</sup> Edward Moore Esq touching the sea banck, & beginning of a key there (This being the first application of the said Edward Moore) and that the said Edward Moore may take one to his assistance in the said treaty, not being a Counsellor, Attorney, or Solicitor. And this towne shall be concluded w<sup>th</sup> what Mr Maior & Mr Roper shall act or doe in the premisses on this towne's behalfe."

1676.

"1676 Sept 18<sup>th</sup> This Order continued as to reference to Mr Roper on the towne's behalfe, both as to Seabanck, and all other matters in difference or variance betweene this towne & the s<sup>d</sup> Edward Moore, now S<sup>r</sup> Edward Moore; the said S<sup>r</sup> Edward taking such one to his assistance being no Councillor nor Attorney on his part, as the said Mr Roper shall approve of."

Other sources of dissension arose from time to time.

Moore  
presented.

"1677 Aug<sup>t</sup> 13. At a Port Moot,  
"We present Edw<sup>d</sup> Moore Knt for dung, stones, and rubbish lying in the streets 20<sup>s</sup> 6<sup>d</sup>."

"Item We p'sent S<sup>r</sup> Edward Moore or his tenants for incroaching on the town's waste at the end of the Castle Hill by building thereon part of a howse wherein Peter Allin doth live, and the howse called Dicconson's howse."

Moore  
resisted.

"1677 Octr 31<sup>st</sup> Wm Geo. Rich<sup>d</sup> Earl of Derby Maior.

"Att an Assembly &c. Ordered that the fences late pull'd downe and laid wast by S<sup>r</sup> Edward More or his order, of the inclosures of Mr Robert Secome, Mr James Jerrom and Rob<sup>t</sup> Prenton, or anie other, shall be made upp againe, and defended at the charge of this Corporacon against S<sup>r</sup> Edward More or anie other."

The souls of the Aldermen and Council of that day were sorely troubled by the perpetual encroachments against which they had to contend.

Encroach-  
ments  
removed.

"1672 Jany 27<sup>th</sup> Silvester Richmond ar. Maior. Port Moot.

"Whereas there hath bin an encroachment upon the towne's Wast

w<sup>ch</sup> appeared by the testimonies of two sufficient witnesses Mr Thomas Preeson and Robert Mercer, w<sup>ch</sup> lies upon the south side of the Castle to Mr Thomas Preeson's house, called by the name of Mr Tarlton's land (leat of Egburth).

"It is this day further ordered by the Jury that the same incroachm<sup>t</sup> shall bee pulled downe, and built as it hath bin formerly, upon the penalty of five pounds, before the 23<sup>rd</sup> of Aprill next. This is to be done by the Own<sup>rs</sup> thereof."

"1676 Nov 1<sup>st</sup> Robert Williamson Mar<sup>r</sup> Maior.

"At a Portmoot Resolved, upon the question, That whosoever hath endeavoured to envade, incroach or annoy the wasts, rights or liberties of this Corporation, to receive any of the rents of this Corporation to the disinherison of the same, in their just and ancient rights, who by orders in our ancient records have bin inhibited to farme any of the Corporation's lands, or to receive any of the Corporation's rents, and perticularly the rent of Burscow's howse, soe anciently called, being the Corporations inheritance, and yet have attempted to receive the same, or who have attempted to make buildings on the Corporation's lands and inheritance, and have made severall incroachm<sup>ts</sup> on the town's land, and granted the same incroachm<sup>ts</sup> in lease without any leave or admission from the Corporation; is not a fit person to be elected Maior or Cheife Magistrate of this Corporation or to bear any publick office or place of trust for or within the same."

Protection  
against  
encroach-  
ments.

The incipient prosperity and progress of the town after the Restoration are strikingly manifested by the growing demand for building land, and the commencing development of the Corporate estate. Numerous entries in the records of a very interesting character are evidence of this.

Progress.

"1672 May 6<sup>th</sup> Lawr<sup>r</sup> Brownlowe Merch<sup>r</sup> Maior.

"Att an Assembly &c. Itt is this day ordered, that for the improvem<sup>t</sup> of the Wasts and Wast grounds within this towne and for the encouragem<sup>t</sup> of any that shall bee minded to erect buildings upon or improve any part of the same waste, That it shall bee in the power of Mr Laurence Brownlowe, the present Maior of this towne, with advice of two or more Alderm of this towne, to contract and compound with any that shall bee mindfull to build upon or improve any such wast, upon such yearely rents and for such termes as the said Maior with the advice aforesaid shall think meet; And such Contract, Agreement or Composicōn shall bee valid and binding, as done by the order of the Comonalty of this towne."

Leasing of  
Commons.

"1673 Jany 7<sup>th</sup> James Jerrom Maior.

"Ordered that four acres of Heath shall bee sett out and inclosed and fenced att the charge of the Corporacōn in the place where the Maior with his assistance have appointed, neere the Shooting Butts on the heath. And that Mr Maior with assistance of one or more of the Aldermen shall

Enclosure of  
Heath.

see the same bounded out, and contract with workmen forthwith for inclosing and fencing thereof."

Land at Castle Hill. Item "Ordered that the vacant place at the Castle Hill sett out for a building for the Corporacon be built of stone or brick."

"1674 May 25<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot.

Lands of James and Crosse. "Ordered that a survey be made of the wast ground att the water side for Roger James,<sup>1</sup> and alsoe of the Washy flash or ditch at the end of Mr Crosse's heys neere the place where the old tithe barn stood for Mr Fazakerley."<sup>2</sup>

New Streets. New streets were beginning to be laid out beyond the six of which the town had consisted from time immemorial.

"1674 March 3<sup>rd</sup> Sir Gilbert Ireland Knt Maior.

Castle Hey. "Att an Assembly &c. It is ordered that Mr Gradwell have the breadth of Seaven Yards allotted him for a way from his new intended street in the Castle Heys<sup>3</sup> for 990 years, paying v<sup>s</sup> ann<sup>m</sup>. And that the same shall be open only as a way and not to be built upon by any of the heyres or Assigns of the Tarltons. And that the same shall not be chained or obstructed against any of the towne in their passage. Ye rent to begin at Mich<sup>as</sup> next."

Tarleton's Lands. "Item Whereas heretofore att the request of Mr William Gradwell on behalfe of the daughters and co-heyres of Mr Richard Tarlton deceased, seaven yards of the waste at the sea side over against the lands or close of the said co-heyrs was granted to them for a way from their new intended street to the sea side,<sup>4</sup> They and their heyres or other the heyres & p'prietors of the same lands yeilding therefor yearly five shillings p<sup>r</sup> ann. to the Corporacon of Liverpoole. And upon a further applicacon made by the said Gradwell, alledging that seaven yards to the front att the sea side would not be sufficient for the said new street, for that the same was to be twelve yards wide. It is therefore ordered that twelve yards to the front shall be allowed to them fronting the same street, at eight shillings p<sup>r</sup> ann. rent for the whole."

Old Town Hall leased. "1675, Sept 22<sup>nd</sup> Mr Peter Atherton is admitted tenant to the old Town-hall,<sup>5</sup> being about fourteen yards to the front for sixtie one years from and after the fifteenth day of October next at fiftene pounds rent yearly at Mich<sup>as</sup>. The towne to have the use and enjoym<sup>t</sup> of the old storehouse till a new one be built; and in the mean time five pounds part of the said yearly rent is to be rebated; the said Peter Atherton within six years, building or causing to be built the said messuage three storeys high with cellar under the same. The same new building to come noe further in the street than the old Prison or Channell doth extend."

<sup>1</sup> The site of the present James Street.

<sup>2</sup> In Tithebarn Street, top of Hatton Garden.

<sup>3</sup> Now Harrington Street.

<sup>4</sup> The present Redcross Street.

<sup>5</sup> The old Town Hall stood in High Street on a portion of the site occupied by the Liverpool and London Insurance Offices.



"1676 Nov 1<sup>st</sup> Robert Williamson Maior.

"Ordered that entries be made forthw<sup>th</sup> into & upon the house called the 'Mardyke'<sup>1</sup> at the west end of Chappell Street—the new wall or key Mardyke. thereto adjoyninge, & the Lyme Kilne thereto adjoyninge;—the house at Dale Street end in possession of Wm Gardner—& the Wynd Milne on Windmill. Liverpoole Heath or Wast; by such p'son or p'sons as Mr. Maior shall thinck fitt & appoint."

"1680 Oct 18<sup>th</sup> Thomas Clayton Merchant Maior.

"Ordered, that the new marked ground at Fall-well<sup>2</sup> be let for one Fall Well and twentie yeares at yearelye rent for y<sup>e</sup> Corporacons best advantage; Lands. w<sup>ch</sup> was lett by inch of candle in the towne hall for the terme aforesaid att eight pounds, seaven shillings, sixe pence  $\text{p}$  annum, to bee paid yearely on the twentie ninth daye of September—Lett unto Joshua Fisher of Liverpoole Vintner."

"1684 Mar 25<sup>th</sup> Robt Seacome gent<sup>m</sup> Maior.

"According to order of Mr Mayor and Aldermen by consent of the New House, Councell, the new house in the Dale Street with the appurtenances belong- Dale Street. inge to this Corporation was exposed to sett and lett by inch of candle, and was then lett unto Mr Robt Carter for the terme of seaven yeares at thirty eight pounds yearely rent, to bee paid at the feast of Saint Michael the Arch-Angell. The Corporation to erect a kitchen, a wash house an house of office & swine house, and to make partitions in the house where necessary, & putt all the premises into tennantable repaire."

"1685, June 3<sup>rd</sup> Ordered, that Ald<sup>n</sup> Edward Tarleton shall for one Tarleton's yeare next ensueinge enjoy the benefitt of the fish yards by him lately Fish Yard. built, payeing two shillings sixe pence rent for the same, and allowing Mr Maior or his deputie everie Friday, all the fish taken in y<sup>e</sup> fish yards in one tide."<sup>3</sup>

"1685, Nov 18<sup>th</sup> Oliver Lyme Esquire Maior.

"Ordered that Jonathan Brookes bee admitted to make sixtie thousand Bricks made bricks on the Comon & have a portion of ground sett out for that purpose on Heath. by Ald<sup>n</sup> Windall, Mr Norres, Mr Travers, Mr Prescott & Mr Barker; hee making noe wast of ground, nor imployeing anie laborers unles he give securitie for them to the Corporation, & selling bricke at five shillings & six pence  $\text{p}$  thousand, & payeing to y<sup>e</sup> Corporation four pence  $\text{p}$  thousand.

"The like libertie granted to Robert Lucas to make three hundred thousand bricke upon the same conditions."

"1687, Dec 9<sup>th</sup> James Prescott Maior.

"Ordered that the Wast ground at y<sup>e</sup> water springs (heretofore reserved Water for publique use) bee measured and lett to Thomas Tyrer for the terme of Springs. three lives, hee paying for the same after y<sup>e</sup> rate of 5<sup>h</sup>  $\text{p}$  acre."

"1688, March 7<sup>th</sup> Upon Mr Danvers petition Ordered, That the Wast Land about ground neere y<sup>e</sup> Castle on the south side of Richard Lurting's wall be Castle.

<sup>1</sup> The Mardyke was an ancient fort at the foot of Chapel Street. It is shown in the view of Liverpool in 1650, given in Vol. I., Pl. 3, of Herdman's *Pictorial Relics*.

<sup>2</sup> In St. John's Lane, corner of Roe Street.

<sup>3</sup> This fish yard or weir was on the shore near the foot of Redcross Street.

viewed & reported, and to consult Mr Danvers what buildings hee would erect there."

"1689, June 5<sup>th</sup> Thomas Tyrer Esq<sup>r</sup> Maior.

Enclosure of  
Turf Moss.

"It is this day ordered in Councel, y<sup>t</sup> no person shall enclose any part of the Turf Mosse till first he has shew<sup>d</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Councel his title; and all such persons as have already made enclosure, shall bring their deeds by y<sup>e</sup> next Councel day to shew their titles, or their enclosures shall be pull'd down, they having notice of it before."

Pluckington  
Bank.

Pluckington's Bank, the shoal which interferes with the landing stage and the entrance to the southern docks, has acquired an unenviable notoriety. We find in the records some references to it in its incipient state.

"1690 Feby 4<sup>th</sup> Thomas Brookbank Maior.

Pluckington's  
Petition  
declined.

"Upon Mr Wm Pluckington's peticon concerning the banck washing away near his house,<sup>1</sup> and desiring the town to pay a proporcon of the charg in repairing of it to p'vent y<sup>e</sup> falling down of his house. It is order'd in Councel y<sup>t</sup> no allowance be given him to slutch y<sup>e</sup> frosse lake, provided he make twenty pounds improvmt on y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> spott of ground, but his peticon concerning y<sup>e</sup> land of y<sup>e</sup> east end of Mr Joseph Fishers ground is rejected."

Lease to  
Pluckington.

"1691, June 3<sup>rd</sup> Mr William Pluckington's peticoning for a p'cel of ground upon y<sup>e</sup> Comon for a certain time, the Councel have thought fit to order him four acres to be sett out for three lives at twelve pence each acre p<sup>r</sup> ann. provided he secure y<sup>e</sup> foundacon of the bank at y<sup>e</sup> Bowling Green; otherwise the land with its improvmt<sup>s</sup> is to returne to ye Corporacon."

Clayton builds  
Bridge.

"1693, March 7<sup>th</sup> Jasper Maudit Gent. Maior.

"On Capt William Clayton's proposal either to build a bridge at his own charg & so to uphold it, over against the Park Lane in consideracon of having a certain proporcon of ground for three lives and twenty one yeares at a certain yearly ground rent, or if the town build y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> bridge at the Corporacon charg to sett out a parcell of lands thereabouts to several tenants for three lives and twenty one yeares at a certain annual rent, it is Ord<sup>d</sup> that Mr Maior be pleased to take such of the Aldermen and other Councell men to view the same as he thinks fitt, to make a return thereof against next Councel day, and to view what quantity of ground & whereabouts may be so sett out in order to such an improvement."

Moore's  
encroachment  
Moss Lake.

"1697 Decr 14<sup>th</sup> James Benn Esq<sup>r</sup> Maior.

"Whereas Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> is informed, that Sir Cleave Moor and others have a design to take in some Commons near Mosse Lake, Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> is desired to order any person that shall offer to digge or fence in, any of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> ground, to

<sup>1</sup> This was on the sea shore, on a projecting point a little to the south of the site of the Salthouse Dock.

be brought before him, and to bind y<sup>e</sup> person or persons (so digging or enclosing) over to y<sup>e</sup> Quarter Sessions, and to prosecute him hir or them according to law at y<sup>e</sup> charge of y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon."

The question of the existence of coal in the strata under Liverpool, a moot point even at the present day, attracted attention nearly two centuries ago. Sinking for Coal.

"1698 Feby 2<sup>nd</sup> The Councill doth this day conclude. That a sūme not exceeding tenne pounds be expended at y<sup>e</sup> town's charg this summer for an experim<sup>t</sup> to bore for Coales on y<sup>e</sup> Comon."

The Old Hall at the north end of the town had been from a very early period, at least as far back as the thirteenth century, the original seat of the Moore family before their migration to Bank Hall. A large field adjoining the hall was called the Parlour Hey. Sir Cleave Moore, who succeeded his father in 1678, was desirous, in the increasing demand for building land, to utilize this property. The following record relates thereto:— Old Hall.  
Parlour Hey.

"1698 Feby 9<sup>th</sup> James Benn Esq Maior.

"Whereas there is a proposal made by S<sup>r</sup> Cleave Moor to be admitted to have an opening to two streets (intended to be built) from a field at North side of y<sup>e</sup> town comonly called Parlour Hey, & some proporcon of ground that may be an additional convenience to such a design, on & to the westward of y<sup>e</sup> sea bancke, and an equivalent propos<sup>d</sup> in lieu thereof, w<sup>ch</sup> is a vacant peece of ground (as it now lyes, onely a shop inclusive & building over it & old buildings running linable from that & an old howse where Mr Amerie dwells) betweene Mr Robert Carters and George Griffith's houses in Jugler Street or some other peece of ground, y<sup>t</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Cleave Moor or his Agent may offer in exchange. The Councill doth consent that Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> be requested to take to his assistance Ald<sup>m</sup> William Preeson, Ald<sup>r</sup> Thomas Johnson sen<sup>r</sup> & jun<sup>r</sup>, y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>t</sup> Baylives, town Clerke, Mr William Travis and Mr Thomas Sweeting, or y<sup>e</sup> major part of them to his assistance, to conferre with & contract w<sup>th</sup> S<sup>r</sup> Cleave Moore (if found convenient) to y<sup>e</sup> Corporacons best advantage." Proposed new Street.

Under this arrangement a street was cut through the Parlour Hey, but not completed until 1707, when, in commemoration of the union of the English and Scottish kingdoms, it was called Union Street.

Union Street.

Grant to  
Poole.

"1700 June 28<sup>th</sup> Cuthb<sup>t</sup> Sharples Esq Maior.

"On Mr David Pool, his renewall of his peticon, hee is granted a lease of three lives and twenty one yeares of y<sup>e</sup> ground hee formerly peticon'd for; he to build twenty yards front, sixe yards square and to pay twenty shillings p<sup>r</sup> ann., and y<sup>e</sup> wall hee has built may be removed to make y<sup>e</sup> way seaven yards broad from y<sup>e</sup> ditch, viz<sup>t</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> northward of y<sup>e</sup> building some time since intended for a Chapell and linable to y<sup>e</sup> southward."

1678.  
Loan taken up.

It has been mentioned above that in order to defray the expenses of the litigation with the cheesemongers, which commenced in 1695, it had been found necessary to raise £600 on mortgage. The money was borrowed from different parties in Wigan, Warrington, Chester, and Maghull. The mode in which the money was secured is rather peculiar.

Bonds.

Bonds or obligations were signed by the Mayor, Aldermen Sweeting, Johnson, sen. and jun., and Benn, for each sum borrowed, under a penalty of double the amount. To save these gentlemen harmless, a mortgage was executed to them

Fish House.

of the Fish House or Market, recently built in Chapel Street, which is thus described :—

Mortgage of  
Fish House.

"All that messuage, building or tenement, erected and built upon the Wast of Liverpoole afores<sup>d</sup> situate in a certain street called Chappell Street, denominated and known by y<sup>e</sup> name of y<sup>e</sup> Fish House, extending twenty yards in length, and all and singular y<sup>e</sup> roomes, warehouses, Wayes, entries, liberties, easements, priviledges, profits and comodities whatsoever to y<sup>e</sup> said messuage or tenement lying, being, belonging or in any wise appertaining, together with y<sup>e</sup> Toll of all fish, potatoes or other roots there sold or brought to y<sup>e</sup> Markette, to witt, for every horse load of fish belonging to forraigners (be it greater or lesser) three halfpence; for every bushell of potatoes a halfpenny, for every basket, pannier or other burthen brought by persons on foot one penny; every forraign freeman to pay one moietie for his so standing as is payd by a forraigner. The lease of which fish house and p'misses is now in y<sup>e</sup> possession of Ann Tarleton, widow and relict of Edward Tarleton late of Liverpoole marrin<sup>t</sup> deceased, by virtue of a lease thereof made to the said Edward Tarleton and bearing date the twenty ninth day of Octob<sup>r</sup> one thousand six hundred seaventie eight for y<sup>e</sup> tearme of fourscore and nineteene years, if Thomas, Francis and Ann Tarleton son and daughters of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Edward Tarleton so long live and after y<sup>e</sup> decease of y<sup>e</sup> longest liver of them for y<sup>e</sup> further tearme of twenty one yeares."



The new street, now Lord Street, having been made across the Pool Stream, the Common lands beyond were laid out for building, and St. Peter's Church was commenced about the end of the century.

"1700 Decr 23<sup>rd</sup> Rich<sup>d</sup> Norris Esq Maior.

Church.

"It is concluded in Councill that y<sup>e</sup> remaining part of y<sup>e</sup> field where y<sup>e</sup> Church is building, & other fields, be sett out for three lives and twenty one yeares, on a reasonable ground rent, reserving ground for y<sup>e</sup> ministers houses & gardens; <sup>1</sup> and y<sup>e</sup> a draught be made & return<sup>d</sup> ag<sup>t</sup> next Councill day, how to sett out streets &c. That y<sup>e</sup> buildings be handsome & uniform, & a note be sett on y<sup>e</sup> Exchange y<sup>e</sup> persons may come & peticon for proportions to build on."

"It is order<sup>d</sup> that Mr Maior, y<sup>e</sup> Ald<sup>m</sup>, Baylives, Mr Crane & Mr Braddock, & such of y<sup>e</sup> Councill as will attend y<sup>e</sup> same, do meet twice a week at y<sup>e</sup> Exch., viz Munday and Thursday fr. 4 to 7 a clock in y<sup>e</sup> evening, & to make contracts with persons as have an inclinacō to improve ground near y<sup>e</sup> Church; & for y<sup>e</sup> improvem<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> design'd Markette place in Jugler Street, and that a book be kept for y<sup>e</sup> purpose, and that five p<sup>'</sup>sons make a quor<sup>m</sup> and to returne their proceedings to y<sup>e</sup> Councill monthly, & the Contracts to be signed by y<sup>e</sup> persons then pr<sup>t</sup>."

"1701 Decr 3<sup>rd</sup> Rich Norris Esq Maior.

"Mr David Poole petitions for some ground butting upon Cable Street, Atherton Street & Mr Jno Turner's yard, with a design to make pan-tiles for covering of houses; no clay (except that) near y<sup>e</sup> town being for that purpose, it requiring a blew slutchy clay. Its order<sup>d</sup> that Mr May<sup>r</sup> be desired to take such of y<sup>e</sup> Councill with him as hee thinks fitt, to look out some other peece of ground for that purpose, that may have clay in it, suitable to this proposall, & to contract with y<sup>e</sup> undertakers."

"1702 March 11<sup>th</sup> Mr Mai<sup>r</sup>, y<sup>e</sup> Ald<sup>m</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> rest of y<sup>e</sup> Councill, who went to view y<sup>e</sup> ground for a Bagnio (hot bath) to be erected by Mr Dene, determine y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Dene shall have y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> ground, building 8 yards square, at six shillings p<sup>r</sup> ann. for 3 lives & 21 yeares fr Wm Clayton Esq his west wall, 12 yds broad towards Mr Braddock, & to y<sup>e</sup> extent of his land."

After the close of the civil war, the Castle of Liverpool was ordered by Parliament to be dismantled, but the order was only partially carried out. During the latter part of the seventeenth century the Corporation were the tenants under the Crown. The central position of the site rendered it a very desirable acquisition, and overtures were made to obtain a grant.

<sup>1</sup> This was never done.

Application  
for Lease to  
Lord-  
Lieutenant.

" 1694. July 9<sup>th</sup> Jasper Maudit gent. Maior.

" Order<sup>d</sup> that the L<sup>d</sup> Macclesfield<sup>1</sup> be discowrsd about a lease for the Castle, in order to p<sup>v</sup>ent all people and necessitous (under that subterfuge) to become at last inhabitants and a charg to the town."

1696 Tho. Johnson Jun. Maior.

The deputation sent to London to endeavour to settle the litigation with the cheesemongers were "also empow<sup>d</sup> to treat with y<sup>e</sup> Rt Hon<sup>ble</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Earl of Macclesfield concerning y<sup>e</sup> Castle & to make as good a contract as they can about it either by fine or otherwise for y<sup>e</sup> advantage of y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon."

" 1698 Jan'y 3<sup>rd</sup> Thomas Sweeting gent Maior.

Act for Parish  
Church and  
Castle.

" Whereas S<sup>r</sup> William Norris, Baronet, & William Clayton Esq, Burgesses for y<sup>e</sup> burrough of Liverpoole, were desired to procure an Act of Parliament to make Liverpool a Parish of itself, distinct from Walton, to erect a church &c and to agree with y<sup>e</sup> Rt Hon<sup>ble</sup> the Earl of Macclesfield for y<sup>e</sup> Castle & appendages thereunto belonging. Now this Councill doth order, that y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> burgesses shall be reimbursed the charges that they or either of them have or may expend thereon, and shall be indemnified at the charg of the Corporacon."

" 1700 Jan'y 20<sup>th</sup> Thom. Bickesteth armig. Maior.

The Castle was granted to the Corporation on an annual tenancy by the following document :—

Grant of  
Castle.

" By virtue of a power to mee granted by y<sup>e</sup> Rt Hon<sup>bl</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Earle of Macclesfield, I do hereby assign and sett over unto y<sup>e</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup>, Baylives & Burgesses of Leverpoole in y<sup>e</sup> county of Lancast<sup>r</sup> & their success<sup>rs</sup> all y<sup>e</sup> Castle w<sup>th</sup>in y<sup>e</sup> liberties of y<sup>e</sup> same, lying and being in Liverpoole afores<sup>d</sup> (excepting such a part thereof comonly called y<sup>e</sup> store for arms and ammunition) from & after y<sup>e</sup> twenty fifth day of March next ensuing y<sup>e</sup> date hereof, for & in consideracon of y<sup>e</sup> yearly sume of twenty eight pounds, to be paid yearly by y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup>, Baylives & Burgess<sup>s</sup> & their successors, unto mee or my order.

" JOHN MORRIS."

A further lease was granted in 1704, but the site was only finally vested in the Corporation by an Act (1 George I., c. 21) obtained in 1715.

Revenues.

The revenues of the Corporation were derived partly from real estate and partly from tolls and town dues. The estate during this period was rapidly increasing in value, and the Corporation had money in hand.

<sup>1</sup> The Earl of Macclesfield had been recently appointed Lord-Lieutenant of Lancashire and Constable of the Castle of Liverpool.

In April, 1688, it was ordered—

1688.

“That the sume of twentie pounds shalbee allowed & paid out of this townes stocke unto the owners of shipps in this port, towards their defence against the imposition of Ballast money in Ireland.”

Resistance to  
Ballast  
Money.

At the same time it was ordered—

“That one hundred pounds of the townes stock bee lett to interest for seaven yeares unto Ald<sup>n</sup> Edward Tarleton, upon good securitie, & was done accordinglie.”

Money lent.

A few years after this the Corporation had to borrow money themselves to defray the expenses of litigation.

In the settlement made with Lord Molyneux, in 1672, a question subsequently arose whether the burgage rental was included in the bargain. Ultimately a compromise was effected under which these burgage rents passed to the Corporation. A list is given in 1668, in which there are eighty-nine entries, but this cannot contain the whole number, which originally consisted of 168. The tenements are in Castle Street, Water Street, Dale Street, Jugler Street, Tithebarn Street, with outlying portions elsewhere.

Burgage  
Rents.

In 1672, a list is entered of the rents due at Michaelmas for the lands belonging to the Corporation. These arise from premises in lease, principally for three lives and twenty-one years. There are thirty-eight entries.

Corporation  
Rent Roll.

A considerable portion of the estate at the northern side of the town, the Gallows Field, God's Croft, the great Town Field, &c., have disappeared without their alienation being accounted for.

Lands north  
of Town.

The records relating to the Town Dues are referred to below. There existed from the earliest period a sort of *octroi* or petty tolls on all goods brought in, or carried out by land. These were the less liable to be disputed, as the entrance could be prevented of all who refused to pay. Freemen were exempt, as also certain townships in the

Town Dues.

Exemptions.

vicinity, Prescott, Altcar, and others. The toll varied from one penny to sixpence per cart load, according to the nature of the goods. Double tolls were charged during fair time.

"1675 Sep 22<sup>nd</sup> At an Assembly &c It is ordered that noe tolls be taken from the inhabitants of Alker, till this Corporacon have taken further advise from Counsell concerning the liberties of Alkar & theire right to be exempt from tolls."

Ingates and  
Outgates.

"1701, Oct 28<sup>th</sup> Ric. Norris Esq Maior.

"Mem. Jno Sandiford that day (p<sup>r</sup> Ald<sup>n</sup> Johnson's order) did take y<sup>e</sup> tolls of y<sup>e</sup> Ingates & Outgates to comence from this day at fourteen Pounds p<sup>r</sup> ann.

"And the same day John Marsh, Porter, took y<sup>e</sup> tolls of the roots (fruits &c at Whitecrosse usually collected by Edmund Lea excepted) at seaven pounds p<sup>r</sup> ann. from Saturday last inclusive, to determine y<sup>e</sup> next St. Luke's day."





## BURGESSES AND FREEMEN. RESTRICTIONS ON TRADE.

---

Notwithstanding the restrictive clauses were struck out Monopoly.  
of the charter of Philip and Mary, and never re-enacted, the Corporation continued, in spite of the law, to enforce the trading monopoly of the freemen.

“1673 Apl 28<sup>th</sup> Richard Blackborne and Jane his wife for keeping an open Haberdasher's shop in Liv'poole, not being free, fined xx<sup>li</sup>. Non-Freemen fined.

“Ro. Ticknor for contriveing an instrument to hinder Jane Blackburne paying fines imposed on her x<sup>s</sup>.

“Peter Walker being party and privy to the same contrivance vj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>.

“Hugh Diggles being also party and privy to the same contrivance vj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>.”

“1674 Thomas Whitehead for keeping an open shop not being free fined vj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>.”

Some attempts made about this time to relax the rigidity of the restriction were sternly suppressed.

“1676, Octo 18<sup>th</sup> Robert Williamson mariner Maior.

“At a Portmoot. Resolved upon the question. That by the ancient Resolution.  
custome and usage of this Corporation, any person intending to get his living by buying and selling in way of traffick, trade or merchandize, not having served an apprenticeship seven years to a freeman of this burrow not being the son of a domestick freeman and borne within this burrow, ought not to be made free without speciall order of the Councill of this Corporation.”

“Resolved upon the question; that by the ancient custome and usage Restrictions on Admission.  
of this Corporation the Maior for the tyme being without his Baylives, major part of the Aldermen and town-clerk being present, ought not to administer the oath of a freeman to any person to the intent to admitt a freeman of this Corporation without special order of the Counsell to that purpose.”

“1676 Nov<sup>r</sup> 1<sup>st</sup> Resolved upon the question; that all those who Admissions cancelled.  
within three dayes before the election of this present Maior were irregularly brought in to be sworne freemen of this Corporation, there not being any order of Councill to enable the doing thereof, shall not be deemed freemen duly elected of this Corporation, nor shall be enrolled by the Town Clark in the roll of freemen.”

Aldermen  
rebuked.

"Resolved upon the question; that Ald<sup>r</sup> Thomas Andoe, Ald<sup>r</sup> Peter Lurting, and Ald<sup>r</sup> Thomas Johnson, who introduced and promoted the aforesaid persons to be irregularly admitted to take the oaths of freemen of this Corporation, are guilty of a breach of trust, and have acted contrary to their duty expressed in the oath of a freeman, for preservation of the ancient custome of this Corporation."

The consideration paid for admission to freedom varied much. In many cases the record states they were admitted gratis; in others a heavy payment was imposed. Thus—

Payments for  
Admission.

"1678 Octr 4<sup>th</sup> Ordered that Mr John Rowe bee admitted free payeing 100<sup>li</sup> fine."

"1685 May 13<sup>th</sup> Sir Rich Atherton knight, Maior.

"Ordered That everie person who is sworne freeman of this burrough shall henceforth paye unto y<sup>e</sup> officers y<sup>e</sup> fees underwritten viz<sup>t</sup> To the

"Towne Clerke, two shillings & sixe pence

"Sergeant at Mace, two shillings

"Sword bearer, one shilling six pence

"Water Baylive, one shilling

"Porter of the Exchange, sixe pence."

Arms to be  
provided.

The freemen undertook certain obligations, amongst others that of providing arms and giving attendance.

"1676, Octr 23<sup>rd</sup> Portmoot. Wee order that all freemen within this Corporation shall keep sword, firelock and muskett, and those who are not provided, shall furnish themselves therewith before the second day of February next."

Freemen to  
appear.

"1671 Octr 23<sup>rd</sup>, Ordered that whereas severall Gent. and other persons who are made freemen of this Corpora<sup>ti</sup>on and doe noe suite nor service to the same, that all such p<sup>er</sup>son or p<sup>er</sup>sons shall formally appeare at the first Quarter Sessions holden after the eleccon of the Maior or by assigne of his behalfe; whosoe maketh default or neglecteth the same shall loose the benefit of his freedom."

Orders to be  
published.

"Ordered that Mr Samuel Fazakerly shall before tenne of the clock of the next markt day deliver a true copy of all such orders as are requisite to be comunicated, unto the freemen of this towne and country, which said orders are to be fixed upon the most fitt place for that purpose."

Some of the entries relating to the admission of freemen are curious and noteworthy.

Plate given.

1684, Augt 6<sup>th</sup> Mr Andrew Barlow, apprentice to Ald<sup>n</sup> Clayton was admitted free, hee giving a peece of Plate to the Corporation, vallue left to his discretion, & was sworne the same day."

1694 Octr 3<sup>rd</sup> Robert Haddock, being voted free at twenty pounds Payment. fine, accepts of it & prays the Councell to excuse the oath, and hee'l subscribe the Declaration."

Things were carried with a high hand when such a regulation as the following could be enforced:—

"1695, Decr 4<sup>th</sup> Tho. Johnson Jun. Maior.

"It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell, that if any inhabitant of this towne Restrictions. shall p'sume for y<sup>e</sup> future to sett a house or room to any person not free of this towne without giving notice, as y<sup>e</sup> law directs, the said person so offending shall pay five pounds fine to the Corporation for every such offence."

The freemen, in return for their privileges, had to submit exclusively to the jurisdiction of the local courts.

"1679, July 14<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot.

"Wee present Mathew Adlington for comencing suite at Darbie Court Fine. against Edward Hornbie, contrarie to y<sup>e</sup> oath of a freeman—3<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>."

Permission was occasionally given to non-freemen to carry on trade upon conditions.

"1672 Sept 4<sup>th</sup> Ordered that Mr Thomas Cleyton shall bee admitted Permissions to trade at xx<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup> quarter dureing pleasure, payeing his towne's customes trade. and leyes, & alsoe his areere of fines."

"1689, Nov 20<sup>th</sup> Ordered That Edward Massey (sometime since an inhabitant of Athlone in y<sup>e</sup> kingdom of Ireland) be suffered to live in town (during Mr Maiors pleasure) and to drive some small retail trade for y<sup>e</sup> pres<sup>t</sup> support of his family, provided he give security not to bring any charg upon y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>con</sup>; Mr Charles Smith, securitie."

1690, Janr 8<sup>th</sup>. "William Norman, Bookseller, allowed to live in town and keep a shop, for sixe months, without any disturbance, provided he give a note under his hand not to enjoy y<sup>e</sup> benefit of it any longer than that time, and give securitie to leave the town at that time."

The great bone of contention, however, was the levy of Town Dues. town dues, about which there was a perpetual wrangle, carried on for many generations, in which the Corporation were for the most part successful, though occasionally they were made to smart for excess of zeal.

Exemptions had been given by Royal grant to the mer- Towns chants of London, Bristol, Wexford, and Waterford, and the exempted.

inhabitants of Altcar, Formby, and other villages on the Mersey put forward the same claim by prescription.

Resistance.

As the commerce of Liverpool began to develop, other towns offered opposition to the impost. In 1663, Carlisle, Lancaster, and Wigan took proceedings at law to rid themselves of the infliction. The Liverpool Corporation were always equal to the occasion, and never flinched from the most determined assertion of their rights.

Cheshire to pay.

"1664, Feby 25<sup>th</sup> Peter Lurting Gent Maior.

"It is ordered that upon landing of anie cattle or other goods on Worrall side ov' against & w<sup>thin</sup> the lib'ties of this port, the Water Baylive for the tyme being shall distreyne anie the said goodes, cattells or merchandizes for the usuall customes due to this towne; and for such distresse shall be indemnified."

Sanction for Defence.

"1664 Augt 22<sup>nd</sup> It is also ordered that if anie suit be now comenced or hereafter shall be comenced ag<sup>t</sup> the now Mr Maior, or Mr Sturzaker, Hall keep<sup>r</sup> or others for or concerning anie goods distreynd for anie town's custome of Halledge, soe usually called according to the use of this burrough by Mr Greenwood or any other freemen or inhabitants of the burrough of Lancaster, or by Mr Seawell or any freemen or inhabitant whatsoev<sup>r</sup> of the citie of Carlisle or burrough of Wigan, wee doe unanimously agree ord<sup>r</sup> & think fit; That they and ev'ie of them the said Mr Maior, Hall Keep<sup>r</sup> & town's custom<sup>r</sup> respectively shall be borne and saved harmlesse by this burrough. And all charges concerning the same expended or to be expended shall bee paid out of the treasurie of this towne."

Suits with Carlisle and Lancaster.

"1666 Feby 28<sup>th</sup> Michael Tarleton gen. Maior.

"Att an Assembly &c It is agreed unanimously by them then and there present, that whereas the fremen or burgesses of the city of Carlisle & town of Lancaster doe clayme a freedome from payinge anie tolles or towne's customes w<sup>thin</sup> in this burrough; and have had formerly suites w<sup>th</sup> the offic<sup>rs</sup> of this towne touching that busines; and still threaten to prosecute the like suites ag<sup>t</sup> some of the offic<sup>rs</sup> of this towne for taking such custome or customes, and now ordered in & by the said Assembly; That from henceforth all and every such offic<sup>r</sup> or agent whatsoever, a free burgesse of this Corporacon as shall be ymployed or intrusted by Mr Maior of this towne for the tyme being, for the taking of such toll or towne custome, from any of the Citizens or Burgesses of the cities of London, or Carlyle, or towne of Lancaster, shall for any their soe doinge be indemnified in that behalfe att the publick or comon charge of this burrough. And all necessary costs and expences they or any of them shall be exposed unto about the premises, shall be likewise paid out of the publick stock of this towne."



1666, May 18th. "Whereas the owners and masters of shippes belonging to this Port and Burrough of Liverpoole, being all or most of them free burgesses of the same, have respectively by their oaths att their infranchisement ingaged to their power to further and increase the lib'ties & customes of this towne, and to be ayding and assisting to the Maior of this towne and his offic<sup>rs</sup> in execucon of their sev'all offices, for mayntenance of the said customes. Nev'theles the same owners and masters, or many of them, have not only omitted to make their invoice of goods by them imported, but also have bin remisse, if not wilfully refusinge, to contribute their due assistance to the said offic<sup>rs</sup> in collecc<sup>on</sup> of the dutie & towne's custome of cattell & other goodes by them imported from Ireland. It is therefore att a gen'all meeting of the Maior, Aldermen & major pt of the Comon Counsell of this burrough thought fitt & ordered, That from henceforth the respective owners and masters and pursers of vessells belonginge to this port (being freemen of this burrough) shall at their landinge or discharginge of anie cattell (by them brought from Ireland) w<sup>th</sup>in the lymitts of this port, pay or cause to be paid, and satisfied to the towne's customer for the tyme being, the said duty or towne's custome for such cattell respectively as they shall ymport into this harbo<sup>r</sup> or lymitts thereof, be the same in Cheshire or Lancashire side, upon payne of vj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> for every default. And if any question arise touching the premises att any tyme hereaft<sup>r</sup>, any offic<sup>r</sup> ymployed for collecting the same, or levyinge the said penaltie shall be defended & saved harmeles att the charge of the towne."

1666.  
Ship Masters  
and Owners  
responsible.

1666, July 23rd. "It is ordered and agreed according to former order that no goods seized or distreyned by Mr Sturzaker (hall keeper) or anie other officer of this towne for any towne's custome from Mr John Greenwood, or any the inhabitants of Lanc<sup>r</sup> shall be redelivered. And if any suit or question arise therein, Mr Sturzaker and ev'y offic<sup>r</sup> of this towne that may thereupon be questioned, shall be indemnified by this towne.

Lancaster  
Goods  
detained.

"The like order is also made in the suite betweene Carlyle (City) & Mr Carlisle. Sturzaker & Thomas Rowe."

The matter slumbered for more than twenty years, but in 1689 the question was revived, and led to a long and expensive litigation. The towns of Lancaster and Bridgwater were first in the field.

"1689 Mar 28<sup>th</sup> Will. Clayton Esq Maior.

"Whereas Augustine Greenwood of Lancast<sup>r</sup> and other inhabitants thereof do refuse to pay y<sup>e</sup> town duty for goods here imported; Mr John Hodgson the collector thereof is appointed to distrain upon a proportionable p<sup>t</sup> of every persons goods, in order to secure y<sup>e</sup> town duty. The town is to indemnify him if any suit be comenced, agreeable to an order of y<sup>e</sup> like nature in y<sup>e</sup> year 1664, Peter Lurting, Maior."

Suit with  
Lancaster.

Soap  
distrained.

"1690, March 4<sup>th</sup> Thomas Brookbank Maior.

"Whereas Mr John Hodgson is sued to an Exigent by one John Brier of Lancast<sup>r</sup> (in Trespasse) upon account of a brl of sope distrain'd on for y<sup>e</sup> town duty. It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councel y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Jno Hodgson shall be indemnified in y<sup>e</sup> matter, and the suit shall be defended at y<sup>e</sup> charg of y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon."

Exchequer  
Commission.

"1692, Sept. 19<sup>th</sup> Rich. Houghton Esq Maior.

"Then shewed at the execucon of a Com<sup>n</sup> at Liverpoole issued out of the Excheq<sup>r</sup> in a cause betweene the Attor Gen<sup>l</sup> all at the relation of the borough of Liverpoole & John Hodgson pl<sup>ts</sup>, ag<sup>te</sup> y<sup>e</sup> borough of Lanc<sup>r</sup>. Augustine Greenwood and Jo. Bryer def<sup>ts</sup>, & deposed unto by Joshua Maude & Thomas Sherwin."

Dispute with  
Bridgwater.

"1692, Octr 26<sup>th</sup> Whereas by a letter from Mr Roger Hoar, Merchant, and now Maior of Bridgwater, dated 26<sup>th</sup> Octobr 1692 and directed to Mr John Hodgson, hee the said John Hodgson is order<sup>d</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> said Mr Hoar not to pay any town's duty for y<sup>e</sup> said Mr. Hoar's salt, unto y<sup>e</sup> towne of Liverpoole. Now, upon reading, y<sup>e</sup> said letter this day in Councell, and duly considering the same, it is ordered; That all salt that goes to Bridgwater from Liverpool (the town duty whereof is denyed to be paid) shall be measured, and a reasonable proporcon thereof taken and sold to pay y<sup>e</sup> town's duty and charg, if y<sup>e</sup> entrey be right, but if underentred, then y<sup>e</sup> town officers to take so much of y<sup>e</sup> said salt (and sell it in open Markette) as shall suffice to pay y<sup>e</sup> town duty and charges. The surplus (if any be) to be returned to y<sup>e</sup> Mast<sup>r</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> ship, out of which it is taken, or to y<sup>e</sup> proprietor of y<sup>e</sup> said salt."

Proceedings  
against  
Lancaster.

"1693, Apl 19<sup>th</sup> Joshua Fisher gent. Maior.

"It is this day concluded in Councell that whereas there is a suit depending between this town and Lancaster in y<sup>e</sup> name of Augustine Greenwood Plaintiff and John Hodgson Def<sup>t</sup> (whereof a hearing is to be at London y<sup>e</sup> tenth day of May next). That Ald<sup>m</sup> William Clayton go to London to sollicite and manadg y<sup>e</sup> said affair and that John Sandiford, town clerke, do accompany him and give his assistance therein; and both their charges are to be defraid by y<sup>e</sup> town, and whatever Ald<sup>m</sup> Clayton shall do in order to y<sup>e</sup> accomodacon of y<sup>e</sup> matter (if any proposall should be made in that kind) y<sup>e</sup> town will confirme and stand by."

Disputes with  
Cheese-  
mongers.

The most serious opposition was that made by the cheese-mongers of London, who were a powerful and wealthy body. The produce of the dairy farms of Cheshire was brought down in barges by the Weaver and upper Mersey navigation, and shipped in larger vessels for London. The Corporation claimed to levy town dues on the shipments, which was

resisted by the London merchants, who claimed exemption under Royal Charter. The litigation commenced in 1692, and was not terminated until 1700. In the course of the proceedings the cheesemongers took the opportunity, in 1695, of presenting a petition against the granting of the charter, which, however, was unsuccessful.<sup>1</sup>

The first note for war was sounded in September, 1692.

“1692 Sept 20<sup>th</sup> Rich. Houghton Esq Maior.

“It is this day concluded in Council that whereas, several of y<sup>e</sup> Cheese-  
mongers in London have denied y<sup>e</sup> paym<sup>t</sup> of Town duty for cheese, and y<sup>e</sup> Cheese-  
Adventure of London (Thomas Thorp Master) is loaden with cheese, and  
y<sup>e</sup> Warehouse Keeper of Frodsham and Ince, as also Thomas Thorp,  
Master deny y<sup>e</sup> paym<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> town duty; it is concluded that William Heyes,  
town customer take Sergeant Roe and y<sup>e</sup> Waterbaylife to his assistance,  
and distraine upon sixe hundred weight of cheese, computing there to be  
about seaventie Tunns on board; and in case a suit arises thereon, it is to  
be vindicated at y<sup>e</sup> town's charg; and if for y<sup>e</sup> future any other ships  
being loaden with cheese y<sup>e</sup> town custom is denied to be paid for y<sup>e</sup> same,  
William Heyes is to proceed as in this p<sup>r</sup> sid<sup>t</sup>.”

Some doubt appears to have arisen as to the legality of this summary course, for we find—

1693, March 7<sup>th</sup> “Whereas a difficulty doth arise in the collection of  
the town duty of cheese shipt for London, it is ordered, that Mr Daniel  
Lawton be desired to write to some eminent Counsell in London, whether  
the Corpora<sup>c</sup>on may safely take the cheese out of their ships, weigh it, and  
dispose of it, returning the overplus.”

A suit was now prosecuted by the cheesemongers for illegal distraint, whereupon we read the following:—

“An acc<sup>t</sup> of the charters sent to Prescott to Mr Daniel Lawton y<sup>e</sup> 5<sup>th</sup> day  
of June 1694, to be conveyed to London in order to proceed on the tryal  
between the Cheesemongers and this Corporation.”

Then follows the list of charters from King John to James  
II. The charter of Charles II. is wanting, but the exemplifi-  
cation as it now exists was then extant.

“1694 Sept 5<sup>th</sup> Jasper Maudit gent Maior.

“It is this day concluded and agreed upon in Councell That whereas  
Resolution of  
Council.

<sup>1</sup> *Vide supra*, p. 264.

there are now two suits depending, one betweene the Cheesemongers of London, and the other betweene Lancast' and this Corpora<sup>o</sup>n in which the names of the p'sent Maior and Baylives are made use of in Writts of Subpœna and other matters in the law; the said Corpora<sup>o</sup>n shall save harmlesse and indemnified the p'sent Mai' and Baylives and their predecess<sup>s</sup> from any charg, damadg or incumbrance whatsoever that may befall them, their heirs, execut<sup>rs</sup> or administ<sup>rs</sup> on acc<sup>t</sup> of the said suits; to which this p'sent Councell (or so many of them as are here p'sent) have set their hands the day and year before mentioned."

Signed by the Maior and 37 others.

Money now began to run scarce, as appears from the following entry:—

1696.  
Payment of  
Expenses.

"1696 Feby 5<sup>th</sup> Thos Johnson Jun. Maior.

"It is this day ordered in Councell, that whereas a suit is now depending between the Cheesemongers of London and the Corporation, and a considerable summe of money hath been already and is likely to be expended thereon; That the money so expended or to be expended shall be paid out of the town stock, and the p'sent Maior and Baylives are and shall be indemnified from the same, and from any other suit comenc<sup>t</sup> against the Mai<sup>r</sup>, Baylives and Burgesses of the Corpora<sup>o</sup>n of Liverpoole on y<sup>t</sup> acc<sup>t</sup>."

"1696, March 7<sup>th</sup> Mem. To order persons to meet dayly about y<sup>e</sup> suit w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Cheese-Mongers."

Abortive attempts were made towards a settlement.

Negotiations.

"1696, June 3<sup>rd</sup> Tho. Johnson Jun. Maior.

"Whereas there is a suit depending betweene y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>o</sup>n and Cheese-Mongers of London touching y<sup>e</sup> duty & a hearing theréof is appointed to be at y<sup>e</sup> Barr of y<sup>e</sup> Exchequer on Thursday y<sup>e</sup> 25<sup>th</sup> of this ins<sup>t</sup> June in order to a tryal next Mich<sup>s</sup> tearme; It is order<sup>d</sup> that Jasper Maudit Esq be desir<sup>d</sup> to be at y<sup>e</sup> hearing & that John Sandiford Town Clerke go to London at y<sup>e</sup> town's charge to attend Mr Daniel Lawton y<sup>e</sup> Sollicitor, & give y<sup>e</sup> best assistance hee can in y<sup>e</sup> businesse. And in case a fair proposal be made y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Jasper Maudit Esq & Jno Sandiford may have pow<sup>r</sup> to treat about it & make such tearmes as may be (according to y<sup>e</sup> best of their judgm<sup>ts</sup>) consistent w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Hon<sup>r</sup> & int<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>o</sup>n or make choise of an Arbitrat<sup>r</sup> on y<sup>e</sup> town's acc<sup>t</sup> to make an hon<sup>ble</sup> end of y<sup>e</sup> same."

The negotiation was resumed early in the following year.

Negotiations  
resumed.

"1697 Mar 3<sup>rd</sup> William Preeson gent Maior.

"Whereas an order was formerly made viz<sup>t</sup> the third day of June last, that Jasper Maudit Esq and John Sandiford town clerke should treat with the Cheesemongers of London, touching the difference or suit now



depending between them, or to make choice of such arbitrators on y<sup>e</sup> town's account, as might make an hon<sup>ble</sup> conclusion of y<sup>e</sup> same, and that businesse came not to any determination, but is still depend<sup>d</sup>. And by a letter of y<sup>e</sup> 27<sup>th</sup> ultimo Jasper Maudit Esq hath intimated unto Mr Mai<sup>r</sup>, that it is the opinion of Mr Wm Bathurst, our Sollicitor, that the Defence should go on, or at least not be abruptly broak off; it is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell, that William Norres Esq and Jasper Maudit Esq be desired to take the trouble upon them to advise with Councell, and to go on either with y<sup>e</sup> Reference or otherwise, as shall be most consistent with the town's reputacon and intrest."

The matter now slumbered for two years, during which there is no entry.

"1699 Mar 13<sup>th</sup> Tho. Sweeting Esq Maior.

"Whereas a suit is now depending between y<sup>e</sup> Cheesemongers of <sup>Proposals.</sup> London and this Corporacon, touching the town duty of their cheese, and some overtures are proposed, to make an accomodation; This Councell doth order That William Clayton Esq, one of our pr<sup>t</sup> representatives in Parliament do treat about it, and whatever agreements hee makes with them relating thereunto shall be confirmed and allow<sup>d</sup> of by the Corporacon."

"1699 May 29<sup>th</sup> Whereas y<sup>e</sup> cause with y<sup>e</sup> Cheesemongers of London <sup>Deputation to</sup> is now at issue & a tryall is fixt to be this ensuing tearme at y<sup>e</sup> <sup>London.</sup> Exchequer Barr, West Minster; This Councell doth order and request Thomas Sweeting Esq p<sup>r</sup> Maior of Liverpoole, Jasper Maudit Esq, Richard Norris Gent<sup>l</sup>, and John Sandiford town clerke, to go up to London to manadg that affair, and if a proposal of an accomodation happens, this Councell gives them full pow<sup>r</sup> to make a peaceable determinacon thereof; all y<sup>e</sup> charg of Councell, evidence, expence of their journey and all other conting<sup>t</sup> charg to be defray<sup>d</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon; Serg<sup>t</sup> Roe is also to go up at y<sup>e</sup> same charg, to wait upon Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> &c on y<sup>e</sup> same businesse."

"1699, June 30<sup>th</sup> Att a Councell &c Tho. Sweeting Esq Maior.

"Whereas by a letter from Jasper Maudit Esq bearing date y<sup>e</sup> 27<sup>th</sup> <sup>Reference</sup> ins<sup>t</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> came this day to Mr Maior's hand there is an acc<sup>t</sup> that some <sup>proposed.</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> Cheesemongers of London propose an accomodacon of y<sup>e</sup> suit now depending, betweene them and us, relating to ye town-duty.

"Now this Court doth order, that y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Jasper Maudit Esq & Daniel Lawton Gentle<sup>m</sup> either by themselves or such as they shall think fitt to choose on y<sup>e</sup> Corporacons part, shall ascertain and settle y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> town duty, and putt a period to y<sup>e</sup> controversy & that they have a warr<sup>t</sup> und<sup>r</sup> y<sup>e</sup> seal of y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon so to do."

"A copy of y<sup>e</sup> Warr<sup>t</sup> sent to Jasper Maudit Esq & Daniel Lawton gen. this day, pursuant to y<sup>e</sup> above order.

"Know all men by these presents; that whereas a suit is now <sup>Appointment</sup> <sup>of Referees.</sup>

depending at y<sup>e</sup> Barr of y<sup>e</sup> Exchequer between Nathan<sup>l</sup> and others cheesemongers of London, Plt<sup>s</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup>, Baylives & and Burgesses of Liverpoole Def<sup>s</sup> touching a certain town-duty unto y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>c</sup>on & rec<sup>d</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> proper officer for its use. And for accomoda<sup>c</sup>on of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> difference a proposal is made to putt a period thereunto by way of arbitra<sup>c</sup>on. Now know ye that wee y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup>, Baylives & Burgesses have & by these p<sup>nts</sup> do authorize & impow<sup>r</sup> Jasper Maudit Esq & Daniel Lawton gent. aforesaid to be, or nominate such persons as they shall think fitt to assertain & settle wh<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> town-duty shall be & to putt an end to y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>nt</sup> suit, & what agreem<sup>t</sup> they make shall oblidg y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>c</sup>on of Liverpoole.

“In witness whereof &c.”

“1700, Jan. 3<sup>rd</sup> Cuthb<sup>t</sup> Sharples Esq Maior.

Loan taken  
up.

“Att a Councell &c Whereas the Corpora<sup>c</sup>on of Liverpoole hath occasion for a p<sup>s</sup>ent summe of money to defray y<sup>e</sup> charg of y<sup>e</sup> suit with y<sup>e</sup> cheesemongers it is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell, that Mr Maior and y<sup>e</sup> Aldermen do take up a certain sume of money not exceeding Sixe Hundred pounds, for w<sup>ch</sup> they are to be counter secured out of y<sup>e</sup> town's revenue.”

The negotiations again broke down.

Deputation to  
attend Trial.

“1700 April 2<sup>nd</sup>, Whereas y<sup>e</sup> tryall betwixt y<sup>e</sup> Cheesmongers of London and this Corpora<sup>c</sup>on is by order of Court to be tryed the 23<sup>rd</sup> of this pr<sup>t</sup> Aprill at y<sup>e</sup> Excheq<sup>r</sup> Barr at West Minster; for y<sup>e</sup> better carrying on of the s<sup>d</sup> cause it is this day ordered in Councell that Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> & Ald<sup>n</sup> Johnson J<sup>r</sup> go up to London for y<sup>e</sup> better managem<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> cause, and that their charges and all other charges that shall accrew on the said suit be born at y<sup>e</sup> charg of y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>c</sup>on.”

The trial was again postponed and the venue changed, as appears from the following entry:—

Further Loan.

“1700 Sept 20<sup>th</sup>, Whereas y<sup>e</sup> cause with y<sup>e</sup> Cheesmongers was by order of y<sup>e</sup> Court at Excheq<sup>r</sup> at West Minster putt off to a new tryall by a Jury of y<sup>e</sup> County of Bucks and is to be tryed y<sup>e</sup> next tearme; this Councell doth order that a sume not exceeding three hundred pounds be taken up to manadge y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> tryal; for w<sup>ch</sup> y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>c</sup>on shall give counter-security to y<sup>e</sup> persons who are bound for y<sup>e</sup> same. And Jasper Maudit Esq is desired, and John Sandiford is order<sup>d</sup>, to go up to London about y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> affair at y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>c</sup>on's charge, and s<sup>d</sup> Jasper Maudit Esq has power to take another person to his assistance and hee hath further power together w<sup>th</sup> the persons who go to London, or shall happen to be there at or before the the tearme to make an accomodation with y<sup>e</sup> Cheesmongers (if any proposals in that kind happen to be made) and absolutely to y<sup>e</sup> best of his and their power to conclude and agree y<sup>e</sup> same. And y<sup>e</sup> way

Instructions  
to Deputation.

of raising y<sup>e</sup> money for y<sup>e</sup> said service is reserved to Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> and y<sup>e</sup> Aldermen."

"1700 Oct. 10<sup>th</sup> Agreed that a further sume of one hundred pounds be Further Loan. taken up at int<sup>'st</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> persons secured out of y<sup>e</sup> lands of y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>co</sup>n.

"Mem. This was underwritten here by Tho. Johnson Esq, y<sup>e</sup> town clerke then being in London.

"The above persons subscrib'd their names with their own hands in y<sup>e</sup> Councell Journall Book (v. 77) as it may there appear, this Book of Records being then at London on account of y<sup>e</sup> tryal."

"1700 Nov 6 Rich. Norris Gent<sup>m</sup> Maior.

"It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell, that whereas Cuthbert Sharples Esq Security. late Maior, Thomas Johnson Esq James Benn and Thomas Sweeting all Alder<sup>n</sup> of Liverpoole have entred into obliga<sup>co</sup>n of two thousand pounds for paym<sup>t</sup> of one thousand pounds to several persons, which money was really expended on y<sup>e</sup> town's acc<sup>t</sup>. Now it is further order<sup>d</sup> that for y<sup>e</sup> more prompt paym<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> int<sup>'st</sup> and further security of y<sup>e</sup> principall to y<sup>e</sup> obligee, they have y<sup>e</sup> town's chief rents added, to y<sup>e</sup> end they may be better scur<sup>d</sup> & y<sup>e</sup> int' y<sup>e</sup> more readily advanc<sup>d</sup>."

The trial came off in Michaelmas term, 1700. No entry Trial. thereof appears in the record, but we learn from other sources that it terminated in a verdict against the Corporation for £68 5s. 6d. for dues illegally levied, and £176 10s. taxed costs.

1700 Decr 6<sup>th</sup> "It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell that Richard Norris Payment of Esq Mai<sup>r</sup> and y<sup>e</sup> Alder<sup>m</sup> do take up so much money as will defray y<sup>e</sup> costs Costs. (w<sup>th</sup> other incidents and charges) y<sup>e</sup> Cheesemongers last tearme recovered agt y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>co</sup>n; and that y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> money be with all speed remitted into the hands of Jasper Maudit Esq w<sup>th</sup> all expedico<sup>n</sup>, & y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> and y<sup>e</sup> Ald<sup>m</sup> be indemnified by y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>co</sup>n for taking up and being bound for y<sup>e</sup> same."

The last entry is as follows:—

1701 Mar 5<sup>th</sup> "It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell y<sup>t</sup> Mr Maior be desired Cheese to dispose of y<sup>e</sup> cheese taken in distresse from y<sup>e</sup> cheesemongers." disposed of.

So ends this rather remarkable episode in the history of the borough, which cost the Corporation at least a thousand pounds, besides the loss of the dues levied. It illustrates the dogged pertinacity and determination which have been a marked feature in the proceedings of the Corporation of Liverpool from the earliest period.

## TRADE AND COMMERCE.

---

New point of  
departure.

The entries in the record relating to shipping and commerce during the last half of the seventeenth century are not numerous, but everything indicates a new point of departure. The old "town's bargains" are heard of no more. Trade is relegated into its legitimate channel of private enterprise. A new class of merchants of more enlarged views, the Claytons, Cleveland's, Norrisses, &c., had begun to lay broad and deep the basis for future expansion, which in the beginning of the following century developed with marvellous force.

Limits of the Port. The disputes about jurisdiction with the city of Chester<sup>1</sup> led to an appeal to the Government, which was thus responded to:—

"1660 Decr 12<sup>th</sup> Thomas Viscount Colchester Maior.

"A copie of the Ord<sup>r</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> settling of y<sup>e</sup> Port.

Limits of Port.

"After our heartie comendacons. Havinge by a former lett<sup>r</sup> taken notice of the differences and disputes arisen betwixt some offic<sup>rs</sup> and other intresed p'sons within the port of West Chest<sup>r</sup> & towne of Liverpoole concerninge the bounds and limitts of each port and place, and havinge declared our opinion & knowledge that Liverpoole (however it may bee accompted a member of West Chest<sup>r</sup>) yett in the execucon of all Custome affaires, hath ever beene distinct and absolute of itt selfe; And that the whole river of Mersey, and the shores on both sides, was and ought to bee und<sup>r</sup> the care, priviledge and inspeccion of the offic<sup>rs</sup> of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Customes att Liverpoole; but findinge our lett<sup>r</sup> either misunderstood or not regarded & the same disputes and worse troubles prosecuted and fermented as well against the merchants as offic<sup>rs</sup> there, w<sup>ch</sup> is a very great prejudice to his Ma<sup>ties</sup> service; Wee are againe necessitated (for p'vention of further inconvenience) positively to ord<sup>r</sup> and desire That what Shipp's, Goods or Merchandize soever shall bee exported or imported from or into the river Mersey on either side the shore, beginninge on Worrall side att a place

<sup>1</sup> *Vide supra*, p. 153.



called the Redstones, and not further southwards, bee entr<sup>d</sup> and accompted Redstones. for att the Custom house att Liverpoole, and to the offic<sup>rs</sup> there without anie yo<sup>r</sup> lett or hinderance. And hereunto wee doe expect yo<sup>r</sup> ready compliance, the quiett and wellfare of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> service beinge verie much conc<sup>n</sup>ed therein

“ Custom house London

“ And soe wee rest  
“ Yo<sup>r</sup> verie loveing friends  
“ Nic CRISP & 4 others  
“ (Comm<sup>rs</sup> of Customs).”

More care began to be taken about keeping the harbour clear.

“ 1663, August 6<sup>th</sup> The Hon. Will<sup>m</sup> Stanley Mayor.

“ It is lykewise ordered that noe person or p<sup>rs</sup>ons doe presume to lay Laying Stones any lyme stones or other stones whatsoev<sup>r</sup> to the southward of y<sup>e</sup> pole now forbidden. fixed below y<sup>e</sup> Chappell Streete end and y<sup>e</sup> Rock above y<sup>e</sup> towne upon payne of five shillings for ev<sup>y</sup> tyme any stones shalbe soe layd, the same to be levied of y<sup>e</sup> goods & chattells of such offender in case of refusall.”

1666 Octr 22<sup>nd</sup> “ Wee order that no lyme stones nor other rubbish shall be heaved out of any shipp or boate, betwixt the Post or mark sett up & the Pole on penalty of v<sup>li</sup>.”

“ 1675 Nov 3. Thomas Chapman Maior.

“ Whereas severall complaints are made of late that by the late bringing downe of clay and rubbish to the seaside within the high water marke, this river is become much shallower than formerly, and ships cannot soe safely ride before the towne in stormy weather as heretofore; And if bringing downe such rubbish bee not for the future obstructed it may endanger the harbour and the safe rideing of shipp therein. Itt is ordered, that if any inhabitant of this towne or any other shall bring any clay, stone or rubbish from henceforth to the seaside within the high water marke, shall forfeit for every cart load soe by him or them brought downe, five shillings. And every shipp which shall discharge any shilly or stone ballast southwards of the shilly path in this river shall forfeit ten shillings for every defalt. This order to be fixed in publick places of this towne.”

“ 1678 Nov<sup>r</sup> 4. Portmoot.

“ John Harris, presented for lightninge of ballast out of y<sup>e</sup> ‘Wheele of Fortune’ upon the strand, contrarie to former orders 10<sup>s</sup>.”

Fines for  
depositing  
Rubbish.

Wheel of  
Fortune.

This entry is remarkable as illustrating the durability of the oak-built ships of those days. It is recorded that ninety years afterwards (in 1768) the same vessel, during a high tide, ran her bowsprit through the window of a house at the bottom of James Street. How long before 1678 she was built, or how long after 1768 she lasted, we have no means of ascertaining.

- Repairing Key. 1669, Octr 15<sup>th</sup> "Wee order that the Key be repaired by the first of February next."
- Perch on Key. "1672 Jany 27<sup>th</sup> Ordered, that the Water Baylive Thomas Row, doe erect a Perch at the lower end of the Key as formerly, within this tenn dayes upon the penalty of v<sup>s</sup>."
- Black Rock Perch. 1683, Jany 8. Portmoot. "Wee order that the Perch bee brought from Crosbie, or a new one sett upp at the blacke rocke, at the towne's charge, before the first day of March next, and that everie forreigne vessell that comes into the harbour shall pay sixe pence."
- "Wee order that noe shipp shall lye upon the strand unmoored above y<sup>e</sup> space of twentie foure houres; and shall moore accordinge as the water-bailive shall give order."

The increase of ships towards the end of the century created considerable difficulty for their accommodation in the small harbour formed by the Pool. Stringent regulations became necessary.

- Regulations in Mooring Ships. "1701, Jany 13<sup>th</sup> Att a Councell &c.  
"Whereas there hath been a peticon of several Masters of ships belonging to this port to y<sup>e</sup> Mai<sup>r</sup> Ald<sup>m</sup> & Councell complaining of y<sup>e</sup> great damages sustain<sup>d</sup> by y<sup>e</sup> carelessness of persons not duly mooring their ships to y<sup>e</sup> great damage not onely of y<sup>e</sup> owners whose ships are not well moored, but of those that are by reason of the illmoor'd ships falling foul of those that are well moor'd; This Councell hath taken it into considera<sup>on</sup>, and (pursuant to y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> peticon) annex fresh penalties to such offences as (is hoped) may reduce y<sup>e</sup> offenders to greater care and diligence, and p<sup>r</sup>vent at least a great many of such like losses and inconveniences as have formerly been sustain'd by such carelesnesse and irregularity."
- "Orders to be observ'd as followeth.
- Three Cables to each. "Ordered, That all ships that lye within the banck and below y<sup>e</sup> watershed end, shall be moored with three cables and three anchors, to wit, one to y<sup>e</sup> Northwest, another to y<sup>e</sup> Southeast, and another to y<sup>e</sup> Westward, as the Water Baylive shall see convenient & for every default (after notice given) the offender is to pay five shillings."
- "That all such ships which lye above Water Street end shall moore West Nor-west and East Southeast and that care be taken both by y<sup>e</sup> inshore and outward ships that they lay their anchors so to passe that they do not injure one another, and every defaulter (after notice given) shall pay five shillings."
- Power to Water Bailiff. "That forasmuch as all y<sup>e</sup> inconveniences w<sup>ch</sup> may happen cannot be at pr<sup>t</sup> foreseen by us, wee do empower y<sup>e</sup> Waterbaylive to lay, remove and secure as to him shall seem most advantageous for y<sup>e</sup> prevention of damage to ships or merchandize, and on refusal, every such offender shall be brought before y<sup>e</sup> Maior or his deputie y<sup>e</sup> Water baylive shewing his silver oar (if required) being a warrant for y<sup>e</sup> same, without any further sumons or processe, & for disobeying y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> order a warrant is to be issued out by
- Silver Oar.

Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> or his deputy, for which y<sup>e</sup> offender is to pay y<sup>e</sup> charg, over & above y<sup>e</sup> penalties within mentioned.

“ That all persons heaving out ballast within full sea mark (w<sup>th</sup>out Ballast. leave) shall forfeit fourtie shillings.

“ That all those persons that leave great stones in y<sup>e</sup> harbour shall pay Stones. tenne shillings.

“ That those persons y<sup>t</sup> make docks & fill y<sup>m</sup> not up in eight dayes time Docks. (after notice given) do pay five Pounds.

“ That those y<sup>t</sup> leave their anchors to y<sup>e</sup> offin without buoys do pay Anchors. sixe shillings eight pence.

“ That those that lay their inshore anchors without buoys do pay three Buoys. shillings four pence.

“ That all ships that are to be layd up or broken up shall be brought by Laying up. their owners ov<sup>r</sup> the Pool, to lye there out of y<sup>e</sup> way in default (after notice given) y<sup>e</sup> offenders are to pay five pounds.

“ That all owners of ferry boates & river boates that are guilty of any of Boats. y<sup>e</sup> here menconed offences shall be lyable to y<sup>e</sup> same penalties as ships, pinks or ketches or any other sort of ships of greater burthen.

“ That all ships that lye on one anothers cables after notice given shall Foulng Cables. pay tenne shillings a tide.

“ Signed

“ THO. BICKESTETH

“ JASPER MAUDIT

“ RICH<sup>d</sup> NORRES

“ & 23 others.”

The above regulations indicate the pressure of the increasing commerce upon the limited accommodation, which led a few years afterwards to the commencement of the series of floating docks which have expanded to such gigantic dimensions.

The same causes required the adoption of a regulated scale of harbour dues, which were set forth as follows:—

“ 1701, Feby 9<sup>th</sup> Thos Bickesteth gent. Maior.

“ Att a Councell &c

“ It is this day order<sup>d</sup> That all ships belonging to freemen and forraigners Harbour Dues. shall pay to y<sup>e</sup> Water Baylive of this towne y<sup>e</sup> respective sums hereafter mencon<sup>d</sup> and comence from the day and year above written.

“ That all ships belonging to freemen coming coastwayes and from Coastways. Ireland, Scotland and the Isle of Man shall pay sixe pence every voyadg.

“ That all strangers from the afores<sup>d</sup> places shall pay every voyadg twelve pence.

“ That all ships belonging to freemen coming from Sweden Denmarke, Foreign Parts. France, Spain, Portugal shall pay nine pence every voyadg.

“ That all strangers fr<sup>'</sup> the afores<sup>d</sup> places shall pay eighteene pence every voyadg.

- Colonies. "That all ships from his Majest<sup>s</sup> Plantacons abroad fr' fifetie tuns downwards shall pay eightene pence every voyadg.
- "That all ships fr' his Majest<sup>s</sup> Plantacons fr' fifetie tuns or upwards shall pay two shillings sixe pence every Voyadg.
- Anchorage. "That y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Waterbaylive shall receive all anchorage due from forraigners as formerly, over and above y<sup>e</sup> sums herein mencon'd & hee to have y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>u</sup>me of thirty pounds p<sup>r</sup> ann. out of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> sums, anchorage included.
- Proceeds. "That what shall happen to be received more than y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>u</sup>me of thirty Pounds shall be payd to y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon and w<sup>t</sup> be received lesse, shall be made up by y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon. The small p<sup>r</sup>quisits of freemen viz (his part) and arreasting of ships or men, still to belong to him, extra fr' any acc<sup>t</sup> or deduction fr' y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Thirty Pounds."

The anchorage dues mentioned above as receivable by the Water Bailiff, were regulated by the following order :—

- Scale of Dues. "1691, April 20<sup>th</sup> We order that Philip Harrison being elected Waterbaylive shall have (during the town's pleasure and no longer) twelve pence for every strangers ship, drawing tenne foote water or upwards for every voyadg, and sixe pence every voyage for every stranger's ship drawing lesse than tenne foote water; and y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> town's ships shall pay (according to their draught of water) one moietie of what strangers do and that Philip Harrison from henceforward shall keep up and repair y<sup>e</sup> perch at y<sup>e</sup> Rock at his own charg."
- Poole in default. 1691 Aug 12 "Upon Philip Harrison's peticon concerning Mr David Poole not paying town duty for two ships of Corn and for an augmentacon of his own sallery; order'd to be deliberated on till next Councell day."
- Coat for Bailiff. "1691 Nov 7<sup>th</sup> It is order'd that y<sup>e</sup> Water Baylive shall have a coat during his office at the town's charg, and a silver oar, w<sup>ch</sup> shall annually be return'd as y<sup>e</sup> town's plate."

Reference is occasionally made to the progress of ship building.

- Ship Building. "1681 July 11<sup>th</sup> Portmoot.
- "Wee order, That the dockes w<sup>ch</sup> were made for the launchinge of Richard Tarletons and William Chantrell's Pinckes, bee evenlye filled up before the 25th day of this instant July upon penalty of five pounds."
- "1690 Sept 19<sup>th</sup> Upon Thomas Webster's peticon to build a small vessel on the north side of y<sup>e</sup> poole it is granted, he begging Mr Mai<sup>r</sup>s pardon for his stubborn language."
- Fees. "1699 Novr 8<sup>th</sup> It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell, that y<sup>e</sup> carpenters y<sup>t</sup> now are building ships, or y<sup>t</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> future shall build ships on y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon Wast, shall pay sixe pence p<sup>r</sup> tunne for libertie of building, to be computed according to fair tunnage."



The time of forced levies of seamen and soldiers was passing away, but had not altogether come to an end.

"1664 Nov<sup>r</sup> 18<sup>th</sup> John Sturzaker Gent. Maior.

"A l're from the Privie Counsell to the Justices &c.

"After our hartie comendacons, Whereas for the better & more speedie supply & furnishinge his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s fleetes from tyme to tyme w<sup>th</sup> able & sufficient mariners and seamen, Wee have thought it expedient that the lists of the names of all the seamen of this kingdome be exactly taken & p<sup>r</sup>sented unto us; Wee doe hereby pray & require you forthw<sup>th</sup> to give direccons to all the head boroughs, constables and tythingmen or such other p<sup>r</sup>sons w<sup>th</sup>in that countie as you shall conceive most fitt to be ymployed therein; comanding them to make exact lists of the names of all such seamen as inhabite w<sup>th</sup>in their respective p<sup>r</sup>ishes & p<sup>r</sup>incts, together w<sup>th</sup> an account of their sev<sup>al</sup>l ages; And to make speedie returnes thereof to you, w<sup>ch</sup> lists as soone as you have received wee expect and require that you forthwith transmitt them unto us; & lykewise that you send a duplicate thereof to the vice admirall of that countie or his deputy. And so nothing doubting of yo<sup>r</sup> more than ordinary share in his Ma<sup>ty</sup>s soe important service, wee bid you farewell.

Register of  
Seamen.

"From the Co<sup>t</sup> at Whitehall the 18<sup>th</sup> day of Nov<sup>r</sup>ber 1664.

"Yo<sup>r</sup> very lo : friends

"ORMOND

"LAUDERDALE

"MIDLETON

"& 7 others."

Some of the regulations of the port are curious.

"1671 Octr 18<sup>th</sup> Portmoot.

"Ordered that every Merchant or freeman shall have libertie to make choise of his owne porters being freemen, and not to bee tyed to any of the porters formerly named. And for whatever Woole is imported there shall bee allowed by ev<sup>ry</sup>e such porter the portorage of everie sixth bagg unto John Sanderson, the same being thought fitt by us towards the maintenance of the said John Sanderson."

Regulations of  
Porters.

"1684 June 4<sup>th</sup> Ordered that Richard Diggles (one of the present Baylives) doe take care of the Comon Hall and all the materials thereto belonging, viz<sup>t</sup> beames, weights, scales &c and make triall what advantage thereof may bee made for this Corporation. And that all forreiners shall there lay their imported merchandizes, there to be foureteene dayes rent free, and there weighed if sold. And that the s<sup>d</sup> Richard Diggles shall have just consideration for his care and paines therein, and if hee please may imploye Richard Worrall under him as porter of the said Common hall, to mannage affaires there, as may bee most conducible for publicke good."

Common Hall  
Regulations.

There are a few indications of incipient manufactures.

- Silk Weaving. "1686 Octr 22<sup>nd</sup> Peter Bold of Bold Esquire Maior.  
"Ordered that George Tarvin, waiter in the Custome house, bee admitted to make use of his loomes for silke gloves and stockinges during the pleasure of this house."
- Rope Making. "1689 Apl 16<sup>th</sup> Thomas Tyrer Esq<sup>r</sup> Maior.  
"Whereas John Bamber peticoned for a spinning place<sup>1</sup> at y<sup>e</sup> entrance into y<sup>e</sup> town field out of y<sup>e</sup> Old Hall Street, it is referr<sup>d</sup> to the view of Mr James Benn, one of the p'sent Baylives, Mr Thomas Brookbanck, Mr William Travis & Mr Rich<sup>d</sup> Diggles."
- Rope Walk. "1692, Jany 12<sup>th</sup> Joshua Fisher gent. Maior.  
"Upon Ald<sup>rm</sup> William Clayton his peticioning for a spinning place going up towards y<sup>e</sup> Park gate for three lives and twenty one yeares, and for room for a house and warehouse fourtie yards in length and sixteene yards in breadth, its referred to William Williamson, Richard Windall and Thomas Brookbancke Ald<sup>rm</sup> and Thomas Bickesteth, William Preeson, James Benn and Thom. Johnson jun<sup>r</sup> to discourse and settle y<sup>e</sup> rate what others are to pay for making cables at y<sup>e</sup> same rope walk, proporconing y<sup>e</sup> length and inches, and when determined on, a price what to pay for making of cables as aforesaid, hee is to have y<sup>e</sup> same walk for three lives and twenty one yeares, paying eight shillings  $\text{p}^{\text{r}}$  ann. during y<sup>e</sup> tearme, and building a house on y<sup>e</sup> p'misses three stories high, cellar included ; y<sup>e</sup> house to be sixteene yards long, and seaven yards wide, and the rope walke to be converted to no other use but a rope walke."

The Potteries, which formed for half a century one of the chief manufactures in the town, did not commence until the beginning of the following century, but a considerable trade existed in the coarse earthenware made at Prescott, to which there are frequent references.

- Mugs and Pottery. 1665, Sept. 29th. "Ordered that all that shall bring in to this towne any cart loads of mugges or earthenwares w<sup>ch</sup> are now very numerous, and much oppresse and cut out the streetes of this towne, shall pay to the townes use iiij<sup>d</sup> for e'vy cart load they shall hereafter bring into this towne."

- Currency. The currency at this time was in an unsatisfactory condition. There was a great deficiency of small change, to supply which various tradesmen put forth copper coinage on their own account, frequently of less intrinsic than the nominal value.

<sup>1</sup> A ropery for manufacturing cordage.

"1667, Octr 28<sup>th</sup> Thomas Vis<sup>t</sup> Colchester Maior.

"Wee order that all those that have or shall put forth halfe penny<sup>es</sup> in <sup>Copper</sup> this towne shall give in sufficient bond to the Maior or his deputy of this <sup>Coinage.</sup> towne att any time for silver, before the xiiij<sup>th</sup> of Nov'ber next in payne of v<sup>li</sup>."

"1669, March 8<sup>th</sup> William Lord Strange Maior.

"Great Port Moot.

"Wee present Mr Thomas Johnson, Mr George Bennett, Mr John <sup>Fine for</sup> Pemberton, Mr Richard Crompton, Mr William Bushell, Mr Edward <sup>Coining.</sup> Williamson and Peter Atherton all for putting forth halfe-penny<sup>s</sup> without the townes lycense. Am'ced in xl<sup>s</sup> a peece."

The current coin of the realm was in such a condition that it required an Order in Council to enforce its circulation.

"1690 Octr 27<sup>th</sup> Thomas Brookbank Maior.

"In pursuance of an Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> 19<sup>th</sup> of Henry the 7<sup>th</sup> and of an order by their Majest<sup>s</sup> in Councel, and by a particular order of y<sup>e</sup> <sup>Cracked</sup> Justices of y<sup>e</sup> Peace of this County att y<sup>e</sup> Gen<sup>l</sup> Assizes formerly holden at <sup>Money to</sup> Lancaster, that all crackt money holding together and not diminish<sup>t</sup> or <sup>pass.</sup> clipt being the lawful coin of England should passe. Wee order y<sup>t</sup> the said orders shall be observ'd in this town, as all such persons who shall offend herein shall answer the contrary at their perils. And that this order be fixt upon y<sup>e</sup> most usual places within this towne and burrough of Liverpoole."



## STREETS AND BUILDINGS.

---

Increase of  
Buildings.

The development of commerce after the Restoration soon began to manifest itself in the increase of building. During many ages the town had been limited to the original streets, Castle Street, Water Street (under different names), Dale Street, Chapel Street, Jugler Street (High Street), Tithebarn Street, and Oldhall Street.

List of Streets.

In 1677 a list of streets is given in the record, from which it appears there had been up to that time added Lord Mollineux Street (now Lord Street), Lancelots Hey, Hackins Hey, Moor Street, Castle Hill, Preeson's Row, Phenix (Fenwick) Street, Phenix Alley (destroyed), Bridge Alley (Old Ropery), and two new streets in Tarlton's Field (Redcross Street and James Street).

Regulations.

In 1678, December 5th, a list of regulations is prefixed by the statement—

“Whereas by dailye experience wee find that by reason of the late improvements in buildinge of houses and shippes in and about this burrough and Corporation, a great concourse of people have of late time resorted hither, and have beene concealed in designe to gaine settlements,” &c.

Extent of  
Town.

The town was at that time circumscribed within the Pool Stream, which ran along the course of Byrom Street, White-chapel, and Paradise Street, and was crossed by bridges at the end of Dale Street, the foot of Lord Street, and by a third from the site of King Street to Hanover Street. In 1684, John Street was opened. Before the end of the century the town had crossed the stream, and pushed its way along the present



line of Church Street eastward ; and northward as far as Union Street, which was cut through the precincts of the Old Hall.

The Castle from its rocky eminence still dominated over the town, and the Stanley family maintained their dignity in the Tower, in Water Street. Interesting glimpses of this progress are to be gleaned from the records.

1664 Mar 6<sup>th</sup> "Ordered that the poole bridge, and bridge at the Bridges. towne's end at Dale Street end shall be repayed att the charges of this towne, at the direction & appointm<sup>t</sup> of Mr Maior and such as he shall think meet. And that the inhabitants of Tox<sup>th</sup> & other foreign<sup>rs</sup> be desired to be assisting w<sup>th</sup> there teames and servants att that worke."

1665, July 20<sup>th</sup> "Ordered that Mr Jerome and his p<sup>t</sup>ners w<sup>ch</sup> lead Pool Bridge. coales for them, shall be assisting to amending of the poole-bridge, as Mr Maior shall appoint."

1679 April 28<sup>th</sup> "Wee order that battlements bee raised on the poole- Battlements, bridge, for securitie of persons passinge in the night, and that two &c. dangerous water holes close by the foote waye neere Richard Jones house on the heath, bee filled upp before the last day of May next."

1680 Apl 19<sup>th</sup> "Wee order that Robert Prenton doe stopp up the new channell above poole bridge & open the old watercourse or channell before the 29<sup>th</sup> day of September next on paine of fourtie shillings."

The improvement and paving of the streets occupied considerable attention.

1666 Jany 22<sup>nd</sup> "Wee ord<sup>r</sup> that Roger Bushell shall throwe down that Ditches and new ditch hee made at south side of the castle upon the towne's waste Copps. before the tenth day of February next in y<sup>e</sup> forfeitte of xx<sup>s</sup> for such neglect."

"Wee ord<sup>r</sup> that the said Roger Bushell throw the coppe hee made upon the highway att east side of the castle into the castle trench, and throwe uppe that p<sup>t</sup> of the highway hee throwed downe into the trench before the fifteenth day of February next, in forfeit of xx<sup>s</sup> for such neglect."

1665 July 20<sup>th</sup>. "Ordered that ev'y inhabitant of this towne shall att Repair of or before Mich'as next, putt so much of the street into good repaire as Streets. shall be over against there respective dwellinge house, barn, housing, or wall, to the next channel or midle of the street upon payne of x<sup>s</sup> a peece."

It will be noticed from this entry that the streets at this time were without footwalks, with a channel running down the middle. Some of the bye-streets continued in this state within living memory.

"1673 Port Moot.

"Wee order the towne to make cleare and pave the street on the cock Paving.

of the Castell to the westheard or to cause theire tenants to doe it  $\text{p}$  the 25th March next.

"Wee order the towne and Esq<sup>r</sup> Moore, each concerned, to pave from the New Hall on Castle Hill to the pavement in Castle street on penalty of forty shillings a peece."

Causey.

1675 October 25th. "Wee order that a foot cawsey be made 'twixt the Castle Street end, and the Lord Molyneux St end' at the charg of the towne before the tenth of November next."

1685, October 26th. "We order that Richard Tarleton, Richard Seddon & Mr Robert Bradshaw doe cause a pavement to bee made alonge the bricke wall belonging to their house at the side of Lancelotts field."

Pavements to  
New  
Buildings.

1685 October 26th. "Wee order that all persons who have erected new buildings within this burrough shall make sufficient pavements to the front of their houses before the tenth day of Januarie next, on penaltie of tenne shillings on everie person for his default."

Covent  
Garden, &c.

1694 May 2nd. "Coven Garden, Poole Lane, and a spott near Drye Bridg, being ill paved or part unpaved, Mr Maior is requested to agree for the pavem<sup>t</sup> and paym<sup>t</sup> of the same, and all other places in the town are to be paved as Mr. Maior in his discretion shall think meet."

The lighting and watching were still in a very primitive condition.

Lanterns to  
Taverns.

"1673 Oct. 27<sup>th</sup> Port Moot.

"Wee order that every publick house hang out lanternes and light candles at theire doores from the first of November next till the second of February next, till 8 a clock at night, from day shutting, upon penalty of vi<sup>d</sup> a night."

"1675, Octr 25<sup>th</sup> Port Moot.

"Wee order that all taverns, inns, and ale houses, hang out theire lights to the streets, from the tyme it beginns to be darke til nyne a clocke ev'y night on payne of sixpence  $\text{p}$  night. And that the Bellman give notice with lanthorne & candle."

"1679 Nov. 17<sup>th</sup> Wee order that lights bee sett out everie night at everie Innehouse & Alehouse (except y<sup>e</sup> Lord's day at night) from sixe till nine a clocke upon penalty of a former order."

As to watching.

Watching by  
Householders.

"1665, July 10<sup>th</sup> John Sturzaker Gent. Maior.

"Ordered by the Maior Aldermen & Comon Counsell then & there present. That a watch shall be sett at ev'y street end to continue xxiiij houres, viz<sup>t</sup> att Water Street end two, at Dale Street end two; two att the end of Castle Street, att the end of Tythebarn Street & Ould Hall Street, and two at the end of Chappel Street. The same watch to beginne at six in the eveninge and to end at six of the next eveninge. The same watch to be observed by the household<sup>rs</sup> in theire owne persons, unles Mr Maior find just cause to spare them."

This was evidently an extraordinary precaution, and arose

out of the visitation of the plague, which had just broken out with such virulence in London, and continued during the whole year. On the 2nd November a public meeting of the burgesses was convened by the Mayor (Mr. Michael Tarleton), when it was resolved—

“That upon consideration and apprehension of the spreading contagion of the plague in divers neighbouring towns, in Cheshire, and other parts, and of the great concourse of people usually from these parts all the time of the fairs kept in this town, it is generally voted, agreed, thought fit, and so ordered, that the keeping of the fair here on St. Martin’s day next (Nov. 11<sup>th</sup>) the eve, and other usual days after, here accustomedly kept, shall on this present exigent of danger, for this year be absolutely forborne and forbidden by open publication, and notice thereof in the open market the next market day.”

Precautions  
against  
Plague.  
  
The Fair  
suspended.

As we have no record of any attack of the plague, it is to be presumed that these precautionary measures proved effectual.

1665 Sept 29<sup>th</sup> “Itt is ordered that all p’sons inhabitants of this towne, shall from henceforth watch in theire own p’sons, & upon theire reasonable excuse to be made to the said Mr Maior, if there (be) such as he shall approve of.”

“1677, Aug 13. Portmoot.

“Wee p’sent John Hoole (& 27 others) for not watching upon warneing given him according to a former order iij<sup>s</sup>.”

“1678 Jany 28<sup>th</sup> Portmoot.

“Wee p’sent Edward Williamson in the Water Street, for neglecting the watch after warning given him 1<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup> (48 other names). All of these for neglecting to watch as afores<sup>d</sup>.”

“1678 Octr 25<sup>th</sup> John Chorley Gent. Maior.

“Att an Assembly &c. Ordered that twelve sufficient housekeepers or a greater number of them (as Mr Maior shall see cause) shall everie night keepe watch from sixe a clock at night to sixe a clock the next morninge, and when housekeepers are absent or unable to watch, such able servants shall bee sent to watch as Mr. Maior or his Bailives shall thincke fitt, and each night a captaine to bee appointed to mannage the watch.”

Housekeepers  
to watch.

In 1667 the town was divided into wards for administrative purposes, as appears from the following record :—

“1667, June 20<sup>th</sup> Charles Earl of Darbie Maior.

“It is ordered that this towne shall be devided into five divisions or wards, viz<sup>t</sup> the first Chappell Street w<sup>th</sup> Ouldhall Street w<sup>th</sup> those houses in the Churchyard;

Division into  
Wards.

“The second Jugler’s Street w<sup>th</sup> Tythebarn Street.

“The third Dale Street, Henry Fazakerley’s house on the heath, Will<sup>m</sup> Garner’s house & Tythbarne Lane.

“The fourth Castle Street, Castle Hill, Moore Streete, Poole houses & Duke’s house.

“The fifth, Water Street, Phenix Street, w<sup>th</sup> other lands adjoyninge.

“And that for the residue of this yeare untill the next Eleccion day, Mr Tho: Andoe, Ald<sup>r</sup>man will take care of the said first ward; Mr Henry Corleyes Ald<sup>r</sup>man of the second ward; Mr Peter Lurting Ald<sup>r</sup>man of the third ward, Mr Jo: Chandler Ald<sup>r</sup>man of the fourth ward; Mr John Sturzaker Ald<sup>r</sup>man of the fifth ward.”

High Cross  
removed.

In 1673, the ancient High Cross was removed to make way for the erection of the Town Hall. This does not seem to have met with universal approval.

“1674, May 25th. At a Port Moot.

“Thomas Mathews for giving reproachfull speeches against the authority of the towne concerning takeing down of the Crosse; Am<sup>d</sup> 6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup>.”

Names on  
Buildings.

1686, February 18th. “Ordered, that the names w<sup>ch</sup> without order of Councill are sett upon the buildings erected by this Corpora<sup>n</sup> bee pull’d downe or rased, and these words ‘Built by the Corporation,’ bee sett upp.”

Poole’s Alms-  
houses.

1684, May 7th. “Ordered That Mr David Poole’s freind shall have libertie to build twelve Almshouses on the wast ground at the end of Dale Streete formerly set forth for that purpose; and may dispose of them during his life onely to such poore persons as are inhabitants in this Corporation. And that hee may make sixtie thousand bricks for the said buildings upon the Common at the place formerlie appointed without any consideration for the same.”

Dale Street.

These alms-houses were built at the east end of Dale Street, opposite the end of Byrom Street. In 1748, having become dilapidated, they were removed, and others erected in the new Haymarket. In 1787, by arrangement with the Corporation, these and several other similar erections were removed, re-erected, and consolidated near Hope Street, where they still remain.

Haymarket.

Hope Street.

Moore  
disputes.

It has been noticed in the last section, that the relations between the Moore family, the largest landed proprietors within the borough, and the Corporation, were not very cordial. Their interests seemed to clash at various points.



In regard to the regulations laid down by the authorities there was continual resistance.

"1667 Octr 28<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot.

"Wee order that a yate & steele shall be made & sett up by Edw<sup>d</sup> Gate and More Esq<sup>r</sup> at the end of the towne's Comon as formerly, before the second Stile. of February next on payne of x<sup>s</sup>."

1669 Jany 13<sup>th</sup> "Wee ord<sup>r</sup> that Esq<sup>r</sup> Moore make upp his fence, yate & Fences. steele att the end of Mr Corleyes Comon betwixt 10<sup>th</sup> of March upon penalty of vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>."

1669 Octr 15<sup>th</sup> "Wee present Mr Edward Moore of Banckhall for Dung. muck lyinge against his croft in Dale Street vj<sup>d</sup>."

1671 Octr 23<sup>rd</sup> "Ordered that Edward Moore Esq<sup>r</sup> shall cause a water- Watercourse. course to bee made to carry the water from the Castle Street, from the end of Giles Mercer's house according as formerly it hath done, before the fifth of November next, or if not soe done shall forfeit xx<sup>s</sup>."

"1672, Octr 28<sup>th</sup> Port Moot.

"Presented Edward Moore Esq for dung lying in the street.

"Item Edward Moore Esq, for sueing Rob<sup>t</sup> Seacome, out of the juris- Ignoring Jurisdiction. diction of this court.

"Item Edward Moore Esq for not paying their leys."

1673 Octr 27 "Wee p'sent Edward Moore Esq for rubbish lyinge in Rubbish. Phenix Street.

"Wee order Edward Moore Esq to make up his fence betwixt him and William Royle upon paine of 1<sup>s</sup> by the first of January next."

1674 Octr 26<sup>th</sup> "Wee p'sent Edward Moore Esq for muck lyinge in Manure. the Tith Barne Street and in Phenix Street 2<sup>s</sup>."

1675 Feby 7<sup>th</sup> "Ordered that Edward Moore, Knight, doe foy his street betwixt the Bridge end and the howse that David Cook lived in, before the five and twentieth day of March next upon penalty of xl<sup>s</sup>."

1677 Augt 13<sup>th</sup> "Wee p'sent S<sup>r</sup> Edward Moor or his tenants for Encroach- inchoaching on the town's waste at the end of the Castle hill by building ment. thereon part of a howse wherein Peter Allin doth live, and the howse called Dicconson's howse."

These repeated attacks were not calculated to soothe the irritable disposition of the squire of Bankhall, which expresses itself in his *Rental* in very strong language. He says of the burgesses—

"Therefore since God hath by me forewarned you, have a care you never trust them, for there is no such thing as truth or honesty in such mercenary fellows, but what tends to their own ends. And this observe as a general rule, civility will do no good, but make them contemn you for a kind fool;"

with much more to the same effect.

The supply of water to the town began to attract attention

Water Supply.

towards the end of the seventeenth century. Originally, for a small community, the locality was well supplied. The upper strata of the new red sandstone abounded with water, which either oozed out in the form of springs, or was easily accessible by sinking shallow wells. Each house owner had no difficulty in sinking a well for the supply of his property where necessary.

Well, Moore  
Street.

“1666 Octr 22<sup>nd</sup> At a Port Moot.

“Wee ord<sup>r</sup> Mr Moore of Banckhall to cause a wall to be made abt the well in the Moore Street on payne of xx<sup>s</sup>.”

There were several public wells about the town, the principal of which was the Old Fall-well, near the corner of St. John's Lane and Roe Street, situated over the outcrop of the sandstone strata.

Fall Well.

1679 Apl 28<sup>th</sup> “Wee order that the fall-well bee dressed and y<sup>e</sup> ground raised, that the water may fall from it.”

Repairs.

1694, July 9<sup>th</sup> “Wee order the Supravis<sup>rs</sup> of the Highway do see the Fall-wall-well cleansed, and the flags that are now loose and broaken about the well mouth may be layd and raised somewhat higher, with some new gutters layd for conveying away the durty water, which now lyes about the well and runs into it, and that some ridg stones may be sett round the mouth of the well, to p<sup>r</sup>vent servants for washing in it, to the end it may be kept kneet and clean.”

“1695, Octr 28<sup>th</sup> Tho. Johnson Jun<sup>r</sup> Maior.

Under this date we have the first intimation of any attempt of a public nature to supply water to the town. The entry is as follows :—

Water  
Company.

“Upon the Petico<sup>n</sup> of Mr John Green, Mr Thomas Tuttell, and Mr Richard Barrey, proposing to bring fresh water to such houses in and about the town, and they to pay a moderate rate for the same, It is ordered, That they have liberty to bring into town good wholesome washing water, and for their convenient placing of the aqueduct may have liberty to break up ground in the town, wast, and streets; and to make and repair the aqueduct, immediately levelling the same, and leaving it as it was; and may also have liberty on any part of the wast and uninclosed ground to place a cistern (but not in the streets or Chappell yard). They are not to pinch the water from the faw-well, are to pay tenne pounds  $\pounds$  ann<sup>m</sup> and to have it for ninety nine yeares, onely. Mr Maior, Mr Richard Norres, Mr Hewstonn, the Baylives, Ald<sup>m</sup> Thomas

Johnson, Ald<sup>rm</sup> Jasper Maudit, Mr Wm Travis, Mr William Preeson and Mr James Benn have power to treat with them about the annual rent, and have power to mitigate the same, if they find it convenient, as also to treat on any point requisite about the same."

1695, Octr 29<sup>th</sup> "Mr Maior, Ald<sup>rm</sup> Thomas Johnson (with the others) Lease. have unanimously concluded to let them have the lease of y<sup>e</sup> Waterworks (according to order of Councell yesterday) for the tearme of one hundred yeares at the rate of fiftie shillings £ ann<sup>m</sup>."

"1699 March 6<sup>th</sup> Cuthb<sup>t</sup> Sharples Esq Maior.

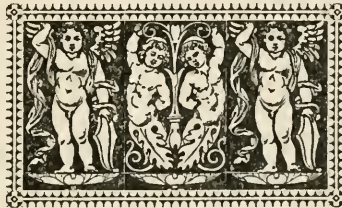
"Whereas a lease was granted some yeares since to Green, Berrey and Thomas Tuthill of Waterworks to be begun and p<sup>r</sup>fect<sup>d</sup> by a certain Lease cancelled. time long since expired, and y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Green, Berry & Tuthill have not to this day begun on y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> worke, as they were oblig<sup>d</sup> by their lease but have neglected to pay any rent for y<sup>e</sup> same. This Councell doth declare y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> lease to be null and void and Mr Maior is desired to inspect and take advice on y<sup>e</sup> counterp<sup>t</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> lease, and to make enquiry for such p<sup>r</sup>sons as are qualified for such an und<sup>r</sup>taking and recom<sup>e</sup>nd to y<sup>e</sup> Councell as soon as he conveniently can, to y<sup>e</sup> end y<sup>e</sup> said works may be brought speedily to effect for y<sup>e</sup> service and advantage of y<sup>e</sup> said Corporation."

The scheme collapsed, and was no more heard of until another attempt was made, in 1709, to supply the town with water from Bootle Springs, which also failed.

Some provision was made for extinguishing fires.

Extinguishing  
Fires.

"1696, Feby 19. Order<sup>d</sup> to some new buckets be bought and y<sup>e</sup> old poles and hookes renew<sup>d</sup> in order to extinguish any accidentall fire."



## ECCLESIASTICAL NOTICES.

---

Fogg ejected. Mr. John Fogg, the Presbyterian incumbent under the Commonwealth, was ejected under the Act of Uniformity in 1662, and was subsequently compelled, under the Five Mile Act, to quit the town. His successor was Mr. John Leigh, appointed by the Council, as had hitherto been the case, without any interference. Against this appointment a protest was now entered by the Rector of Walton, and the matter was litigated for some years.

Election of  
Minister  
disputed.

“ 1669, Nov 30<sup>th</sup> Thomas Bickesteth gen. Maior.

“ Att an Assembly &c Whereas Mr Maior was lately by process out of the Consistory Court at Chester served or summoned to appear in the s<sup>d</sup> Court; And likewise Mr John Leigh our minister; And accordingly articles exhibited ag<sup>t</sup> the s<sup>d</sup> Mr Leigh, but not proved at present ag<sup>t</sup> Mr Maior, yet in regard the same articles seeme to relate to our said election, & to our tytle & electing a minister of our Chappell of Liv'poole granted to us by her late Ma<sup>ty</sup> of glorious memory Queen Elizabeth. It is therefore hereby ordered by the same Assembly, that it shall be lawfull to and for the s<sup>d</sup> Mr Bicksteth o<sup>r</sup> Maior, at all tymes hereafter during the tyme of his Maioralty, for quieting of the s<sup>d</sup> compl<sup>a</sup> either ag<sup>t</sup> the s<sup>d</sup> Mr Maior or Mr Leigh, or any other of this towne in reference to the s<sup>d</sup> election or any other concerne of this towne, to ymploy & order a Solicitor as he shall see meet in defence of the said matters, or any other matt<sup>r</sup> now stirred up or hereafter to be stirred up in reference to the said election; & all charges shall be paid out of the s<sup>d</sup> towne's treasury. And whereas letters are frequent to Mr Maior from our burgesses & Mr Birch and others in reference to the towne's concerne, w<sup>ch</sup> to answer & make returne to, wee do further order that the s<sup>d</sup> Mr Maior may answer the same as he shall from tyme to tyme think meet, taking to his assistance some such of the Councill as he shall think fitt, being four at the least, w<sup>th</sup>out calling a full assembly. And we doe hereby ratify & allow what they shall act in reference thereto.”

Defended at  
Town's cost.

Resolution of  
Council.

1669, December 21<sup>st</sup>. “ Upon consideracon of the former ord<sup>r</sup> of the 30<sup>th</sup> of November last, w<sup>ch</sup> wee doe hereby ratify; And for that Mr. Marsden the Vicar of Walton hath lately made clayme to the right of appointinge a Minister in o<sup>r</sup> Chappell, and hath p'emptorily demanded the keyes thereof, as his owne right, contrary to our ancient grant in the



7<sup>th</sup> yeare of Queene Elizabeth, and o<sup>r</sup> constant usage ever since ; wee doe hereby w<sup>th</sup> much and unanimous resolucon declare that the appointing of Minister & Schoolmaster havinge bin by us & o<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>decessors injoyed for above a hundred yeares agoe ; it would not only be a losse, but great dishon<sup>r</sup> to this ancient Corporacon & us the members thereof, by surprize to be deprived thereof & w<sup>th</sup>out a faire & legall tryall. And therefore doe hereby order, that if any suit, trouble, or question shall arise concerninge the same against Mr Maior or other officer deteyninge the keyes or possession of the s<sup>d</sup> Chappell (after the suspension of Mr Leigh by Mr Marsden or Rector of Walton or other p<sup>r</sup>son whatsoev<sup>r</sup>) in the due defence of our said right, the said Mr. Maior and all other freemen of this towne so sued or p<sup>r</sup>secuted in any of his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Co<sup>r</sup>ts temporall or spirituall in reference thereunto, shall be indemnified, & defended att the charge of this towne to be paid upon Mr Maior's order out of the comon treasury ; and all other charges expedient or necessary in reference thereunto."

1670, January 18th. "Ordered, that the Grant of Queene Elizabeth <sup>Grant of Elizabeth.</sup> for p<sup>r</sup>vision for the Minister & Schoolmaster of this towne, shall be sent up by the towne clerk to be shewed to y<sup>e</sup> Bishop."

This appeal proved successful, and no further opposition was made.

1670, July 11th. "Att an Assembly, &c.

"In pursuance of our ancient and accustomed right of nomination, <sup>Hunter</sup> election & appointing of a fitt p<sup>r</sup>son to be Minister in the burrough of <sup>appointed.</sup> Liverpoole ; w<sup>th</sup> the advice and assent of the Lo: B<sup>pp</sup> of Chester for the tyme being ; Wee, whose names are subscribed hereunto, being the Maior & comonalty of the said burrough, according to ancient custom there used & approved, doe unanimously nominat & elect Mr Robert Hunter late of Macclesfield in the county of Chester clerk to be our minister ; and accordingly we humbly present the said Mr Rob<sup>t</sup> Hunter to the Right Reverend father in God John Lo: B<sup>pp</sup> of Chester,\* & desire his Lo<sup>pps</sup> assent & approbation thereunto.

"THOMAS BICKSTETH Maior,  
" & 25 others."

1672, May 30th. "Att an Assembly, &c.

"Ordered that the Minister of this Church (Mr Hunter) his house <sup>Minister's</sup> rent shall be paid by the Baylives of this towne out of the towne's <sup>House.</sup> treasury till further notice."

1683, October 29th. "Ordered that this Corporation shall paye tenne Rent. pounds p<sup>r</sup> annum house rent for Mr Robert Hunter, Minister here, and doe refer to himselfe the choice of a house in this towne to live in."

1684, March 4th. "Mr Robert Stith elected to be Schoolmaster & to Stith enter upon y<sup>e</sup> office on y<sup>e</sup> first day of May next, who is to read divine Schoolmaster. service on y<sup>e</sup> weeke daies" &c.

\* Wilkins.

1688. After a service of eighteen years, Mr. Robert Hunter died, when we find the following record:—

Atherton and  
Stith  
appointed  
Ministers.

"Sept. 5<sup>th</sup> James Prescott Esquire Maior.

"Att an Assemblie of the Common Councell of this burrough of Leverpoole; wee whose names are subscribed, being the Maior and others of the Councell of y<sup>e</sup> said burrough, according to auncient custome used and approved, taking into consideration the nomination and choice of a meete person to succeed our late reverened, learned and laborious Curate Mr Robert Hunter deceased, and having respect to the numerous audiorie, who everie Lord's day resort to our Chappell, and alsoe being satisfied that the worke of a Minister of God amongst us is much more than heretofore it was (by y<sup>e</sup> increase of inhabitants) and cannot bee soe well performed by one person; upon a free and full debate thereof, it was unanimously resolved, ordered & agreed (accordinge to the proposalls made by the Reverend Mr Thomas Pawlett, Rector, and Mr Thomas Marsden, Vicar, of Walton) to nominate and elect Mr William Atherton, and Mr Robert Stith to bee our Curates, to performe equall duetie and receive equal wages, and that both of them shall reside in this towne, to be readie on all occasions to performe all Christian offices amongst us.

"JAS PRESCOTT Mayor  
" & 33 others.

"NOTE.—Mr Pawlett being willing to allow 20li  $\text{p}$  ann. to this Chappell."

"1689, Octr 18<sup>th</sup> Mr. William Atherton and Mr Robert Styth, Ministers.

House Rent,  
&c.

"They are to be allow<sup>d</sup> tenn pounds  $\text{p}$  an. to pay their house rent & fiftie shillings  $\text{p}$  an. for afternoone praires, to continue whilst y<sup>e</sup> parson of Walton continues his allowance of fiftie shillig<sup>s</sup>  $\text{p}$  an. for y<sup>e</sup> same."

Parish.

Efforts had been previously made to constitute Liverpool a parish distinct from Walton, but without success. The increasing importance of the town gave encouragement to a renewed application, which was ultimately complied with.

Negotiation  
with Walton.

"1697, Decr. 1<sup>st</sup> James Benn Esq Maior.

"It is this day concluded in Councell, that Mr Maior be desir<sup>d</sup> to consult of means and methods to make this said town a Parish; and to take such persons with him as hee shall think fitt to discourse y<sup>e</sup> Reverend Mr Rich<sup>d</sup> Richmond, Rector of Walton, concerning the same, and then to apply himselfe to our pr<sup>t</sup> Members of Parliam<sup>t</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> offering thereof, and this to be done at y<sup>e</sup> charg of y<sup>e</sup> Corporacon."

Resolution.

1698, December 8th. "It is this day agreed in Councell, that (whereas there is an intention to make Liverpoole a Parish distinct from Walton) the Reverend Mr Richard Richmond (p'sent Rector of Walton) be consulted and agreed with, and to give him such a reasonable equivalent for his tythes within the Liberties of the towne during his

incumbency as Rector, as Mr Maior, the Aldermen and such other persons as Mr Maior shall take to his assistance shall agree with the s<sup>d</sup> Mr Richmond for, and this Councell will be determined by such methods as Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> and the s<sup>d</sup> persons shall conclude on. The persons immediately nominated and impowred by the Councell to attend and assist Mr Maior in this design<sup>d</sup> Agreem<sup>t</sup>."

Signed by the Mayor,  
Six Aldermen,  
Two Bailiffs,  
The Town Clerk, and others.

"It is further order<sup>d</sup> in Councell that Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> take such persons along with him (as hee thinks fitt) to go to Croxteth and discourse the Lord Molyneux touching y<sup>e</sup> patronage of the same."

1699, January 3rd. "Att a Councell &c

"Whereas S<sup>r</sup> William Norris, Baronet, and William Clayton Esq Application for Act.  
Burgesses for y<sup>e</sup> burrough of Liverpoole, were desired to procure an Act of Parliament to make Liverpool a Parish of itself, distinct from Walton, to erect a Church &c, Now this Councell doth order that y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> burgesses shall be reimbursed the charges that they or either of them have or may expend thereon, and shall be indemnified at the charg of the Corpora<sup>co</sup>n."

1699, February 23rd. "Att a Councell &c

"It is this day concluded order<sup>d</sup> and agreed in Councell, that whereas Negotiation with Lord Molyneux.  
there is an intention to make Liverpoole a Parish distinct from Walton, to erect and build a church &c, And it is found necessary, that the Lord Viscount Caryl Molyneux be apply'd to and agreed with for y<sup>e</sup> patronage and advousone of the same, and to treat with any person or persons who have a right and title to y<sup>e</sup> Castle to purchase the same with y<sup>e</sup> appendages thereof, to build a Church on y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> p'misses; It is now therefore concluded order<sup>d</sup> & agreed in this Councell; That Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> be requested to take such persons with him to Croxteth as he thinks meet, about y<sup>e</sup> Agreem<sup>t</sup> for y<sup>e</sup> patronage, and with the true proprietors about the Castle; and w<sup>th</sup> hee agrees for (whether for one or both) shall be payd at y<sup>e</sup> charg of y<sup>e</sup> Corpora<sup>co</sup>n or as the Act of Parliament directs."

A bill was brought into Parliament for power to carry out this project, and the following document was put forward as exhibiting the reasons for the application:—

"The case of the Corporation of Liverpoole in relation to a Bill for making a new church there.

"It was formerly a small fishing town, but many people coming from Case of Corporation.  
London in time of the sickness and after the fire, several ingenious men settled in Liverpoole, which caused them to trade to the plantations and other places, which occasioned sundry other tradesmen to come and settle there, which hath so enlarged their trade, that from scarce paying the

Trade of Port. salary of the officers of the Customs, it is now the third port of the trade of England, and pays upwards of £50,000 per annum to the King ; and by reason of such increase many new streets are built and still in building ; and many gentlemen's sons of the Counties of Lancaster, Yorkshire, Derbyshire, Staffordshire, Cheshire and North Wales are put apprentices in the town.

Reasons. " And there being but one Chapel, which doth not contain one half of our inhabitants in the summer, upon pretence of going to the Parish Church, which is two long miles, and there being a village in the way, they drink in the said village, by which and otherwise many youth and sundry families are ruined ; therefore it is hoped the Bill may pass, being to promote the service of God.

Objections. " The objections are, that we being the sixth part of the parish of Walton, the patronage of Walton doth belong to the Lord Mollineux, who is a Roman Catholic ; and it is hard that his estate should be taken away. That the town have agreed with the present rector and vicar for their purchase money, therefore there is no present wrong ; and Liverpoole takes away but a sixth part, and at the same time taketh off the charge of

Compensation more souls than is in the whole parish besides. Moreover they are willing to give for the perpetuall advowson that which shall be a reasonable price, considering there is a life upon it, having already offered his solicitor to refer it to two indifferent men, they to choose one and the town another. And it is hoped that so good a work as this bill desires shall not be obstructed by so inconsiderable a claim."

Act passed. The Act 10 and 11 William III., chapter 36, was carried without difficulty. It provides that the Rector of Walton, Rev. Richard Richmond, should receive an annuity during his life of £55, in compensation for tithes and oblations from Liverpool ; and Thomas Marsden, the Vicar, £6 per annum in like manner. Also that the Rectors of Liverpool should in future pay one-sixth part of all first-fruits, tenths, procurations and other ecclesiastical charges levied on the Parish of Walton.

St. Peter's Church. As a new church (St. Peter's) was projected, it was resolved to have two Rectors, the living to be divided into medieties. Towards the stipends the Parish and Corporation mutually agreed to contribute. The first Rectors appointed were the Rev. Robert Stythe and the Rev. W. Atherton, who had been appointed Curates by the Corporation in 1688.

Rectors.

1698, October 5th. " The Councill orders two acres of ground to be



sett out for y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> Ministers (successively) of this towne, and they to enclose and manure it at their own charg."

1698, November 2nd. "Pursuant to an order of y<sup>e</sup> last Councell relating to a p<sup>ce</sup>l of ground to be sett for y<sup>e</sup> Ministers, Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> having taken to his assistance Jasper Maudit Esq, y<sup>e</sup> pr<sup>t</sup> Baylives, &c make a return of a p<sup>ce</sup>l of ground for y<sup>e</sup> use, leading from y<sup>e</sup> eastward of y<sup>e</sup> Townsend Mill, of about four acres."

Grant of Land  
to Rectors.

The services were under the control and arrangement of the Council.

1681, December 7th. "Att a Councell &c

"It was ordered by Mr Maior, the Aldermen and greater part of the Councell that Mr John Hindley shall begin to read praier in the Chappell of Liverpoole the second day of Januarie next and continue to read divine praier everie morninge throughout the yeare ensuinge (unless Sundayes and holidayes) at such houre as Mr Maior shall appoint, for w<sup>ch</sup> service y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Mr Hindley is content to receive such gratuities onelye as the freemen & inhabitants of this place will conferre on him, & it's ordered that the bell shall toule a quarter of an hour each morninge before praier."

This eleemosynary mode of payment did not succeed, for we read—

1684, July 16th. "Ordered that from next Michaelmas day, the weeklye reader of divine service in the Chappell of Leverpoole shall receive that service yearlye receive from y<sup>e</sup> Corporation sixe pounds sallarie."

1684, June 4th, the first mention is made of an organ in the church.

"Ordered that Alderman Tarleton and Mr Oliver Lyme doe imploy some person in London to procure the organs for this Chappell, or repayment of the fiftie pounds from Mr Bar<sup>n</sup> Smith Organist."\*

1685, January 6th. "Resolved that Mr John Ashworth bee admitted Organist, allowing him the s<sup>u</sup>me of twentie pounds yearelye sallarie."

1700, September 4th. "Timothy Horsfold Church Clerke, petitions that whereas y<sup>e</sup> Sexton's son that blows y<sup>e</sup> organ has fourty shillings a year for y<sup>e</sup> same, that y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> s<sup>u</sup>me may be allow<sup>d</sup> to one of his sons, hee having seaven children.

"This Councell doth order that one of y<sup>e</sup> Clerk's sons have that sallary of fourty shillings p<sup>r</sup> ann. and do officiate in the blowing of the Organ, and the sallary to comence from y<sup>e</sup> first of Aug<sup>t</sup> last."

\* This is supposed to be the celebrated Father Smith, who built the organ of the Temple Church, London.

Repeated gifts of plate to the church occur in the records of the seventeenth century.

Church Plate. 1698, October 5th. "The Councell orders, that a piece of Plate be made for y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> Church to the value of about twelve Pounds & that Mr Rob<sup>t</sup> Shields goldsmith take y<sup>e</sup> direction of y<sup>e</sup> Ministers about y<sup>e</sup> fashion thereof."

Notices of the repairs of the chapel occur from time to time.

Repairs. 1663, April 24th. "It is ordered that the freemen of this towne and burrough as well resident as not resident shalbe taxed and assessed for and towards the necessare repaire of this Chappell, and for preserving of y<sup>e</sup> same from y<sup>e</sup> stormes and flowings of y<sup>e</sup> sea. And that y<sup>e</sup> sūme of one hundred pounds be taxed and assessed for y<sup>e</sup> uses aforesaid upon the sayd freemen."

This levy does not appear to have been very cheerfully paid.

Ley objected to. "1667, Aug 12<sup>th</sup> Port Moot  
"Wee present Edward Moore Esq<sup>r</sup> for refusinge to pay his ley for repaire of this Chappell am'ced in i<sup>ll</sup> iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>  
"(16 other persons, all for y<sup>e</sup> like)."  
"1669, Octr 11<sup>th</sup> At an Assembly &c.

"It is unanimously ordered that a ley of fiftie pounds shall be forthw<sup>th</sup> by the comon assessors or Leylayers of this towne, taxed or assessed upon all the freemen or burgesses of this towne of Liverpoole, for the necessary repa'con of the Chappell of Liverpoole, called o<sup>r</sup> Lady and St Nichôlas, and for other necessities apperteyninge to this Corporacon. And if any of the said freemen w<sup>th</sup>in or without this towne shall obstinately refuse or deny & after due demand thereof made to him, neglect to pay his respective proporcon or leyes upon him respectively assessed; in such case of denyall or wilfull neglect of payment hee or they so refusinge or neglecting contrary to the tenor of their oath att their enfranchisement, shall be disfranchized & made incapable of any benefit of their freedome from thenceforth for ever within this burrough, and so are hereby declared, his or their former admittance or infranchisem<sup>t</sup> here to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding."

Ley enforced.

Edward Moore still continued recalcitrant.

Moore presented. "1670, Octr 24<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot.  
"Wee p'sent Edward Moore Esq<sup>r</sup> for not paying his ley assessed upon him w<sup>th</sup> others of the Corporation of Liverpoole for the repaire of the Chappell and the priviledges bell."

1688, April 4th. "Ordered that the seeling on the topp of the Chappell Ceiling of Liverpoole shalbee painted & starr<sup>d</sup> & layd in oyle at the charge of this decorated Corporation."

Down to the close of the seventeenth century the church-yard was unenclosed on the landward side.

1690, September 3rd. "At a Councell &c.

"Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> and y<sup>e</sup> Ald<sup>mn</sup> to meet at Praires on fryday next to view and Enclosure of sett out y<sup>e</sup> ground on w<sup>ch</sup> y<sup>e</sup> east wall of y<sup>e</sup> Church yard is to be built, Churchyard. according to an order of y<sup>e</sup> last Vestry."

The arrangements for divine service, in the seating of the congregation, and the order of precedence, were sources of continual litigation and trouble. Arrangement of Seats.

1685, November 18th. "By the approbation of y<sup>e</sup> Reverend father in God John (Pearson) Lord Bishop of this diocese, it is ordered

"That noe person under the degree of an Alderman shall sitt in the Aldermen. Ald<sup>ms</sup> seate without licence from Mr Maior and Chappell wardens."

"That none under the degree of an Alderman's wife shall sitt in y<sup>e</sup> seate next unto the Aldermen without licence &c

"That none under the degree of a baylive's peere shall sitt in the Bailiffs. Baylive's seates without licence &c

"That none but baylives wives and widdows shall sitt in the seate next to the Aldermen's wives without licence &c

"That none but housekeepers shall sitt in the seate on y<sup>e</sup> north side House- ('twixt the pulpit and y<sup>e</sup> North doore) who are to be seated according to keepers. their qualitie & age

"That none but the wives and widdows of housekeepers shall sitt in the seates 'twixt the baylives wives and y<sup>e</sup> font without licence &c Wives and Widows.

"That none but the wives and widdows of housekeepers shall sitt in y<sup>e</sup> seates on y<sup>e</sup> South side und<sup>r</sup> the gallerie without licence " &c

"That all apprentices and servants shall sitt or stand in the alleys according to auncient custome." Servants.

Notwithstanding this authoritative apportionment of seats Private Pews. in the church, private rights in pews had a concurrent existence, and were the subject of litigation.

1692, May 4th. "It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell, that if Katherine Barker, Spinster shall further prosecute about y<sup>e</sup> seat to y<sup>e</sup> eastward of the pulpit and desk, it shall be defended at the town's charg."

1698, October 29th. "On Mr Edward Tarleton's peticon last Councell day for a seat in y<sup>e</sup> North east Gallery, Mrs Green widow, Mr Randle Galloway, and Ellen Lyon widow, claim a title to y<sup>e</sup> same, but it appearing to y<sup>e</sup> generallity of y<sup>e</sup> Councell, that the right of that seat was in Thomas Walls, and verbally and really assigned by him in his life (and since his death by his widow and son) on Mr Edward Tarleton, the Galleries.

Councell doth determine that y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Edward Tarleton shall have y<sup>e</sup> same, paying seaven pounds fine ; no fine having been paid by Thomas Walls or any by his order or for his use."

Attendance on divine service was strictly enforced under penalty.

1683, October 29th. At a Port Moot—

Fines for  
absence.

"We present the persons undermentioned for absenting from divine service."

Here follows a list of thirty-five names, amongst others those of Richard Latham and his wife, Roman Catholics, who received, in 1686, a special proclamation of indulgence from King James II.<sup>1</sup>

Again in 1684, October 27th. At a Port Moot—

"Wee p'sent the p'sons next underwritten for absenting themselves respectively from divine service in the Chappell of Leverpoole from the 15th day of June last to the 26th day of October last past vizt."

Then follows a list of thirty-nine names, with the fines in which they were amerced, from 2s. to 4s. each.

There can be no doubt that these measures were directed against the Roman Catholics, or Popish Recusants as they were called. Several of the names, such as Sir Neale O'Neale and his wife, Mr. John Duffy, have a decided Irish flavour, and others belong to the Lancashire Catholic families.

Proclamation  
against Vice.

In 1691, the Proclamation against vice, drunkenness, and profanation of the Lord's Day is recorded as first promulgated, and has been ever since published and read before the Judges at each Assize.

Dissenters'  
Chapel.

The first Dissenting place of worship in Liverpool was built in Castle Hey (now Harrington Street), under favour of the Indulgence granted by James II. in 1687.

The following entry relates to the same subject :—

1692, February 14th. "Upon y<sup>e</sup> request of Mr Thomas Collins, Mr

<sup>1</sup> *Vide supra*, p. 256.



Richard Mercer,<sup>1</sup> and Lawrence Fletcher, to desire a house at y<sup>e</sup> end of Lord Street in Liverpool belonging to Mr David Poole of y<sup>e</sup> same, Merchant, to be sett apart for y<sup>e</sup> exercise of religious worship, it is agreed by the Justices that they may be enjoy'd to that end, according to y<sup>e</sup> intention of y<sup>e</sup> Act of Parliam<sup>t</sup>, and the said Mr Thomas Collins is so allow'd to preach there."

After the passing of the Act for constituting the Parish,  
no time was lost in commencing the building of St. Peter's St. Peter's Church.  
Church.

1700, December 23rd. "It is concluded in Councell, that y<sup>e</sup> remaining Land around.  
part of y<sup>e</sup> field where y<sup>e</sup> Church is building, & oth<sup>r</sup> fields be sett out for three lives and twenty one yeares on a reasonable ground rent, reserving ground for y<sup>e</sup> Minister's houses and gardens, & y<sup>t</sup> a draught be made & returned ag<sup>t</sup> Councell day, how to sett out streets, &c.

"That y<sup>e</sup> buildings be handsome & uniform & a note be sett on y<sup>e</sup> Exchange y<sup>t</sup> persons may come & peticon for proportions to build on."

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Mercer and his wife were included in the two presentations for non-attendance at church in 1683 and 1684.



## NATIONAL AND POLITICAL.

---

There is not very much in this portion of the Records bearing directly on national politics, but a few entries have some interest, relating to measures of a general character.

The old system of levying money by subsidies was giving way to the modern mode of taxation, but it still lingered on.

Subsidy.

“ 1663, Sept 21<sup>st</sup> Will. Stanley ar. Maior.

Constables.

List of persons  
liable.

“ In pursuance of an Acte of Parliam<sup>t</sup> (entituled an Acte for grantinge foure entire Subsidies to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> by the Temporalty) theise are to will and require you, and further in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> name straitly to charge and comand you and ev<sup>y</sup> of you, that imēdiately upon notice herof, you give notice and warninge (by sending true coppies of this warr<sup>t</sup>) unto all and ev<sup>y</sup> the pettie constables and other the p<sup>ersons</sup> in the schedule herunto annexed named and appointed to be Assesso<sup>rs</sup> and make certificates within their respective p<sup>arishes</sup>, townships and villages within yo<sup>ur</sup> divicon of p<sup>ersons</sup> lyable to paym<sup>t</sup> of subsidies accordinge to the s<sup>d</sup> Acte; that they the s<sup>d</sup> respective constables and assesso<sup>rs</sup> doe diligently enquire, and true p<sup>resentm<sup>ts</sup></sup> and certificates make, and deliv<sup>r</sup> und<sup>r</sup> their hands, faire engrossed in parchm<sup>t</sup> unto us, of all the names and surnames of ev<sup>y</sup> p<sup>erson</sup> within their respective p<sup>arish</sup>, towne or village, together with a true estimate of ev<sup>y</sup> such p<sup>erson</sup>'s p<sup>ar</sup>ticular estate, reall or p<sup>ersonall</sup>, accordinge to the instruccions hereinafter menconed, and in and by the s<sup>d</sup> Acte made and p<sup>ro</sup>vyded, att the house of Margery Walls in Prescottt, widdow, upon the thirtieth day of September instant, by eight of the clocke in th<sup>e</sup> forenoon of the same day; willinge and requireinge each sev<sup>erall</sup> assessor and constable unto whose hands this p<sup>re</sup>cepte shall come, that after reasonable tyme for copping forth of the same allowed for himselfe and his fellowes, forthwith he or they deliv<sup>r</sup> or cause to be deliv<sup>ed</sup> safely and speedily unto some assesso<sup>rs</sup> or constables of the next adjoininge township within the s<sup>d</sup> parish with whom it hath not form<sup>ly</sup> beene withall, the tyme of the receipte hereof, and from whom, together with the tyme and name of him, when and to whom it was sent and deliv<sup>ed</sup> beinge first endorsed, to the end ev<sup>y</sup> one may the better bee instructed herby how to make their p<sup>resentm<sup>ts</sup></sup> to us upon paine of each p<sup>erson</sup> offendinge herin, to forfeite for his delay or neglect xl<sup>s</sup> and further punishem<sup>t</sup> as by lawe shall be required.

"1. First yo<sup>u</sup> are to p<sup>r</sup>esent the names and surnames of ev<sup>er</sup>y p<sup>er</sup>son, Lists of value. fraternitie, guild, corporacon, misterie, brotherhood and comonalty, corporate and not corporate, within yo<sup>u</sup>r p<sup>ar</sup>ish, towne or village being worth three pounds, as well in coyne (and the true value of ev<sup>er</sup>y pound that ev<sup>er</sup>y such p<sup>er</sup>son &c hath of his or theire owne or any other hath to his or theire use) as also in plate, stocke of merchandize, all manner of corne and graine, household stuffe, and of all other goods moveable, as well within this realme as without, and of such somes of money as to him or them is or shall be oweinge, deductinge such debts as such p<sup>er</sup>son doth owe, and intends to pay, excepting the apparall of such p<sup>er</sup>son his wief and children, wherof noe jewells, gould, silver, stone or pearle are to be accounted p<sup>ar</sup>cell.

"2. You are to p<sup>r</sup>esent the value of ev<sup>er</sup>y pound that he or they or Lands. any other to his or theire use hath in fee simple, fee taile, or for terme of lief, or for terme of yeares, by execucon, or by coppie of cort rolle of or in any lands or tenements &c of the yearely value of xx<sup>s</sup>.

"3. And also the names of ev<sup>er</sup>y Popish Recusant convicted or indyted Recusants. before the tyme of the assessm<sup>nt</sup>.

"4. And ev<sup>er</sup>y alien, denizen or not denizen of the age of 7 yeares or Non- above, not beinge contributorie to the rates afores<sup>d</sup> and ev<sup>er</sup>y popish contributors. Recusant convict, being 17 yeares old, or of the age of one and twentie yeares, haveing not received the Comunion within one year last past.

"5. You are not to p<sup>r</sup>esent tythes due to the Clergie, and sub- Tithes jects s<sup>er</sup>vants wages, nor the goods and ornaments of churches and exempt. chappells.

"6. You are to p<sup>r</sup>esent noe orphants nor infants und<sup>er</sup> one and twentie Orphans and yeares of age (except such Aliens and popish Recusants as afores<sup>d</sup>) for Infants goods lefte or bequeathed unto them by any, nor any p<sup>er</sup>son both for lands and goods, but for wheth<sup>r</sup> you estimate to be of the better value, nor any exempt. p<sup>er</sup>son att two sev<sup>er</sup>all places, but att the place where the p<sup>er</sup>sons residence is and was for a yeare last past, and there for his whole estate whersoever. And all parsonages viccarages and lands belonging to Universities or free Parsonages, Gramer Schooles are exempted. Ecclesiasticall p<sup>er</sup>sons must be p<sup>r</sup>esented &c., exempt. for lands they hold in lay fee by discent, bargaine, or purchase.

"Given under o<sup>u</sup>r hands at Wigan the xxi<sup>st</sup> day of September A<sup>n</sup>o R<sup>eg</sup>ni d<sup>omi</sup>ni Caroli se<sup>ci</sup>di Angl<sup>i</sup> &c 1663

"G IRELAND  
" & 8 others."

1663, September 30th. "A Presentm<sup>nt</sup> and Certificate made by the Liverpool Bayliffes and Assesso<sup>rs</sup> of the Townshipp of Liverpoole within the parish return. of Walton, in obedience of and answer to a Warr<sup>t</sup> and instructions from the hono<sup>ble</sup> Com<sup>rs</sup> for the Act of Subsidies, of the names of all such p<sup>er</sup>sons as are liable to the paym<sup>nt</sup> of Subsidies either for reall or p<sup>er</sup>sonall estate or estates within the townshipp of Liverpoole according to the said instructions.

|                                            |     |     |     |     |                   |
|--------------------------------------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|-------------------|
| " Mr Crosse in lands                       | ... | ... | ... | ... | iii <sup>li</sup> |
| " Mr Robert Seacom and his mother in lands |     |     |     |     | ij <sup>li</sup>  |
| " Thomas Blackmore in goods...             | ... | ... | ... | ... | v <sup>li</sup>   |
| " Ralph Massam in goods                    | ... | ... | ... | ... | v <sup>li</sup>   |
| " William Bushell in goods                 | ... | ... | ... | ... | v <sup>li</sup>   |
| " John Higginson in goods                  | ... | ... | ... | ... | iii <sup>li</sup> |

" And further they have not to certify at present

|                    |                    |                           |
|--------------------|--------------------|---------------------------|
|                    |                    | " HENRY CORLES            |
|                    |                    | " PETER LURTING           |
| " WILLIAM KITCHINS | } Bal <sup>s</sup> | " ROB <sup>t</sup> SUTTON |
| " WILLIAM GARDNER  |                    | " THOMAS ASHBROOKE        |
|                    |                    | " Assessors."             |

Another subsidy (the last recorded) was levied in 1665, June 9th.

Proceedings  
about levy.

" Att an Assembly &c Upon reading of Mr Wm Norman's the high constable's p'cept recyting a l<sup>re</sup> from the right hono<sup>ble</sup> the lord high Trea'r of England & Chancelor of his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Echeq<sup>r</sup> for raising money for his Ma<sup>ty</sup> & supply & advancinge his owne assessm<sup>t</sup>. It is ordered and thought fitt att this tyme That Mr Maior shall propose & give in such p'sons as he shall think fitt (at the next gen'all meeting of the Com<sup>rs</sup>) ingaged for the speedie payeing in of nyne months assessm<sup>ts</sup> according to his Ma<sup>ty</sup> p'posalls intimated in their said l're. And that such p'sons as shall so ingage shall be indemnified & saved harmless. And further it is ordered and thought fitt that Mr Maior, being one of his Ma<sup>ty</sup> Com<sup>rs</sup> for the royall ayd, may informe himselfe of that or what other course he finds meet att next meeting of the Com<sup>rs</sup> in answer to the said lord Trea<sup>r</sup> l're. And what he shall then doe touching the p'misses is hereby ratified & allowed.

Indemnity.

And that he shall be indemnified & borne out for what he shall doe in reference thereunto. And also ordered & agreed & thought fitt here unanimously that the same nyne months assessm<sup>t</sup> shall be w<sup>th</sup> speed collected of ev'ie of the inhabitants of this towne, according to the last assessm<sup>t</sup>, that is to say for ev'y xij<sup>d</sup> in the last assessm<sup>t</sup> att this three shillings and soe rateably, w<sup>ch</sup> said nyne moneths makes up the whole yeare ending at Christmas next.

" (Signed) JOHN STURZAKER Maior  
" & 22 others."

The documents relating to the return to the Convention Parliament have been inserted above.



## MANNERS AND CUSTOMS.

---

From the presentations at the Port Moots, and from the resolutions of the Council, we obtain interesting glimpses into the private life and the habits and manners of the time.

The burgesses appear to have been very free spoken, both in the Council and outside.

“ 1672 Octr 23<sup>rd</sup> Silvester Richmond Maior

“ Att an Assembly &c

“ It is ordered that if any member of this Assembly have contrived, consented, or shall consent to or subscribe a pap<sup>r</sup> or libell now brought into this Councell & read publickly, pretending itselfe to be a remonstrance ag<sup>t</sup> some pretended grievances; the same pap<sup>r</sup> being of it selfe very scandalous & of bad consequence, imposing an unjust ympeachment upon the late magistrates & governo<sup>rs</sup> of this towne; it is ordered that every or any such member of this Assembly that shall be found to have bin consenting, privie or subscribing to the same libell, such member shall be from henceforth deposed & degraded from his trust or place of a Comon Councell man. And likewise if any member of this Councell shall at any tyme hereafter be convict or found by strong presumption & direct or circumstantial prooffe, to discover or disclose any part of the acts or thinges here done in Councell, till a due publication shall be thereof made, such member soe disclosing any the secretts of this Councell to any who are not of this Assembly, after such prooffe made against him shall likewise from thenceforth be deposed & degraded from having any vote or place in this Assembly, and be subject to such fine or penaltie as shall be ymposed upon him for such default. And the fine is now imposed vizt forty pounds upon every Alderman & twenty pounds upon every other member of this Assembly disclosing unduely any secretts of this Councell.

Penalty for  
libelling  
Council.

Councillor  
disclosing  
secretts to be  
expelled.

“ Signed S RICHMOND Maior  
“ & 29 others.”

The records are full of presentations and prosecutions for slander and abusive language. I will only quote a few of the most characteristic.

Speaking evil of dignities has always been considered a serious offence, and in Liverpool slandering the Mayor was held, as Dogberry says, "Flat burglary as ever was committed."

Punishment of  
Bicksteth for  
Slander.

"1663 Octr 26<sup>th</sup> Peter Lurting gen. Maior.  
"Port Moot Court. Wee present Robert Bicksteth for a great & heynous abuse and injurje done to the Wor<sup>p</sup><sup>l</sup> Mr Peter Lurtin Maior of this Corporacon since he was elected Maior upon the xvij<sup>th</sup> day of October instant, to witt, that hee, meaninge the said Mr Maior was a thiefe & a rogue, & had robbed a house in Formbie; who being an idle person, very poore & not able to pay, was onely fyned in five pounds, upon his submission on record & sev'all other punishm<sup>ts</sup>."

Recantation.

The recantation of Robert Bicksteth.

"Liv'poole. In the Common Hall.

"To all Chr'ian people to whom these presents shall come, I Robert Bick'steth of Liv'poole in the countie of Lanc<sup>r</sup> husbandman send greeting. Knowe yee, that upon the favo<sup>r</sup> mercy and condiscension of the magistrates of this burrough to me afforded though undeserved, I doe make this my humble & thankfull acknowledgm<sup>t</sup> that in regard of my offence I justly deserve the punishm<sup>t</sup> & ymprisonm<sup>t</sup> by the said magistrates layd upon me & more p'ticularly I doe humbly confesse & acknowledge to my shame that I have most unjustly, untruelie & unworthily given out those speeches towards Mr. Peter Lurting\* the wor<sup>l</sup> Maior of this burrough, to witt that he, meaninge the said Mr Maior was a thiefe and a rogue and had robbed a house in Formbie. And further do declare & say & confesse that I had no cause or reason so to speake concerninge the said Mr Maior. And therefore being very sensible of the injury I have done to him & his favo<sup>r</sup> & mercy to mee, I doe hereby firmly promise by God's mercy & goodnes nev' againe to offend or misbehave my selfe in word or deed against the said Mr Maior or anie of his family. In testimony hereof I have hereto put my hand & seale the xxij<sup>nd</sup> of January 1663."

"1685 Octr 5<sup>th</sup> Port Moot.

Threatening.

"Wee p'sent William Worrall for affronting Ald<sup>n</sup> Clayton, late Députie Maior & opposinge his orders, threateninge Oliver Mollinex to breake his pate, if he offerd to fetch James Skinner before Mr Clayton & for sayeing that when Mr Clayton was out of his office hee would then talke with him Amerced in £6 13 4."

Abusive  
words.

"1686, Jany 11<sup>th</sup> Wee p'sent William Worrall for giving abusive words unto Ald<sup>n</sup> Richmond, calling him a pitiful fellow & reflecting upon the late deputie Maior & Aldermen £5."

\* Notwithstanding this disclaimer on the part of Mr. Bicksteth, we have the character of the worthy Mayor drawn elsewhere in not very flattering colours. Edward Moore, in his *Rental*, written in 1667, but not published until 1847, thus describes him:—"He is a very knave and hath deceived me twice. I charge you never trust him; but if it be in your power let him know I have marked him out for a knave," &c.

The Mayor was not the only dignitary who suffered from calumnious speeches. The Bailiffs had to contend with similar insults.

"1664 Jany 25<sup>th</sup> Att a Port Moot.

"Wee present Samuel Postlethwaite for a great and heynous abuse done unto the present Baylives of this Corporacon; That is to say, 'Thou (meaninge Thomas Johnson, one of the said Baylives) I will not goe to prison with thee; where is thy warrant? I will not go with thee.' And also for offeringe to challeng the other Baylive, Thomas Alcocke to fight with him in these words, that is to say 'Thou, meaninge the aforesaid Thomas Alcocke I will meet thee when thou will and where thou will or dare.'" Abusing the Bailiffs.

"1672 Octr 28<sup>th</sup> Port Moot.

"Presented Richard Moorcroft, for offereing violence to the Baylives, calling them theeves and robbers."

Reflections of this kind on the town's authorities were far from uncommon. Here is another presentment of a similar description :—

1685, January 11<sup>th</sup>. "Wee p'sent Moses Hughes for sayeing, that the Maior, Aldermen & Councell were a companie of fooles for making him free for sixe pounds, when hee hadd twentie pounds in a purse & would freelie have given it them for his freedome, but they tooke mee for a poore Welsh trunck maker; but I thinke I shewed them a tricke, and hung up a lookinge glasse that they might blush & see their foole's faces in it, as they walked upp and downe the streetes." Slandering the Mayor, &c.

One person is presented for asserting that there is

"Neither lawe nor justice in this towne, and that the Maior acted neither law nor justice Amerced in v<sup>li</sup>."

John Hoole, Miller, is prosecuted

"Who did upon the 16<sup>th</sup> day of October 1667, imprison both the late Baylives in Mr Moore's Mill in Liv'poole aforesaid, when they were making a distresse there." Imprisoning Bailiffs.

The women were not behindhand in conduct of this kind.

"1667, Octr 28<sup>th</sup> Wee present Mrs Tarleton widow, for abuse done to Mr Jo. Bulkley when he was distreyninge for a fine. She pulled off his coat & locked him up." Assault by Mrs. Tarleton.

"Amerced in x<sup>li</sup>."

"Wee present Mr Edward Lievesley & his wife, for his wife's abuseing Mr John Bulkley, Baylive in execucon of his office by locking him up & ymprisoning him in her house."

Women  
brawling.

"Wee p'sent Hannah, wife of Robert Whitfield, watchmaker, for reflecting on y<sup>e</sup> government and sayinge

"That y<sup>e</sup> Common Councill of this towne amongst them hadd the money collected by the Chappell wardens from dissenters, and further she said, tho' it was on their sides now ; wee hope it wilbee on our side ere long."

"1688 July 9<sup>th</sup> Wee p'sent Ellen Abram for a brawler and a scould, being a common disturber of her neighbours—3<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>."

"Ann Lancaster widdow for the like—3<sup>s</sup> 4<sup>d</sup>."

Cuckstool.

The cuckstool, the ancient mode of punishment for female offences, was still in use.

In 1695, there is an entry in the accounts of 15s. paid for its repair. The cage and pillory are also entered as kept in repair by the town.

Inmates.

The question of "inmates" continued to be a constant source of anxiety, and many orders and resolutions were passed, which seem to have been as often broken.

Sometimes their zeal overran their discretion.

1681, October 24<sup>th</sup>. Mr. Richard Cleaveland is presented as having in his house five "inmates," who turned out to be his own servants.

Inspectors.

"1677 Nov 7<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot.

"Ordered that the severall persons undernamed shall make inquire after Inmates for the year ensueing in the streets and places to their names respectively ascribed. And that they monthly give a true account to the Maior for the time being or his deputy of all such Inmates, with the names of the landlords and householders entertaining them on paine of forty shillings for every month's neglect."

There were fifteen appointed to discharge this duty in the existing fifteen streets.

Selection of  
Inspectors.

"1678. John Chorley gent. Maior.

"Whereas by dailye experience wee find that by reason of the late improvements in buildinge of houses and shippes in and about this burrough and Corporation, a great concourse of people have of late time resorted hither, and have beene concealed in designe to gaine settlements, and notwithstandinge all lawfull endeavors that have beene taken to prevent the same, this burrough is become verie greivouslie burdened w<sup>th</sup> severall idle and wandringe persons of suspected reputations ; and altho' severall persons have beene appointed for prevention of the greivance afores<sup>d</sup> to bee officers ; by all lawfull waies and meanes to inspect what



Inmates have beene harboured here; yet the same hath failed of its due Inspectors. successe in the weale publicke & government of this Corporation, by reason that the persons appointed as afores<sup>d</sup> have beene remisse and negligent in their duetie, conceaving themselves under noe obligation by oath, for due performance of the said office, whereby the s<sup>d</sup> greivance is become almost remediesse. It is therefore ordered that in everie streete of the said burrough & within the liberties and jurisdictions thereof, that there shalbee elected and chosen by the homage of the said burrough yearlie one or more inhabitants within everie streete to observe the office of inspectors of Inmates for one yeare, and till hee bee discharged by due course of lawe; and that everie such said officer soe to be chosen and appointed shall take the oath hereafter described."

This dread of responsibility for the maintenance of Strangers. strangers was carried to an extraordinary length in the following entry:—

"1686, Octr 4<sup>th</sup> Portmoot.

"Wee p'sent John Catterall for harbouring his father & mother w<sup>th</sup>out givinge notice or securitie to Mr Maior—6<sup>s</sup> 8<sup>d</sup>."

"1685 Apl 1<sup>st</sup> Ordered, that the bellman shall goe through this towne Foreign Poor. & give warning to all inhabitants not to reliefe forraine poore, on penaltie of the lawes of this kingdome, in such case made," &c.

"1685 May 13<sup>th</sup> Ordered that all persons whose names are in the Pauper Badge. Poore Book & who receive almes in this burrough shall weare a pewter badge, w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> townc's armes engraved on it, and such as refuse to weare them are hereby ordered not to have anie releife from this towne."

Although some of the habits of the time seem rather coarse, etiquette and form were strictly insisted on.

"1665 Nov 2<sup>nd</sup> Att an Assembly, &c.

"It is agreed, thought fitt and so ordered, that the former orders of Gowns for Officials. this towne, that the Maior, Aldermen, Baylives, Baylives Peeres, Town Clerke and S<sup>j</sup>jeant att Mace of this towne, shall have gownes in the ancient & accustomed manner, to be putt in execucon; and that Mr Maior, the Aldermen, Baylives, Baylives Peeres, Town Clerke and S<sup>j</sup>jeant att Mace for the tyme being, shall each of them provide and furnish themselves w<sup>th</sup> gownes fitt and convenient att or before the second day of February now next cominge upon the payne of five pounds, as by & according to former ord<sup>r</sup>."

This order was enforced by fine, but not according to the strict letter of the law.

1668, January 13<sup>th</sup> "Wee present John Lurting for not p<sup>r</sup>vidinge and Fines for not wearing Gowns. wearing a gowne accordinge to form<sup>r</sup> ord<sup>r</sup> am<sup>d</sup> in vi<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup>. Tho. Birch,

Jo. Blundell, Thomas Bicksteth & present Baylives Tim. Tarleton & Wm. Fleetwood all for y<sup>e</sup> like offence."

Nothing is said in the above entries about the Common Councillors.

Cloaks. "1695 Octr 9<sup>th</sup> It is order<sup>d</sup> that all persons of the Comon Councell appear in cloakes (after the next election of the Mai<sup>r</sup>) every Councell day."

Gowns on Sunday. "1697 Aug 4<sup>th</sup> It is this day order<sup>d</sup> in Councell that pursuant to a former order, all y<sup>e</sup> Ald<sup>m</sup> and Baylives Peers do attend Mr Mai<sup>r</sup> to Church in their gowns every Sunday, & all y<sup>e</sup> Councellmen in their cloaks, on the penalty menconed in y<sup>e</sup> said former order."

As an illustration of the dress of the seamen at this period, reference may be made to the register of an apprenticeship of a youth as a mariner.

1667, May 23rd. After reciting the terms of apprenticeship, the entry proceeds:—

Sailors' dress. "The aforesaid apprentice being a poore orphan & left w<sup>th</sup>in the charge of this towne, bound himself apprentice, w<sup>th</sup> the consent & approbacon of the Maior & Comonalty of this burrough; and the said apprentice is to have a pare of cloth breeches & jumpe of same & 2 redd wascoates & 1 pare of redd drawers & 1 pare of linen drawers w<sup>th</sup> two shirts & 1 pare of shoes & stockins."

It is also provided that

"The said master to his said apprentice shall allow ev'y voyage one barrell portage p'vided it be his owne p'p<sup>r</sup> goodes & not otherwise."

Furniture. 1667, October 8th, appears an appraisement of the goods of William Newport, a tradesman of the town, which are comprised within a very small compass, consisting principally of

"One table, three cheares, & two stooles, three joyned stooles, one cupboard, four bedds, one brasse pan one fryinge pann," &c., concluding with "ould trumpery ii<sup>s</sup> vi<sup>d</sup>."

The accounts of moneys paid throw considerable light on the manners and customs of the time.

Allusion has been made above to the cuckstool, the cage and pillory, which figure in the accounts.

The Bearward was a recognised officer paid by the town. Bearward.

No bull was allowed to be slaughtered without having Bull Baiting. been previously baited for the amusement of the public.

“1672 Octr 28<sup>th</sup> At a Port Moot.

“Edward Rycroft is presented for the killing of a bull unbaited, and Edward Halsall for the like offence.”

The scene of this cruel sport was usually at the Stocks on the south side of the Castle wall, or on the land west of St. Nicholas's Church, now marked by the depression in the level of the churchyard.

A considerable amount of money was expended in drink. Drink.

“1691 Nov<sup>r</sup> To Mr Rowland Carter for Punch on the King's return from Holland—£1 11.

“To Robert Stubbs for Ale—o 12 o.

“To William Furnivall for Punch and Ale the 5<sup>th</sup> November—£1 18 o.

“1692, June 14 To Robert Stubbs for Ale for the soldiers on the 24<sup>th</sup> May last—o 17 o.

“July 19 To William Rollin for Wine drunck in the Exchange 24<sup>th</sup> May last—o 18 o.”

The soldiers passing through the town appear on many Soldiers. occasions to have been very unruly.

1692, October 15<sup>th</sup>. On the occasion of the army passing to Ireland.

“To Ald<sup>n</sup> Richard Windall for several goods the soldiers burnt and spoiled in his house near the Exchange—£4 10 o.

“To Mr Thomas Johnson for gunpowder—£5 18 o.”

It is not usually recognized to how late a period the use Archery. of the English long bow was continued. In the reign of Elizabeth, the bowmen occupied a very conspicuous position. During the civil war some small remnant of archery was employed in Scotland. In Liverpool there is an entry under date of January 9<sup>th</sup>, 1637 :—

“Wee doe order that the Bayliffes shall cause new Shooting Butts

made in a place where they have beene accustomed betwixt this and the 14<sup>th</sup> day of Aprill next now following upon paine of v<sup>s</sup> a peece."

"1672 Jany 27<sup>th</sup> Ordered that Robert Simpson shall repaire the Shooting Butts before the tenth of March next at the towne's end, according to former custome."

This was the last spasmodic effort to keep up the practice.

In 1693, March 7th—

"Order<sup>d</sup> that the Shooting Butts be removed."

And thus the old English archery went into oblivion.

Curfew.

The curfew still tolled the knell both of coming and parting day.

1673, October 27th. "Wee order that Robert Simpson ring Curphew all the yeare long at 4 a clock in the morning & eight at a night."

Sunday  
observance.

Sundays and holidays were diligently protected.

"1672, June 3<sup>d</sup> Port Moot.

"Wee p<sup>nt</sup> Henry Banister for grinding corn on the Sabbath dayes at the Middle Mill—iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>

"We p<sup>nt</sup> Edm<sup>d</sup> Buckly for same offence at the Towne's End Mill—iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>

"We p<sup>nt</sup> Rich<sup>d</sup> Mercer and Robert Woolfall for like offence—each iij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup>."

"1696 Apl 20<sup>th</sup> Port Moot.

"Wee p<sup>t</sup> William Huddleston for harbouring and suffering Thomas Chapman serv<sup>t</sup> to Ald<sup>m</sup> Thomas Johnson, to play at nine pinns upon Good Fryday the tenth day of this inst April betweene one and two of y<sup>e</sup> Clock in y<sup>e</sup> afternoon."

I here bring these extracts to a close. The records of the eighteenth century contain a large amount of interesting matter, which I must leave to some future chronicler to arrange and make public.





# INDEX.

- Abbott, Archbishop, 224.  
 Abram, Ellen, 338.  
 Ackers, Henry, 24.  
 Adlington, Mathew, 297.  
 Adventure (ship), 301.  
 Albemarle, Earl of, 251.  
 Alcock, Edward, 229.  
 Alcock, Thomas, 337.  
 Alden, —, Rev., 200.  
 Alderman, office of, 60.  
 Ale and beer, regulation of price, 87.  
 Ale-founders, 61.  
 Ale-houses, 53, 106, 235.  
 Allerton, Thomas, 66.  
 Allin, Peter, 284, 319.  
 Almshouses, 318.  
 Altcar, exemption from tolls, 294.  
 Amery, John, 289.  
 Anderton, Henry, 232.  
 Andoe or Ayndoe, Thos., 155, 167, 173, 176, 185,  
 191, 229, 232, 248, 249, 268, 279, 283, 296, 318.  
 Anglesey, Earl of, 251.  
 Apprentices, regulations, 113, 233, 340.  
 Arlington, Lord, 245, 251.  
 Arms provided by freemen, 296.  
 Asbrooke, Thomas, 238, 334.  
 Ashlyn, John, 125.  
 Ashton, George, 35.  
 Ashurst, —, 26.  
 — Lt.-Col., 140, 141.  
 Ashworth, John, 327.  
 Aspendine, Jane, 76.  
 Aspinwall, Samuel, 140.  
 Assemblies, 30, 32, 33, 42, 44, 46, 51, 56, 59, 68, 123.  
 Assessors, —, 59.  
 Assheton, Col. Sir Ralph, 138, 202.  
 Asshton, —, 96.  
 Atherby, James, 85.  
 Atherton, Peter, 246, 281, 286, 313.  
 — Sir Richard, 254, 255, 257, 296.  
 Atherton Street, 291.  
 — Rev. William, 324, 326.  
 Atkinson, —, 179.  
 Atye, Arthur, 54.  
 Aynsargh, Richard de, 14, 15.  
 Bacon, Francis (Lord), 56.  
 Baddeley, Thomas de, 15.  
 Bailie, Ralph, 108.  
 Bailiffs, earliest notices of, 15, 51.  
 Baines, John, 105.  
 Ball, Robert, 49, 53, 85, 119.  
 Ballast money, 293.  
 Balye, Henry, 59.  
 Bamber, John, 312.  
 Banaster or Banister, Henry, 342.  
 — — Thomas, 53, 88.  
 — — William, 167, 218, 219.  
 Bank Hall, 67.  
 Barbon's lands, 66.  
 Barker, —, 287.  
 — Katharine, 329.  
 — Richard, 65.  
 Barlow, Andrew, 296.  
 Barlowe, Rauf, 32, 59.  
 Barraclough, Richard, 231.  
 Barry, Richard, 320.  
 Bartley, Edward, 109.  
 Batli, Marquis of, 235, 251.  
 Bathurst, William, 303.  
 Bavand, Thomas, 48, 53.  
 Baxter, Henry, 74.  
 — Jenkey, 65.  
 — John, 59.  
 — Thomas, 178.  
 Baylyff, Rauf, 30.  
 Beacon's gutter, 154, 155.  
 Bearward, 341.  
 Beggars, 114, 115.  
 Bells, church, 211, 212.

- Bellman, 234, 339.  
 Beltoft, Simon de, 12.  
 Benn, James, 263, 264, 288, 289, 290, 305, 312, 321, 324.  
 Bennett, George, 313.  
 Bentley (Incumbent), 99, 100, 196.  
 Bicksteth, Robert, 336.  
 — Thomas, 127, 129, 132, 136, 141, 145, 146, 147, 187, 211, 232, 240, 245, 249, 251, 276, 278, 279, 282, 292, 309, 312, 322, 323, 340.  
 Birch, Col. John, 245.  
 — Col. Thomas, 148, 149, 157, 189, 202, 239, 322, 339.  
 — William, 226.  
 Birde, Richard, 57, 183, 184.  
 Blackburne, Richard and Jane, 295.  
 — Robert (1551), 32.  
 — Robert (1639), 225.  
 Blackmore, Thomas, 148, 155, 157, 185, 203, 204, 215, 233, 238, 239, 240, 334.  
 — William, 238.  
 Blois, William de, 1.  
 Biome, Richard, 104, 270.  
 Bluecoat school, 104.  
 Blue coats and motley coats, 109.  
 Blundell of Ince Blundell, 56.  
 — Bryan, 104.  
 — Richard, 32.  
 — Robert, 145, 147.  
 — William, 240, 241.  
 Bold of Bold, 56.  
 — Futchett, 228.  
 — Richard de, 9.  
 — Peter, 312.  
 Bolton, Herbert, 182.  
 — Thomas, 53, 63.  
 Booker, John, 128.  
 Booth, Sir George, 165.  
 Borrow, Arthur, 76.  
 Bostwell, Thomas, 32, 52.  
 Boteler, John, 12.  
 Boulton, John, 234.  
 Boundaries defined, 31, 242.  
 Bowling, 57, 118.  
 Braddock, —, 291.  
 Bradshaigh, Sir Roger, 240.  
 Bradshaw, Robert, 316.  
 Bretherton, Thomas, 260, 261.  
 Brett, —, 153.  
 Brettargh of Brettargh, 240.  
 Bricks, making of, 190, 283, 287.  
 Bride, John, 111.  
 Bridge, Lawrence, 213.  
 — Thomas, 239.  
 Bridge alley, 314.  
 Bridges, 92, 187, 188, 314, 315.  
 Bridgman, Bishop of Chester, 200, 201.  
 — Edward, 165, 166.  
 Bridgwater, disputes with, 299.  
 Briscove, Michael, 205, 206.  
 Bristol, exemption from toll, 297.  
 Brookbank, Thomas, 125, 126, 232, 280, 281, 288, 300, 312, 313.  
 Brooke, Egidius, 112.  
 — Gyles, 57, 81, 82, 157, 182.  
 — Robert, 161.  
 Brookes, Jonathan, 287.  
 Brookfelde, Thomas, 62.  
 Browne, Capt., 148, 150, 151.  
 — William, 40.  
 Brown Low, the, 189.  
 Brownlowe, Lawrence, 267, 279, 283, 285.  
 Broxopp, Rev. —, 200.  
 Bryanson, William, 231.  
 Bryddon, John, 53.  
 Bryer, Jo., 300.  
 Buckley, Edmund, 342.  
 Bucknall, Sir William, 158, 269, 277.  
 Building regulations, 334.  
 Bulkeley, Jo., 337.  
 Bullbaiting, 341.  
 Burgesses and burgess roll, 20, 73, 120, 124.  
 Burials in church, 213.  
 Burleymen, 61.  
 Burscough, Ralph, 38, 39, 48, 53.  
 — house, 285.  
 Bushell, Roger, 315.  
 — William, 313, 334.  
 Butlerage, 180.  
 Byrde, John, 40, 42, 43, 62, 83.

- Cable Street, 291.  
 Cadwell, Rev. —, 50.  
 Cæsar, Sir Julius, 234.  
 Cage, 338.  
 Cailles, game of, 234.  
 Callowe, John, 159.  
 Canterbury, Gilbert, Archbishop of, 245.  
 Canvassing prohibited, 62.  
 Carsley, Derrick, 136.  
 Carlisle, disputes with, 298.  
 Carter, Rev., 102.  
 — Robert, 287, 289.  
 — Rowland, 341.  
 — Thomas, 277.  
 Case, John, 241.  
 Castle, 9, 10, 12, 13, 14, 21, 111, 142, 189, 287, 291, 292, 315.  
 — Hey, 286.  
 — Hill, 286, 314, 316, 318, 319.  
 — Street, 32, 36, 73, 91, 229, 293, 316, 318, 319.  
 Catterall, John, 339.  
 Cave, Francis, 30.  
 Censure by government, 107.  
 Challin, Serys, 66.  
 Challoner, Robert, 75.  
 Chambers, Edward, 145, 162, 229.  
 — James, 40, 52.  
 — John, 173.  
 — Mrs., 194.  
 — Walter, 117.  
 Chandler, John, 238, 269, 279, 318.  
 Chantrell or Chauntrell, —, 179.  
 — John, 187, 229, 231, 232.  
 — William, 310.  
 Chantries, 26, 95, 97, 277.  
 Chapels, St. Mary of the Key, 23, 104.  
 — Castle Hey, 330.  
 Chapel Street, 32, 36, 91, 92, 140, 193, 229, 287, 290, 307, 316, 317.  
 Chapman, John, 54.  
 — Thomas, 266, 307, 342.  
 Charles I, King, 132, 137, 156, 159, 228, 229, 275.  
 — II, address to, 251, 252.  
 Charters, 3, 5, 11, 17, 18, 28, 155, 156, 161, 243, 248, 254, 255, 257, 260, 261, 262.  
 Cheesemongers of London, disputes with, 265, 290, 300–305.  
 Chester, city of, 36, 38, 40, 41, 44, 84, 107, 143, 153, 306.  
 Chetham, Humphrey, 219.  
 Chichley, Sir Thomas, 253.  
 Chorleton, James, 173.  
 Chorley of Chorley, 147.  
 — John, 251, 255, 257, 266, 281, 317, 338.  
 — Leonard, 112.  
 Christian, Thomas, 239.  
 Church lands, 30.  
 — Revenues, confiscation, 26.  
 — Street, 315.  
 Churches—  
     St. Nicholas's, 15, 17, 23, 26, 95, 207, 208, 212, 213, 318, 329.  
     St. Peter's, 325, 326, 331.  
 Churchwardens, 59, 209.  
 Clare, Rev. Dr., 203.  
 Clark, Henry, 34.  
 Clarke, Richard, 75.  
 Clayton, Thomas, 254, 255, 266, 271, 287, 297.  
 — William, 271, 280, 281, 288, 291, 292, 299, 300, 303, 312, 325, 336.  
 Clennes, Henry, 118.  
 Clerk, Adam, 10.  
 Cleveland, John, 272.  
 — Richard, 271, 338.  
 — William, 272.  
 Cloaks for councillors, 340.  
 Clocks, public, 212.  
 Coals, 181.  
 — boring for, 289.  
 Cock-pits, 119.  
 Coinage, 312.  
 Colchester, Richard, Lord, 259, 260, 261.  
 — Thomas, Lord, 244, 306, 313.  
 Collins, Thomas, 330.  
 Colquitt, Humphrey, 53.  
 Commission on revenues, 25, 28.  
 Common halls (see Assemblies).  
 — lands, 172, 173, 174, 190, 273, 277, 291.  
 Connor, Garrald, 128.  
 Constables of castle, 21.

- Cook, David, 319.  
 Cooke, Gilbert, 65.  
 Corbett, Robert, 34, 37, 39, 59, 66, 68, 74.  
 Corker, John, 213.  
 Corles, Henry, 150, 151, 175, 176, 177, 269, 278, 279,  
     318, 319, 334.  
 Cornell, bailiff, 204.  
 Correction, house of, 114.  
 Council, 31, 33, 51, 52, 123.  
     — forms of procedure, 265, 267.  
 Covent garden, 316.  
 Cowell, Robert, 191.  
 Crane, —, 291.  
 Craven, Earl of, 245.  
 Crayford, John, 226.  
 Creber, Patrick, 84.  
 Creley, Nicholas, 83.  
 Cressingham, Hugh de, 6.  
 Crisp, Nicholas, 307.  
 Croft, Thomas, 195.  
 Crompton, Richard, 313.  
 Cromwell, Gregory, 124.  
     — Oliver, letter of, 148.  
 Crooked lands, 67.  
 Crosse, Humphrey (priest), 27.  
     — John (1515), 103.  
     — — (1565-1575), 27, 35, 47, 56, 89, 92, 96, 109.  
     — — (1621-1639), 155, 213, 217, 218, 219.  
     — — (1663), 334.  
     — Richard, 229.  
 Crown rights, sale of, 275.  
 Crowther, John, 263.  
 Cryer, —, 168.  
 Cubbon, Joshua, 247.  
 Cuck-stool, 229, 338.  
 Curfew, 103, 233, 234, 342.  
 Customer, town's, 56, 59, 63.  
  
 Dale Street, 32, 36, 66, 91, 171, 185, 189, 259, 287,  
     293, 315, 316, 318, 319.  
 Dam, Henry, 43.  
 Dandy, Adam, 65.  
 Danvers, —, 287, 288.  
 Darbie, Mr. and Mrs., 229, 230.  
 Delaine, —, 69.  
  
 Dene, —, 291.  
 Denton, Ellen, 94.  
 Derby, Earls of—  
     Edward, 3rd Earl, 34, 37, 38, 43, 44, 47.  
     Henry, 4th Earl, 48, 52, 55, 56, 98.  
     Ferdinando, Lord Strange, 5th Earl, 47, 56.  
     James, Lord Strange, 7th Earl, 124, 129, 138, 199.  
     Charles, Lord Strange, 8th Earl, 243, 244, 269,  
         282, 283.  
     William Richard George, Lord Strange, 9th Earl,  
         249, 259, 284.  
     James, 10th Earl, 263.  
 Desareno, John, 89.  
 Dicconson house, 284.  
 Diggles, Hugh, 295.  
     — Richard, 311, 312.  
 Ditchfield, Elizabeth, 228.  
 Dixon, —, 230.  
 Dobb, Robert, 65.  
 Dobson, Robert, 161 to 166.  
 Dog whipping, 103, 234.  
 Doleman, Thomas, 251.  
 Doue, Thomas, 190.  
 Dry bridge, 316.  
 Duffy, John, 330.  
 Duke, Thomas, 281.  
  
 Eaton, Peter, 263.  
     — Robert, 215.  
 Eccleston of Eccleston, 240.  
     — Thomas, 126, 132, 232.  
     — William, 239.  
 Edge-lane, 66.  
 Edmund, (Crouchback), Earl of Lancaster, 6, 7.  
 Edward I, King, 6.  
     — II, King, 8.  
     — III, King, 9-12, 15.  
     — VI, King, 30.  
 Egerton, Colonel, 222.  
 Elizabeth, Queen, 103—Grants, 323.  
 Ellison, David, 202.  
     — William, 210.  
 Elseing, H., 147.  
 Emeute of soldiery (1573), 109.  
 Engagement, the (Ecclesiastical), 205.



- Englefied, Thomas, 49.  
 Entwisle, John, 239, 244, 255.  
 Ernle, Lord, 251.  
 Essex, Earl of, 109, 110.  
 Everton, Land in, 73.
- Fairclough, George, 74.  
 Fairfax, Sir Thomas, 143.  
 Fairhurst, Oliver, 198, 231.  
 Fairs, 8, 9, 55, 68, 230, 317.  
 Fall Well, 189, 287, 320.  
 Fazakerly, Nicholas, 135, 147, 278.  
 — Samuel, (Spellow house), 240, 276, 277, 278, 282, 286, 296.  
 Fee-farm rents, 5, 7, 18, 19, 24.  
 Ferrers, Agnes de, 5.  
 — Maria de, 6.  
 — Earl Robert de, 5, 6.  
 — Earl William de, 3, 5.  
 Ferry, 8, 9, 13, 14, 35, 54, 133, 187.  
 Finch, Lord Chancellor, 257.  
 — Rev. —, 215.  
 Fines for refusing office, 38.  
 Fish house, 290.  
 — trade, 178.  
 — yards, 287.  
 Fisher, Joshua, 287, 300, 312.  
 Fishing in the Mersey, 48.  
 Fitzadam, William, 14, 16.  
 Fitzrichard, Adam, 8.  
 Fleetwood, Lord Deputy, 149.  
 — Robert, 239.  
 — William, 340.  
 Fletcher, Lawrence, 331.  
 Fogg, Rev. John, 203-207, 215, 322.  
 Formby, Edward, 127.  
 — Gilbert, 154, 214, 215, 238, 239.  
 — Mrs. Margery, 278.  
 — exemptions from toll, 298.  
 Fortescue, Lieut., 267.  
 Fortifications, 137, 138, 140-142, 188.  
 Fox, John, 155.  
 Freeman, 18, 51, 57, 74.  
 French, documents in, 19, 20, 21.  
 Friendship (ship), 181.
- Frodsham, Richard (priest), 26.  
 Funerals, 234.  
 Furnivall, William, 341.
- Galley, William, 269, 284.  
 Galloway, Randle, 329.  
 — Thomas, 266.  
 Gallows field, 67, 293.  
 Galway, Estate in, 150.  
 Gamull, William, 161.  
 Gardner, Hugh, 232.  
 — William, 239, 268, 287, 334.  
 Gardener, Gilbert, 59.  
 Garnett, Alexander, 32, 34, 35, 59, 66, 74.  
 — John, 183.  
 Garston, land in, 66.  
 Gates (town), 189.  
 Gelybrand, Charles and Eden, 23.  
 George (ship), 110.  
 Gerard (or Gerrard) of Brandon, Lord, 259.  
 — — of Bryn, 240.  
 — — Charles, 145.  
 — — Evan, 260.  
 — — G, 45.  
 — — Sir William, 147.
- Gerstan, John, 23.  
 Gildart, Richard, 53.  
 Gill's lands, 66.  
 Glasgow, William, 38.  
 Glazing church windows, 213.  
 Godolphin, Sidney, 257.  
 Godscroft, 293.  
 Golbrand (or Colbrand), William, 53, 62, 63, 64, 105, 119.  
 Gosmuth, Adam de, 6.  
 Gowns, wearing of, 33, 56, 57, 210, 230, 267, 268, 339.  
 Gradwell, William, 286.  
 Grammar school, 53, 62, 63, 64, 103.  
 Grant by parliament, 144, 145, 148.  
 Green, John, 320.  
 — Mrs., 329.  
 Greenacre, 54.  
 Greene, — 130.  
 — Alexander, 223.

- Greene, Edward, 266.  
 Greenwood, Aug., 298, 300.  
 Gregory, Peter, 32, 35.  
 Griffith, Alice, 24.  
 — David Ap, 24.  
 — George, 289.  
 Grimsby, Simon de, 9.  
 Grosvenor of Eaton, 47.  
 Gylle, Thomas, 95.  
  
 Hackins hey, 314.  
 Haddock, Robert, 297.  
 Halberdiers to attend Mayor, 120, 269.  
 Halghton, Cecilia, 207.  
 Hall, — 104.  
 Halley, — 130.  
 Hall-keeper, 62.  
 Halsall, Sir Cuthbert, 111.  
 — Edward, Recorder, 38.  
 — Edward (Mayor, 1580), 52, 54.  
 — Sir Edward, 56.  
 — Edward (1672), 341.  
 — William, 281.  
 Hamer, Edward, 40.  
 Hancock, Thomas, 211.  
 Hanmer, —, 69.  
 Hanse, the, 80, 81.  
 Harebronn, James, 23.  
 Harris, John, 307.  
 Harrison, Philip, 310.  
 — Richard, 34.  
 — William, 154.  
 Hartley, —, 127.  
 Harward, —, 153.  
 Harvey, Thomas, 161, 183.  
 Haskayne, Henry, 233.  
 Haward, Ralph (priest), 26.  
 Hawett, Nicholas, 129, 130.  
 Haydock, Gilbert de, 9.  
 Hayward, 59, 191.  
 Heath, the great, 189, 273, 285, 287.  
 — Sir Robert, 126.  
 Heavylands, 67.  
 Helen, William, 40.  
 Henry II, King, 1.  
  
 Henry III, 3.  
 — IV, 18, 19, 21, 26.  
 — V, 19, 20, 21.  
 — VI, 21, 22.  
 — VII, 24.  
 — VIII, 24, 25.  
 Henry, 3rd Earl of Lancaster, 9, 10, 12.  
 — 1st Duke of Lancaster, 13, 26.  
 Henstown, Levinus, 261, 264.  
 Hesketh, Richard, 25.  
 — Sir Thomas, 26, 38, 53.  
 Hewitt, John, 160.  
 Hewston, —, 320.  
 Heyes, James, 173.  
 — William, 301.  
 Heyland, 67.  
 High cross, 68, 91, 192, 318.  
 Higher shoot, 17.  
 Higinson, John, 232, 334.  
 Hindley, Rev. John, 327.  
 Hoar, Roger, 300.  
 Hodgson, John, 299, 300.  
 — Richard, 55, 85.  
 — Thomas, 127.  
 — John, 280.  
 Hockenhull, Thomas, 218.  
 Hodser, George, 80.  
 Hoggs heys, 67.  
 Houghton, William, 75.  
 Hokenhall, Thomas, 27.  
 Holcroft, John, 128.  
 Holland, Colonel Richard, 138, 202.  
 — Richard, 155.  
 — Robert de, 9-10.  
 Holmes, John, 208.  
 — Richard, 207, 208.  
 Holts, James of the, 22.  
 Hoole, John, 317, 337.  
 Hoose, 69.  
 Hornby, Edward, 297.  
 Horrocks, Jonas, 173.  
 Horse racing, 119.  
 Horsfold, Timothy, 327.  
 Houghton, Hugh, 232.  
 — Sir Gilbert, 165, 166.

Houghton, Richard, 280, 281, 300, 301.

— Sir Richard, 11.

— Thomas, 30.

Howard, Lord Charles, 70.

Huddleston, William, 342.

Hughes, Moses, 337.

Hulme, Marie, 228.

Hunter, Robert, 323, 324.

Hurd, John (priest), 27.

Hyatt, James, 197, 198.

Hyde (Lord Clarendon), 257.

— Colonel Robert, 202.

Hyme, Richard, 75.

Income tax, 223.

Ingates and outgates, 294.

Inge, William, 7.

Inglefield, Thomas, 32.

Inmakes, 115, 116, 228, 229, 338.

Inquisitions, 24.

— post mortem, 7, 9, 12.

Ireland, goods from, confiscated, 126.

— of Hale, 56, 74.

— Adam de, 8.

— George, 74.

— Sir Gilbert, 148, 157, 242, 244, 286, 333.

|              |        |
|--------------|--------|
| — Emline,    | } 232. |
| — Jane,      |        |
| — Elizabeth, |        |

— Thomas, 165, 166.

Irish estates, 148-151.

Iron, 87, 88, 180.

James I, King, 217.

— Roger, 286.

— street, 314.

Janion, Sir Hugh, 98, 99, 101.

Jefforde, John, 75.

Jefferies, judge, 254.

Jenkins, 251.

Jenkinson, James, 181.

Jerrom, James, 244, 247, 255, 265, 270, 279, 284,  
285, 315.

John of Gaunt, 14, 26.

— King, 1, 2.

John Street, 314.

Johnson, Captain, 180.

— Edward, 129, 130.

— Thomas (1565), 35.

— Thomas (17th century), 246, 248, 249, 253, 261,  
263, 277, 279, 280, 281, 289, 290, 294, 296, 313,  
320, 321, 337, 341.

— Thomas, jun. (Sir), 261, 264, 265, 281, 290,  
292, 297, 302, 304, 305, 312, 313, 320.

— William, 217, 234.

Jones, Richard, 263, 315.

— Roger, 173, 229.

Jugler-street, 32, 36, 91, 229, 289, 293, 317.

Justice, Lord Chief, 44.

Kay, Nevil, 200, 201.

Kelinge, Denis, 12.

Kendale, Henry de, 12.

Kenion, Richard, 232.

Key (quay), 187.

Kile, Thomas, 225.

Kirk, John, 142.

Kitchen, William, 239, 334.

Kuype, Thomas, 105.

Lancaster, Earls of, 6-12.

— Duke of, 13, 26.

— disputes with, 298, 299, 300.

— Peter, 180.

Lancelots hey, 314.

Langdale, Marmaduke, 70.

Lappage, Edwin, 199.

Latham, Robert, 24.

— Robert de, 8.

Lathom of Lathom, 21.

— house, 69.

— Richard, 255, 256, 330.

Laud, Archbishop, 220.

Lauderdale, Earl of, 245, 311.

Lawton, Daniel, 301, 302, 303, 304.

Lea, Edmund, 294.

League and covenant, renunciation of, 239.

Leasing by Corporation, 171, 173.

Leases—see fee-farm rents.

Leave-lookers, 59.

- Leche, Randall, 40.  
 Lecture, monthly, 200.  
 Leech, Marie, 228.  
 Legh of Lyne, 240.  
   — Sir Piers, 47.  
 Leigh of Bagguiley, 49.  
   — John, 322.  
   — Lord, 48.  
 Leivesley, Edmund, 238.  
 Lent, proclamation concerning, 117.  
 Lessons, reading of, 198.  
 Leverpoole, John de, 27.  
 Levy of soldiers, 111.  
   — money, 111.  
 Ley, Richard, 59.  
 Libelling the Council, penalty for, 335.  
 Lievesay, Edmund, 263.  
 Lievesley, Edward, 337.  
 Lightburn, James, 254.  
 Lighthouses opposed, 242.  
 Lighting streets, 192, 316.  
 Lincoln, Bishop of, 224.  
 Lionel, Duke of Clarence, 15.  
 Litherland, Edward, 247.  
 Liverpool, name of, 1.  
 Lockwood, Lewis, 118.  
 London, exemptions from toll, 297.  
   — Bishop of, 245.  
 Lord-street, 275, 291, 314, 316, 331.  
 Lord-Lieutenant, orders to, 257.  
 Lordship purchased, 15, 278.  
 Low-hill, 190.  
 Lucas, Robert, 257.  
 Lunt, John, 194.  
 Lurting or Lyrtinge, John (1580), 53.  
   — — John (1658-68), 188, 231, 266, 268, 269-339.  
   — — Nicholas, 212.  
   — — Peter, 238, 241, 248, 249, 279, 296, 298, 299, 318, 334, 336.  
   — — Richard, 247, 287.  
   — — Robert, 185, 188, 222, 233.  
   — — Thomas, 264.  
   — — William, 204.  
 Lyme, Oliver, 257, 260, 266, 287, 327.  
 Lyverpol, Richard de, 7.  
 Lyverpull, William de, 13.  
 Macclesfield, Earl of, 292.  
 Mallinger, 167.  
 Malone, Christopher, 127.  
 Malt, 181.  
 Manchester goods, 88, 89.  
 Mannwaring, Mainwaring, or Maynwaring, John (16th century), 32, 48, 53, 69.  
   — — John (1642), 233.  
 Mardyke-fort, 287.  
 Marie Grace (ship), 38.  
 Mark, Edmund, 226.  
 Markets, 9, 68.  
 Marriages, 35, 113.  
 Marsden, —, 251.  
   — Rev. —, 322, 323, 324, 326.  
 Marser, Richard, 32.  
 Marsh, Edward, 276, 277.  
   — Evan, 173, 238.  
   — John, 294.  
   — Roger, 59.  
 Martyn, Gilbert, 113.  
 Martyndale, Sir James, 98.  
   — Thomas William, 53.  
 Mary, Queen, 32.  
 Mass daily ordered, 95.  
 Mason, Thomas, 53.  
 Massam, Ralph, 148, 155, 163, 204, 232, 238, 239, 334.  
 Massey, Edward, 297.  
   — William, 40, 41, 42, 69.  
 Mather, Richard (16th century), 55, 57, 128.  
   — Rev. Richard (1629), 200, 201.  
 Matthews, Thomas, 318.  
 Maude, Joshua, 300.  
 Maudit, Jasper, 260, 261, 288, 292, 301, 304, 305, 309, 321, 327.  
 May, Thomas, 217.  
 Maynall, Thomas, 53.  
 Mayor first mentioned, 15, 51.  
 Mayor's mount, 128.  
 Mee, William, 232.  
 Meldrum, Sir John, 139.  
 Melling, Jacob, 59.



- Melling, Reynald, 32.  
 — Richard, 213, 218, 229, 230.  
 Mercer, Giles, 319.  
 — Lady, 66.  
 — Lawrence, 127, 140.  
 — Ralph, 238.  
 — Richard, 155, 269, 331, 342.  
 — Robert (1552), 59.  
 — — (1672), 285.  
 Merchandize (1329), 11.  
 Merry Monday, 35.  
 Mersey, Hugh, 34.  
 — navigation, 241.  
 Mershe, John, 39.  
 Merton, Gilbert, 59.  
 Middensteads, 191.  
 Middle mill dale, 67.  
 Middleton, Sir Hugh, 267.  
 Midleton, Lord, 245, 311.  
 Milch cow for Incumbent, 199.  
 Mill dam, 67.  
 Millington, Gilbert, 203.  
 Mills, 8, 9, 13.  
 Milnes, Thomas, 59.  
 Molyneux, Caryl, Lord, 14, 259, 260, 274, 275, 276,  
 277, 278, 280, 281, 293, 325.  
 — John, 252.  
 — Oliver, 336.  
 — Sir Richard (1446), 21, 22.  
 — Sir Richard (1553-1601), 32, 34, 37, 56, 62, 63,  
 68, 74, 89, 111, 112.  
 — Sir Richard, 1st Lord Maryborough, 131,  
 132.  
 — Sir Richard, 2nd Lord, 132, 133, 134, 135, 137,  
 138, 145, 169, 180.  
 — Robert, 145.  
 — Thomas, 167.  
 — Sir Thomas, 22.  
 — Sir William, 25, 47.  
 — William, Lord, 281.  
 — family, disputes with, 274-281.  
 Moorcroft, Mrs., 267.  
 — Richard, 337.  
 Mor, More, or Moore, Anthony, 40, 42, 43, 44, 52.  
 — — Sir Cleave, 288, 289.  
 Mor, More, or Moore, Edward (Sir Edward), 154,  
 155, 156, 160, 170, 176, 180, 214, 217, 218, 229,  
 230, 253, 276, 283, 284, 316, 319, 320, 328, 336.  
 — — John de la, (1292), 7, 9.  
 — — John del (1346), 13.  
 — — John (1555), 32, 74.  
 — — Colonel John, 124, 128, 129, 138, 141,  
 147, 159, 162, 175, 176, 202, 220, 221.  
 — — Richard, 169, 230.  
 — — Robert (1580-92), 34, 42, 43, 53, 63, 112,  
 114.  
 — — Robert (1672), 283.  
 — — William del (1346), 13.  
 — — William (1529), 24, 65.  
 — — William (1580), 53, 56, 96.  
 — — Street (Tithebarn-street), 36.  
 — — Street, 314, 318, 320.  
 Moreton, Bishop of Kildare, 252.  
 Morley, Lord, 124.  
 Morris, John, 292.  
 — Thomas, 227.  
 Mosley, Edward, 132, 275.  
 Moss, Roger, 53.  
 Moss-Reeves, 59, 190.  
 Moss-lake, 273, 288.  
 Mosse, Richard, 117.  
 — Robert, 32, 34.  
 Muringers, 167, 188.  
 Musgrave, Philip, 257.  
 Mylne Street, 36, 91.  
 Mylnes, Henry, 35.  
 — Thomas, 32.  
 Mytton, Robert, 53.  
 New hall, 316.  
 Newcomen, Lieut., 149.  
 Newell, William, 57.  
 Newport, William, 340.  
 Nicholssby, Robert, 66.  
 Nicholson, Edward (1580), 53.  
 — Edward (1624), 185, 220, 231.  
 — Sir Evan, 97.  
 — William, 73.  
 Norbury, Thomas, 269.  
 Norman, William, 297, 334.

## Norreys or Norris

- Alan le (1296), 8.
- Alexander, 261, 264.
- Col. Edward, 138.
- Richard, 261, 264, 287, 291, 294, 303, 305, 309, 320.
- Robert le (1327), 9.
- Thomas (1464), 24.
- Thomas (1688), 259, 261.
- William (1464), 24.
- William (1645), 145.
- Sir William (1555), 32, 37, 56, 68, 74, 95.
- Sir William (1698), 292, 325.
- of West Derby, 240.

## Oar, Silver, 308.

## Oath of Burgess, 121.

— of Churchwarden, 123.

— of Mayor, 122.

## Officers, Municipal, 59.

Ogle, Major Henry, 153, 154.

Old Hall, 198, 289.

— — Street, 66, 316, 317.

Olgrave, Humphrey, 66.

O'Neale, Sir Neale, 330.

Oliver, Ralph, 35.

Ore, John (1566), 36, 104.

Ore, John (1639), 226.

Ormond, Duke of, 245, 311.

Ouldfield, Robert, 211.

Overton, Nathaniel, 215.

Page, John, 57.

Parish, applications for separate, 214, 215, 292, 324.

Park lane, 273, 288.

Parker, John, 197.

Parlour hey, 289.

Parre, Alice, 73.

— William, 75.

Parry, John, 269.

Patten, Thomas, 241.

Paupers to wear badges, 389.

Paving, 10, 315.

Pawlett, Rev. Thomas, 324.

Pearson, Bishop of Chester, 323, 329.

Pemberton, John (1558), 74.

— — (1662), 238, 313.

— William, 54.

Perch erected, 308.

Percivall, Edward, 239.

— Richard, 173, 238.

Petitions, 20, 46, 146.

Phenix (Fenwick) street, 314, 318, 319.

— — alley, 314.

Phepole —, 82.

Philip and Mary, 28.

Picton, —, 179.

Piers, Capt., 89, 108.

Pillory, 191.

Pinfold, 191.

Pinklows, Robert, 8.

Plague, 93, 142, 192, 193, 194, 317.

Plate, Church, 327.

— inventory of, 152, 160, 269.

Pluckington, William, 288.

Pool and stream, 67, 186, 308, 314.

— house, 114.

— houses, 318.

— lane, 316.

Poole, David, 266, 281, 290, 291, 300, 318, 331.

Poor law, 158.

— regulations, as to, 114.

Pope, —, 255.

Population, 37, 46, 90.

Port, limits of, 306.

— regulations of, 311.

Postlethwaite, Samuel, 337.

— Thomas, 53.

Pottery from Prescot, 312.

Poultney, Richard, 212.

Powell, Ralph, 50.

Pratt, —, 81.

Precedence, rules of, 229.

— in church, 105, 210, 329.

Precedences, 30.

Precept from Crown, 20.

Preeson, Thomas, 249, 285.

— William, 264, 289, 302, 312, 321.

Preeson's row, 314

Prenton, Robert, 284, 315.

- Prescot freemen, 56  
 — exemption from toll, 294.  
 Prescott, Edward, 73.  
 — George, 232.  
 — James, 258, 279, 281, 287, 324.  
 Prickett, Richard, 85.  
 Proclamation against vice, 380.  
 Prysage on wines, 274.  
 Prysors, 59, 81, 85.  
  
 Quarles, Francis, 124.  
 Quarry mount, 189.  
 Quo warranto writs, 6, 28, 108, 241.  
  
 Rainforthe, George, 62.  
 Rankyn, d'Ypres, 16.  
 Ranulf, Earl of Chester, 5.  
 Ratcliffe, Ralph de, 22.  
 Rattclyffe, Thomas, 213.  
 Rawlinson, Thomas, 59.  
 Ray, Rev. —, 200.  
 Recorder, first mention of, 61.  
 Records mutilated, 248.  
 Redcross street, 314.  
 Register of burials, &c., 209.  
 Rentally, king's, return of, 26.  
 Requisition for ships, &c., 234.  
 Revenues of Corporation, 65, 66, 174, 293.  
 Reynforth, Richard, 59.  
 Richard I, King, 1.  
 — II, 17.  
 — III, 22.  
 Richmond, Silvester, 246, 247, 255, 257, 260, 267,  
 / 268, 279, 284, 335, 336.  
 — Rev. Richard, 262, 324, 325, 326.  
 Rigby, Hugh, 137, 165, 167.  
 — James, 206.  
 — William, 59, 68.  
 Robinson, Henry, 233.  
 — Richard, 228.  
 Robson, Hugh, 70.  
 Rollin, William, 341.  
 Rolls, Master of the, 43, 44, 46.  
 Roose, Roger, 49.  
 — Thomas, 32.  
  
 Roose, William, 32.  
 Roper, Robert, 283, 284.  
 Rose, Edmund, 168, 180, 218, 219, 274.  
 — Joseph, 137.  
 — Richard, 170, 171, 175, 184, 199, 211, 218,  
 219, 232.  
 — Roger, 96.  
 — Thomas, 37.  
 Rosworm, engineer, 138.  
 Rough-heys, 67.  
 Rowe, John, 296.  
 — Thomas, 298, 308.  
 Royle, William, 319.  
 Rughleye, Alexander, 30, 61.  
 Ruishinge, — 157.  
 Rupert, Prince, 124, 139, 140, 152.  
 Rycroft, Edward, 269, 341.  
 Ryle, John, 104.  
  
 Sabbath breaking, punishment for, 209.  
 Sacar (ship), 108.  
 Salmon, Richard, 190.  
 Salt, 179.  
 Salteneumor, 13.  
 Salt-house, 179.  
 Sanderson, John, 311.  
 Sandford, Sandeford, or Sandiford, John, 135, 148,  
 150, 151, 173, 294, 302, 304.  
 — — Richard, 280.  
 — — Thomas, 238.  
 — — Samuel, 154.  
 Sarah (ship), 89.  
 Savage, Sir John, 47.  
 Scarisbrick, Edward, 145, 147.  
 — William, 228.  
 Scavenging, 190.  
 School lane, 164.  
 Schools, 35.  
 Scolds and chiders, 115.  
 Scott, John, 226.  
 Scutcheon, town's, 62.  
 Sea bank, 67.  
 Seabridge (ship), 180.  
 Seal of the borough, 4, 270.  
 Seamen, forced levy of, 311.

- Seawell, — 298.  
 Secom or Seacome, Thomas, 32, 53, 79, 94.  
 — — Ralph, 125, 126, 161, 211, 217, 218, 219, 229, 230.  
 — — Robert, 210, 254, 255, 257, 263, 269, 279, 280, 284, 287, 319, 334.  
 — — William, 32, 53, 54, 92.  
 Seddon, Sir James, 50, 97.  
 — Richard, 316.  
 Sekerston, Ralph, 30, 34, 36, 37, 46, 47, 54, 69, 74, 89, 91, 104.  
 — Thomas, 89.  
 Seneschals, 59.  
 Serjeant-at-Mace, 59.  
 Servants, regulations for, 113, 233.  
 Setters of flesh boards, 59.  
 Sharples, Cuthbert, 271, 281, 290, 304, 305, 321.  
 Shepard, Thomas, 181.  
 Shepherd and swineherd, 234.  
 Sherborne, Sir Richard, 56.  
 Sherwin, Thomas, 300.  
 Shields, Robert, 328.  
 Ships and shipping, 37, 88, 90, 308.  
 Ship-building, 310.  
 Shipping, Embargo on, 224.  
 Shooting butts, 57, 235, 273, 285, 341.  
 Shovel, Sir Cloudesley, 272.  
 Sickman's lane, 192.  
 Sidney, Sir Henry, 108.  
 Siege, 139.  
 Silk glove manufacture, 312.  
 Simpson, Robert, 342.  
 Skinner, James, 336.  
 Sloyne, the, 69.  
 Smith, Charles, 297.  
 — organ builder, 327.  
 Smyth, John, 65.  
 — William, 66, 95.  
 Soldiers, muster of, 109.  
 — emeute of, 109.  
 Sorocold, John, 223.  
 — Ralph, 80.  
 Sotherne, James, 135, 175, 176, 177.  
 Soyner, Alan, 53.  
 Spain and Portugal, fellowship, 38, 42.  
 Sparke, John, 53.  
 Spinning place (ropery), 312.  
 Standish, James, 215.  
 Stanley, Sir Edward (1566), 47, 56.  
 — Sir James, Lord Strange (1639), 225, 226, 227.  
 — John, (1580), 53.  
 — Sir John de (1406), 21.  
 — Thomas (1424), 22.  
 — — (1547), 30, 108.  
 — Sir Thomas (1562), 34.  
 — — (1643-9), 202, 222.  
 — William (1662), 307, 332.  
 — William, Lord Strange (1669), 275, 281, 282, 313.  
 Stanynough, Peter, 205.  
 Starkey, Peter, 42, 53.  
 Stedman, Benedict le, 13.  
 Stockley, Thomas, 247.  
 Storie, Thomas, 174, 223, 238.  
 Strangeways, William, 171.  
 Stringer, Thomas, 228.  
 Stubbs, Robert, 341.  
 Sturzaker, John, 173, 193, 194, 238, 269, 276, 279, 299, 311, 316, 318, 334.  
 Styth, Rev. Robert, 323, 324, 326.  
 Subsidies, 217, 220, 221, 222, 223, 332, 335.  
 Sudley, John, 59.  
 Sunderland, Earl of, 256.  
 Surplice, wearing of, 196.  
 Sutton, Robert, 234.  
 Sweeting, Thomas, 271, 283, 289, 290, 292, 303, 305.  
 Swift (Preacher), 198.  
 Swine, regulations concerning, 191, 192.  
 Swineherd, 234.  
 Sydenham, Roger, 109.  
 Sympson, Robert, 232.  
 Tailors' gild, 74.  
 Tallow, 38, 83.  
 Tarbock (1577), 50.  
 — Peter, 160, 161.  
 Tarleton or Tarlton, Ann, 290.  
 — — Edward (1552), 72, 73.  
 — — Captain Edward (1664-1698), 239, 253, 255, 267, 279, 285, 287, 290, 293, 327, 329.  
 — — George, 188.



- Tarleton or Tarlton, John, 59.  
 — — Michael, 153, 155, 298, 317.  
 — — Mrs., 337.  
 — — Thomas, 181, 208, 231.  
 — — Richard, 125, 162, 187, 286, 310, 316.  
 — — Timothy, 340.  
 Tarvin, George, 312.  
 Tatlock, John, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280.  
 Tetlowe, Thomas, 40.  
 Test and corporation act enforced, 237, 244, 249.  
 Thomas, John, 264.  
 Thompson, Robert (1552), 59.  
 — — (1654), 220.  
 Tickle, Thomas, 171.  
 Ticknor, Robert, 295.  
 Timber granted by parliament, 145.  
 Tithebarn, 93.  
 — street, 32, 140, 207, 293, 316, 317, 319.  
 Tobacco, 181.  
 — box, 270.  
 Tolls, 8, 9, 11, 13, 14, 15, 68.  
 Tompson, Rev. Joseph, 201, 203, 204, 206.  
 — John, 213, 238.  
 Tower, the, 315.  
 Town clerk first mentioned, 61.  
 Town dues, 70, 278, 297.  
 — field, 128, 293.  
 Townhall at High Cross, built, 286.  
 — old (High street), 286.  
 Townley of Townley, 240.  
 Town's bargains, 182, 184.  
 Town's end, 93.  
 Toxteth park, 9, 14, 222, 315.  
 Trade of the port in 1699, 326.  
 Travers, William, 287, 289, 312, 321.  
 Travis, James, 181.  
 Tuckie, —, 88.  
 Turbary, 8, 12, 13, 14, 65.  
 Turner, Edward, 189.  
 — John, 291.  
 — of Preston, 240.  
 — Rev. —, 200.  
 Tuttel, Thomas, 320, 321.  
 Tyrer, Thomas, 263, 281, 287, 288, 312.  
 Ulster, Judith, 125, 207.  
 Union street, 289, 315.  
 Valentine, Nicholas, 214, 231.  
 Vernon, Sir George, 166.  
 — John, 136.  
 — Lord, 136, 165.  
 Waddington, Henry, 151.  
 — Lawrence, 73.  
 Wages, regulation of, 113.  
 Wainewright (1650), 129, 147.  
 — Sir Thomas, 100, 102, 196, 212.  
 Waites, the, 35, 61, 62, 118, 120, 269.  
 Wakefelde, John, 54.  
 Walker, John de (1346), 13.  
 — John (1552), 59.  
 — John (1629-50), 126, 128, 129, 130, 132, 136,  
 137, 138, 166, 200, 210, 211, 222, 230.  
 — Peter, 295.  
 — Roger, 32.  
 Wallasey, 38.  
 Walls, Margery, 332.  
 — Thomas, 329.  
 Walseman, Adam, 7.  
 Walsingham, secretary, 44.  
 Walton, 95, 200, 202, 203, 213, 215, 324.  
 — Richard de, 13.  
 Walworth, Francis, 136.  
 Wamberg, John de, 12.  
 Ward, William, 203.  
 Wards, division into, 317.  
 Warehouse keepers, 59.  
 Warine of Lancaster, 1, 2.  
 Warmingham, Thomas, 266.  
 Warmyshire, Richard, 59, 66.  
 Warrington, sickness from, 143, 191, 193.  
 Washington, Richard, 129, 147, 173, 208.  
 Washy-flash, 286.  
 Watching, 193, 316, 317.  
 Water-bailiff, 59, 308, 310.  
 — Street, 32, 36, 66, 91, 229, 293, 308, 315, 316,  
 318.  
 — supply, 287, 319, 320.  
 Waterford and Wexford, 76, 87, 178, 297.

- Wavertree chapel, 95.  
 — mill, 24.  
 Way, —, 148.  
 Weapons of burgesses, 33.  
 Weaver, Thomas, 238.  
 — navigation, 241.  
 Webster, Thomas, 310.  
 Websters, gild of, 74.  
 Weights and measures, regulation of, 86.  
 Welles, Richard, 166, 173.  
 Weston, —, 129, 148.  
 Whalley, Edmund, 269.  
 Wheel of Fortune (ship), 307.  
 Whicksted, Thomas, 55, 69, 70, 101.  
 White cross, 91, 192, 294.  
 Whitehead, Thomas, 295.  
 Whitfield, James, 276, 277.  
 — Robert, 338.  
 Widows and fatherless children, 143.  
 Wigan, dispute with, 298.  
 Wignall, Jane, 116.  
 Wikerline, G. R., 226.  
 Wilkinson, John, 53.  
 William III, King, 258, 259.  
 Williamson, Edward, 148, 173, 210, 238, 239, 313, 317.  
 — James, 167, 175, 202, 205, 223, 231.  
 — John, 208, 218, 219, 222, 225, 230, 231, 232.  
 — Margery, 232.  
 — Richard, 173.  
 — Robert, 207, 220, 231, 247, 251, 254, 279, 285, 287, 295.  
 Williamson, Thomas, 150, 155, 173, 206, 229, 238, 239.  
 — William, 142, 195, 270, 281, 312.  
 Wilson, John, 226.  
 Winchester, Bishop of, 224.  
 Windall, Richard, 254, 255, 263, 281, 282, 287, 312, 341.  
 Wines, 180.  
 Winstanley or Wynstanley, Elizabeth, 186.  
 — — John (1551), 32.  
 — — John (1660-4), 130, 141, 148, 149, 150, 151, 166, 176, 183, 214, 215, 222, 223, 239, 240, 241.  
 — — Thomas, 65, 110.  
 Wood, Baylie, 233.  
 Woods, John, 127.  
 Woodward, Thurstan, 228.  
 Woolfall, Robert, 342.  
 — of Woolfall, 240.  
 Worcester, Marquis of, 251.  
 Workmen, regulations as to, 233.  
 Worrall, Thomas, 88.  
 — Richard, 311.  
 — William, 336.  
 Wray, Christopher, 45.  
 Wrecks, inquiry into, 24.  
 Wright, —, 154.  
 — John (1580), 53.  
 — John (1628), 234.  
 Wyndille, Robert, 59.  
 Wytter, John, 73.



## LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS.

*Those marked with an \* are Subscribers for the Large Paper Edition.*

*Those with a † are Subscribers to both Editions.*

Abraham, Alfred C.  
 Abraham, T. Fell  
 Aldam, William  
 Alexander, William  
 Allman, George W.  
 Arkle, Benjamin  
 Armour, Rev. S. C.  
 Armstrong, Joseph  
 Armstrong, J. R.  
 Ashlin, William Crompton  
 Atherton, F. W.  
 Atherton, R.  
 Atherton, William  
 Atkinson, George James  
 Atkinson, Jonathan  
 Bacon, Samuel Sewell  
 Bailey, J. E.  
 Baker, Thomas  
 Ball, George Henry  
 Band, William  
 Barrett, W. Scott.  
 Barrow, James  
 Barry, Zacharie  
 Bartlett, William  
 Barton, Thomas  
 \*Bayley, John  
 Baylis, T. Henry, Q.C.  
 Beausire, J.  
 Beaven, Rev. E. W.  
 Beazley, James, J.P.  
 \*Belcher, Michael, J.P.

Belyea, Charles A.  
 Benas, B. L.  
 \*Bennett, Richard  
 Bennett, William, J.P.  
 Bennett, William, Jun.  
 Berey, John  
 Birch, Alfred J.  
 Birley, James  
 Blackburn Free Public Library  
 Blood, William  
 Blundell, Lieut.-Col. H. B. H.  
 Blundell, Miss  
 Bodleian Library, Oxford  
 \*Bouch, John, J.P.  
 Boulton, Frederick H.  
 Bower, Anthony, J.P., C.C.  
 Bowring, C. T., J.P., C.C.  
 Boyd, Alderman Andrew  
 Bradbury, George  
 Bradley, John Pooley  
 Bramley-Moore, J., J.P.  
 Brancker, John, J.P.  
 Brandreth, Thomas  
 Bremner, H. Hodgson  
 Bridson, John  
 Bright, Henry A., J.P.  
 Bromilow, David, J.P.  
 Bromley, James  
 \*Brooke, Thomas, F.S.A.  
 Brookfield, Samuel  
 Brown, Charles D.

- Brown, George Henry  
 Brown, Joseph  
 Brown, Richard  
 Browne, Alfred Fountain  
 Browne, Andrew  
 Brownhill, Edmond  
 Brundrit, John  
 Brundrit, Joseph  
 Brushfield, T. N., M.D.  
 Burghope & Strange  
 Burton, H. G.  
 Bushby, John  
 Byerley, I.  
 \*Cade, Lawrence W.  
 \*Caine, Mrs.  
 Callender, James T.  
 Calvert, Rev. J. M.  
 Cambridge Free Public Library  
 Cameron, John, M.D.  
 Caraher, H.  
 Carson, William  
 Cates, Arthur  
 Chantrell, George F.  
 Chate, A. C. Winstanley  
 Chester Free Public Library  
 Chetham's Library, Manchester  
 \*Chilton, Thomas, J.P.  
 Chorlton, Thomas  
 Clibborn, E.  
 Collett, M. W.  
 Colman, J. J., M.P.  
 Colton, Charles  
 Connell, Thomas R.  
 Cooban, James  
 Cooper, William  
 Cowell, P.  
 Cowley, Thomas  
 Cox, George R.  
 Cox, Henry  
 Crosfield, Mrs.  
 Crosfield, John D.  
 Crosfield, William, J.P.  
 Cross, Major James  
 Cross, Right Hon. Rd. Assheton, M.P.  
 Cross, William, M.D., C.C.  
 Crosse, Col. F. R.  
 Danson, Henry  
 Davenport, Rev. George H.  
 Davies, John, C.C.  
 Davies, Thomas  
 Deakin, Thomas S.  
 \*Derby, The Right Hon. the Earl of  
 Devonshire, His Grace the Duke of  
 Dickinson, John T.  
 \*Dimmock, William  
 Dixon, William  
 Dodd, John  
 †Donaldson, James  
 Doyle, J. Francis  
 Driffield, Vero C.  
 Duckworth, J. E.  
 \*Duranty, Mrs.  
 Dwerryhouse, William  
 Dyll, Charles  
 Dyson, R. A.  
 Earwaker, J. P., M.A., F.S.A.  
 Easton, Thomas O.  
 Edmonds, William  
 Edwards, E. E.  
 Eills, William  
 Elliot, Robert J.  
 Ellis, Benjamin  
 Ellis, James  
 Ellis, Robert  
 Ellison, Thomas  
 Eshelby, Henry D.  
 Evans, Edward  
 Evans, James



Evans, Joseph, J.P.  
Fazakerley, John  
Fell, James, Jun.  
\*Ffoulkes, W. Wynne  
Fingland, William  
Fogg, Joseph  
Forwood, Alderman A. B., J.P.  
Foulkes, Isaac  
Fraser, William  
†Gair, Henry W.  
Galloway, Robert, J.P., C.C.  
Gamble, David, Lieut.-Col., J.P.  
Gardner, Richard C., J.P.  
Garnett, Alexander  
Garnett, Philip F., J.P.  
Gaskell, John Rooth  
Gibbon, Edward, J.P.  
Gill, George, J.P.  
Gillmore, H. C.  
Gittins, Edward  
Gladstone, Robert, J.P.  
Glazebrook, T. T.  
Goffey, Thomas  
Gordon, John  
Gratrix, Samuel  
†Gray, Henry  
†Gregson, S. Leigh, C.C.  
Guest, W. H.  
Guthrie, Malcolm, J.P.  
Habershon, E.  
Haigh, Joseph  
Hall, Alderman Bernard, J.P.  
Hall, Charlton R.  
Hamilton, Lord Claud J., M.P.  
Hamilton, F. A., J.P.  
Hammand, H. W.  
Hanmer, Thomas  
Hanson, Sir Reginald, M.A., F.S.A.  
\*Harding, Thomas

Hardwick, Alfred  
Hardwick, Charles  
Hargreaves, John  
\*Harrison, Edward H.  
Harrison, Robert  
Harvey, Henry, M.B.  
Hassan, Rev. Edward  
Hawley, H. C., C.C.  
Haworth, Abraham  
Healey, Elkanah  
Healey, Robert  
Heblethwaite, John W.  
Hemmin, James  
Henderson, John  
Henderson, William G.  
Henderson, William N.  
Heywood, John  
Heywood, Oliver  
Higgin, Thomas  
Higgins, William  
Hills, Graham H.  
Hirst, Joseph England  
Hocken, J.  
Hodgson, Thomas  
†Holden, Adam  
\*Holden, Thomas  
Holme, James  
Holt, George, J.P.  
Holt, Miss Anne  
Homer, J. B.  
Hood, William  
Hope, Thomas Arthur, J.P.  
Horley, Rev. E.  
\*Hornby, Hugh B.  
Houghton, Edward P.  
Houghton, John.  
Houlgrave, C.  
Howell, Edward  
Howell, H.

- Hubback, Joseph, J.P.  
 Hughes, Lewis  
 Hume, Rev. Canon  
 \*Hutchinson, Edward  
 Huyton, Thomas  
 Irven, John D.  
 Irvine, James  
 Jackson, Robt.  
 Jevons, Henry, J.P.  
 Jevons, Prof. W. Stanley.  
 \*Johnson, J. H.  
 Johnston, John  
 Jones, Charles W.  
 Jones, J. Oliver  
 Jones, Morris P.  
 \*Jones, Robert  
 Keates, William, J.P.  
 Kerslake, Thomas  
 Keyworth, John R. H.  
 \*Knapman, William  
 Kurtz, Charles George  
 Lambert, George, F.S.A.  
 Lancashire Independent College, Man-  
 chester  
 Langton, Miss  
 Lawrence, Rev. James  
 Lee, Thomas  
 Leitch, James  
 Lester, Rev. T. Major  
 Lewis, David  
 Leyland, John, J.P.  
 \*Lingard-Monk, R. B. M.  
 Littledale, Harold, J.P.  
 Liverpool Free Public Library  
 Liverpool Free Lending Libraries  
 Liverpool Library  
 Livesey, Richard E.  
 Lloyd, David  
 Logan, C. B.  
 Logan, James Pender  
 Lonsdale, John R.  
 Lovejoy, George  
 Lunt, W. J., C.C.  
 Lyon, George S.  
 Lyon, John  
 MacAlister, J. Y. W.  
 Macfie, J. W.  
 \*Macintyre, L. H.  
 †MacIver, Charles  
 Macrae, George G., J.P.  
 Manchester Free Public Libraries  
 Marsh, John A.  
 Martin, Studley  
 \*Mason, Hugh, M.P.  
 Mawdsley, James P.  
 Mayer Free Library, Bebington  
 \*Mayer, Joseph, F.S.A.  
 McArdle, Charles, C.C.  
 McCarte, Matthew  
 McDiarmid, John, C.C.  
 \*Meade-King, R.  
 Meugens, Edward  
 Miles, J., C.C.  
 Molineux, G.  
 Molyneux, Capt. A. Mitchell  
 Molyneux, Lieut.-Col. Edmund  
 Monkhouse, John C.  
 Montgomery, J.  
 Morton, T. N.  
 Mounsey, Edwd.  
 Murphy, John  
 Murphy, Rev. P.  
 Muspratt, Edmund K., J.P., C.C.  
 Naylor, James  
 Nelson, Philip  
 Neptune  
 Nevins, J. Birkbeck  
 \*Newell, John, J.P.

- Newton, John D., J.P.  
 Nicholson, Walter C.  
 \*Nickels, J. T.  
 \*Noble, William  
 North and South Wales Bank  
 Oakshott, T. W.  
 Ockleston, James Greaves  
 Ormerod, Henry M.  
 Oulton, William, J.P.  
 \*Owen, Owen  
 Paley, Edward G.  
 Parker, Miss  
 Parker, S. Sandbach  
 Paton, A. B.  
 \*Pearson, Alderman John, J.P.  
 Peek, Sir Henry, Bart., M.P.  
 Peers, Henry R.  
 Pelling, T. L.  
 †Perkins, Hugh, J.P.  
 Philip, Son and Nephew  
 Picton, Francis H.  
 Picton, Isaac  
 Picton, William H.  
 \*Pilkington, Lieut.-Col. J.  
 Pinnington, William  
 Pole, Mrs. C. Chandos  
 Pooley, Henry  
 Potter, W. H.  
 \*Poulsom, William, J.P.  
 Quaritch, Bernard  
 Queen's College Library, Oxford  
 Radcliffe, William, J.P.  
 Rae, George  
 Raffles, T. Stamford, J.P.  
 Rathbone, William, M.P., J.P.  
 Read, T. W.  
 Redhead, R. Milne, F.L.S.  
 Reid, Francis Nevile  
 Rhind, P. S.  
 Rhodes, Thomas  
 Rigby, Alderman Thomas  
 Riley, John  
 Roberts, David, J.P.  
 Robinson, Joseph  
 Rochdale Free Public Library  
 Rodway, George B.  
 Rogers, Fletcher  
 Rolls, Thomas C.  
 Roper, William O.  
 \*Rose, Josiah  
 Roskell, Michael G.  
 Ross, Richard  
 \*Royden, Thomas B., J.P., C.C.  
 \*Russell, Edward R.  
 Rutherford, R. H.  
 Rutherford, W. Watson  
 Ryley, Thomas C.  
 \*Salford Royal Free Library  
 Samuel, R. H.  
 Saxon, Thomas  
 Scholefield, J. H.  
 Scholfield, George  
 Sephton, Rev. J.  
 Sherlock, Cornelius  
 Shimmin, Hugh  
 Shore, Thomas W.  
 Sim, William F.  
 \*Simmonds, A. H.  
 Simpson, J. Hope  
 Sion College Library, London  
 Smith, C. Roach  
 Smith, Charles W.  
 Smith, Edward  
 †Smith, Egerton & Co.  
 Smith, H. Ecroyd  
 Smith, J. Barkeley, J.P., C.C.  
 Smith, James, J.P.  
 Smith, Joseph

- |                                     |                            |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| Smith, W. H. & Son                  | Walton, Joseph             |
| Snart, Captn. G. F.                 | Warburton, R. E. Egerton   |
| Soley, George T.                    | Ward, Thomas               |
| Squarey, Andrew Tucker              | Warrington Museum          |
| Stead, John Charles                 | Waterhouse, N.             |
| Stead, Thomas Walton                | Watt, Miss Adelaide        |
| Steele, R. T.                       | *Watts, W. H.              |
| Steenstrand, William                | Watts, William H., Jun.    |
| Stephens, Thomas E., C.C.           | Wedderburn, John           |
| †Stevenson, John, C.C.              | Weightman, W. Arthur       |
| Stewart, Rev. Canon Alexander, A.M. | Weightman, W. H.           |
| Stewart, Major R. E.                | *Welch, John R.            |
| Stewart, W. J., C.C.                | Wells, Charles             |
| Stitt, John J., J.P.                | Wells, John                |
| Synam, C.                           | *Westmorland, John         |
| *Taylor, Edmund, J.P.               | Whinnerah, Henry           |
| Taylor, Henry                       | Whitaker, John Penson      |
| Thacklady, Robert                   | *Wigan Free Public Library |
| Thew, Arthur G.                     | Wilkinson, John L.         |
| Thompson, Isaac C.                  | *Wilkinson, Thomas         |
| Thompson, Samuel H., J.P.           | Wilkinson, T. R.           |
| Thornely, James                     | Williams, James            |
| Tomlinson, Ralph, J.P.              | Williams, John R.          |
| Tomlinson, Thomas                   | Williams, Lloyd            |
| Tonge, Rev. Canon Richard           | Wilson, James              |
| Turner, Alfred, J.P.                | Wood, Edward A.            |
| Turner, Charles R.                  | Wood, J. W.                |
| Turner, Major George                | Woodhouse, J. G.           |
| Tweedie, Archibald C.               | Woodhouse, Samuel          |
| Twist, Thomas K.                    | Woods, Mrs. Mary           |
| Unwin, William                      | Woollright, John           |
| Varty, Thomas                       | Worsley, Ralph Leigh       |
| *Veevers, Richard                   | Wren, Abraham              |
| Wainwright, Henry                   | Wright, Thos. W.           |
| Wainwright, Thomas                  | Young, Harold E.           |
| Waldron, James, Jun.                | Young, Henry               |
| Walford, Cornelius                  | Young, James               |
| Walker, G. E.                       | *Young, Reginald           |
| Wallis, Alfred                      |                            |



LIVERPOOL:  
GILBERT G. WALMSLEY, PRINTER,  
50, LORD STREET.











THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE  
STAMPED BELOW

AN INITIAL FINE OF 25 CENTS  
WILL BE ASSESSED FOR FAILURE TO RETURN  
THIS BOOK ON THE DATE DUE. THE PENALTY  
WILL INCREASE TO 50 CENTS ON THE FOURTH  
DAY AND TO \$1.00 ON THE SEVENTH DAY  
OVERDUE.

NOV 12 1941

13Fe1581W

REC'D LD

FEB 19 1958

AUG 13 1968 2

SEP 10 REC'D

RECEIVED

1509-5 PM

LOAN DEPT.

Due end of 5  
sub. of 10

OCT 18 1973

JUL 11 1974

REC'D CRC

Om-7,'40 (6936s)

INTERLIBRARY LOAN

MAR 5 1976

UNIV. OF CALIF., BERK.

DL 2 253 X





General Library  
University of California  
Berkeley



